



*P. S. L.*  
*1842*

5.26.'03.

From the Library of  
Professor William Henry Green  
Bequeathed by him to  
the Library of  
Princeton Theological Seminary

BV 649 .S75 1842  
Stillingtonfleet, Edward, 1635-  
1699.  
The irenicum



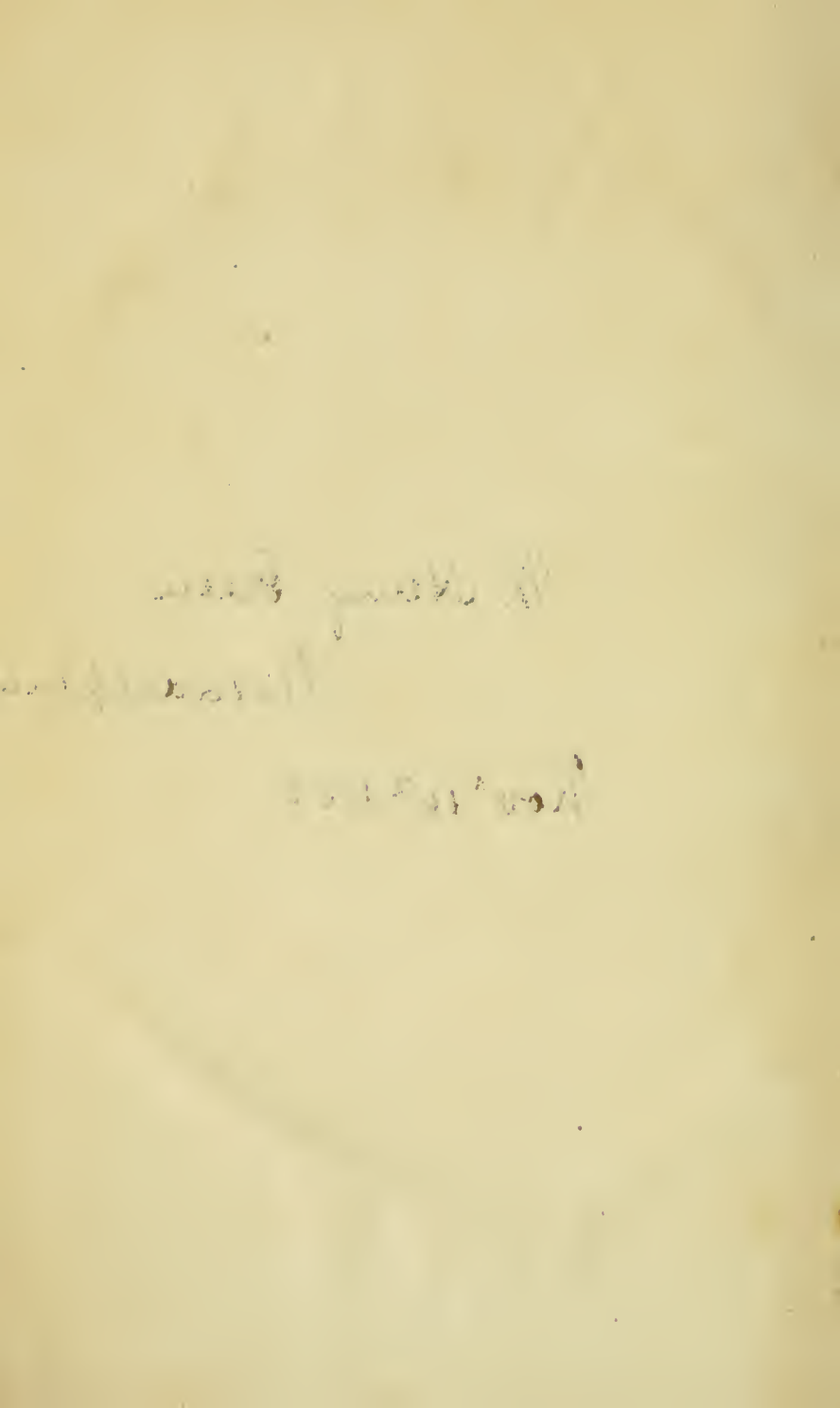




W. Henry Green

Philadelphia

Nov<sup>r</sup> 16<sup>th</sup> 1850



THE  
IRENICUM, OR PACIFICATOR:

BEING A

R E C O N C I L E R

AS TO

CHURCH DIFFERENCES.

✓ BY  
BISHOP STILLINGFLEET,

AUTHOR OF THE ORIGINES SACRÆ.

FIRST AMERICAN EDITION.

PHILADELPHIA:  
M. SORIN, 91 NORTH SECOND STREET.

1842.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

T. K. & P. G. COLLINS, Printers.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO PRESS

IRENICUM;  
A  
WEAPON SALVE  
FOR THE  
CHURCH'S WOUNDS;  
OR THE  
DIVINE RIGHT

OF  
PARTICULAR FORMS OF CHURCH GOVERNMENT;

DISCUSSED AND EXAMINED ACCORDING TO THE PRINCIPLES OF THE LAW  
OF NATURE, THE POSITIVE LAWS OF GOD, THE PRACTICE OF  
THE APOSTLES, AND THE PRIMITIVE CHURCH, AND  
THE JUDGMENT OF REFORMED DIVINES.

WHEREBY A FOUNDATION IS LAID FOR THE CHURCH'S PEACE, AND THE  
ACCOMMODATION OF OUR PRESENT DIFFERENCES.

HUMBLY TENDERED TO CONSIDERATION.

✓ BY  
EDWARD STILLINGFLEET,  
RECTOR OF SUTTON IN BEDFORDSHIRE.

THE SECOND EDITION;\*

WITH

AN APPENDIX

CONCERNING THE

POWER OF EXCOMMUNICATION

IN A

CHRISTIAN CHURCH.

"Let your moderation be known unto all men, the Lord is at hand." Phil. iv. 5.

"Si ad decidendas hodiernas controversias—jus divinum à positivo seu ecclesiastico  
candide separaretur; non videretur de iis quæ sunt absolutè necessaria, inter pios  
aut moderatos viros longa aut acris contentio usura." Casaub. ep. ad Card. Perron.

"Multum refert ad retinendum Ecclesiarum pacem, inter ea quæ jure divino præcepta  
sunt, et quæ non sunt, accuratè distinguere." Grot. de Imper. sum. Potestat. circa  
Sacra. cap. 11.

PHILADELPHIA:  
M. SORIN, 91 NORTH SECOND STREET.

1842.

---

\* This was published at London, A. D. 1662

TRANSLATION OF THE LATIN QUOTATIONS ON THE  
TITLE PAGE.

"If in order to decide the controversies of the present times, that law which is Divine, should be impartially separated from that which is dogmatic and ecclesiastical, it is evident that contests relative to things essential, would not be either long or keen, amongst candid and pious men." Isaac Casaub. ep. ad Card. Perron.

"To preserve the peace of Churches, it is of great consequence accurately to distinguish between those precepts which are Divine, and those which are not." Grot. de Imper. sum. Potestat. circa Sacra. cap. 11.



THE

PREFACE TO THE READER.

---

I WRITE not to increase the controversies of the times, nor to foment the differences that are among us; the former are by far too many, the other too great already. My only design is to allay the heat, and abate the fury of that *ignis sacer*, ("holy fire,") or erysipelas of contention, which hath risen in the face of our church, by the overflowing of that bilious humour, which yet appears to have too great predominancy in the spirits of men. And although, with the poor Persian, I can only bring a handful of water, yet that may be my just apology, that it is for the quenching of those flames in the church, which have caused the bells of Aaron to jingle so much, that it seems to be a work of the greatest difficulty to make them tuneable. And were this an age wherein anything might be wondered at, it would be matter of deserved admiration, to hear the noise of those axes and hammers so much about the temple, and that after these nigh twenty years of carving and hewing, we are so rude and unpolished still, and so far from being cemented together in the unity of the spirit and the bond of peace. May we not justly fear that voice, *migremus hinc*, "let us go hence," when we see the vail of the temple so rent asunder, and the church itself made a partition wall to divide the members of it? And since the wise and gracious God hath been pleased, in such an almost miraculous manner, so lately to abate the land-flood of our civil intestine divisions, how strange must it seem, if our sacred contentions, (if contentions may be called sacred,) like the waters of the sanctuary, should rise from the ankle to the knee, till at last they may grow impassable. Must ONLY the fire of our unchristian animosities be like that of the temple, which was never to be extinguished? However, I am sure, it is such a one as was never kindled from Heaven, nor blown

up with any breathings of the Holy and Divine Spirit; and yet that hath been the aggravation of our divisions, that those whose duty it is to lift up their voices like trumpets, have rather sounded an alarm to our contentious spirits, than a parley or retreat, which had been far more suitable to our Messengers of Peace. In which respect it might be too truly said of our church, what is spoken of the eagle in the Greek apologue:

Βλέπει το στήθος αετός τρωθεν παλαι,  
 Ἄλγων δὲ λοιπόν, ἦστο πολλά δακρυών:  
 Βλεπὼν δὲ οἶστον, εἶπεν ἐπτερωμένον,  
 Βάβαι, πτερὸν με τὸν πτερωτὸν ὀλλυει.

"The eagle saw her breast was wounded sore,  
 She stood and weeped much, but grieved more:  
 But when she saw the dart was feather'd, said,  
 Woe's me, for my own kind hath me destroy'd."

It is not so long since that version of the vulgar Latin, Psalm lxviii. 13, *inter domini clericos*, ("as to the ministers of the Lord,") might have been sadly rendered, "to lie among the pots;" and Pierius Valerianus might have met with too many examples to have increased his book "*de Literatorum Infelicitate*," ("on the Infelicity of Literary Men;") and in the next age it might have been true again what Matthew Paris observes of the clergy in the Conqueror's time, "*adeo literaturâ carebant, ut cæteris stupori esset qui grammaticam didicisset*," ("they were so destitute of learning, that he who had learned grammar, was a matter of astonishment to the rest.") But, blessed be God, who hath freed us from that "*dæmonium meridianum*," that "demon's meridian" of ignorance and barbarism: may we but be as happily delivered from the plague of our divisions and animosities! Than which there hath been no greater scandal to the Jews, nor opprobrium of our religion among Heathens and Mahommedans, nor a more common objection among Papists, nor anything which hath more made a pretence even for Atheism and Infidelity.

For our controversies about religion have brought at last even religion itself into a controversy, among such whose

1 "My own kind hath me destroy'd!" How true; how often too true! It needs not lions, tigers, wolves, or bears to destroy us; but how often have we to say, "my own kind hath me destroyed!"—Surely not in this city of "*brotherly-love*?"—Yes, even here we say with the poet, *πτερον με τὸν πτερωτὸν ὀλλυει*, "my own kind hath me destroyed!!" How needful, therefore, to adopt as a maxim, what was said of one of old, "He committed himself not to man, because He knew what was in man."—*Am. Ed.*

weaker judgments have not been able to discern where the plain and unquestionable way to heaven hath lain, in so great a mist as our disputes have raised amongst us. Weaker heads, when they once see the battlements shake, are apt to suspect that the foundation itself is not firm enough; and to conclude, if anything be called in question, that there is nothing certain. And truly it cannot but be looked on as a sad presage of an approaching famine, not of bread, but of the word of the Lord, that our lean kine have devoured the fat, and our thin ears the plump and full; I mean, our controversies and disputes have eaten so much out the life and practice of Christianity. Religion hath been so much rarefied into airy notions and speculations, by the distempered heat of men's spirits, that its inward strength, and the vitals of it, have been much abated and consumed by it.

Curiosity, that green-sickness of the soul, whereby it longs for novelties, and loaths sound and wholesome truth, hath been the epidemical distemper of the age we live in. Of which it may be truly said, as ever yet of any, that it was "*sæculum fertile religionis, sterile pietatis*," "an age fertile in religion, but barren in piety." I fear this will be the character whereby our age will be known to posterity; that it was the age wherein men talked of religion most, but lived it least. Few there are who are content with the *dimensum*, "measure," which God hath set them; every one almost is of the Spanish Jesuit's mind, "*beatus qui prædicat verbum inauditum*," "happy is he who proclaims a doctrine not yet heard;" seeking to find out something whereby he may be reckoned, if not among the wise, yet among the disputers of this world. How small is the number of those sober Christians, of whom it may be said, as Lucian of his parasites,<sup>1</sup> οὐκ ησχολαζον νοσεειν, they were not at leisure to be sick of this pica, (*pie*),<sup>2</sup> (1 *Tim.* vi. 4;) such as longed more to taste of the tree of life than of the tree of knowledge; and as *Zenophon* speaks of the Persians, τὸ νηρον ἐκπονουντες ἀηλισκοι, "they labour to consume the" *fomes morbi*, "the root of the distemper by their serious endeavours after PEACE and HOLINESS." But instead of this, the generality of men, let all their religion run up into briars and thorns, into contentions and parties, as though religion were indeed *sacramentum militiæ*, "a mili-

<sup>1</sup> Rather of σχολαστικος, the "simpleton," whose apology to his physician, was οὐκ ησχολαζε νοσειν, "he had no leisure to get sick!"—*Am. Ed.*

<sup>2</sup> i. e. Such men have no leisure to get sick of this pie of religious novelties, or non-essentials; that is, they have better work to do.—*Am. Ed.*

tary oath, or an oath of war," but more against fellow Christians, than the unquestionable hindrances of men's eternal happiness.

Men being very loath to put themselves to the trouble of a holy life, are very ready to embrace anything which may but dispense with that; and if but listing men's selves under such a party, may but shelter them under a disguise of religion, none more ready than such to be known by *distinguishing names*, none more zealous in the defence of every tittle and punctilio, that lies most remote from those essential duties, wherein the kingdom of God consists, viz. *righteousness*, and *peace*, and *joy in the Holy Ghost*. And hence, all the several parties among us have given such glorious names only to the outward government of the church, the undoubted practice of the apostles, the discipline of Christ, the order of the gospel, and account only that the church where their own method of government is observed; just as the historian observes of Brutus and Cassius, *ubicunque ipsi essent prætexentes se esse rempublicam*, "they were every where pretending that they themselves were the commonwealth;" they think the Church can never be preserved, but in the vessel they are embarked in: as though Christ could not have caused his flock to rest *sub meridie*, "at noon," (Cant. i. 7,) unless the *pars Donati*, "the party of Donatus"<sup>1</sup> had been in the south. And from this monopolizing of churches to parties, hath proceeded that strange uncharitableness towards all who come not up in every circumstance to their way and method; which is a piece of prudence like that of Brutus, who when he had raised these flames in the commonwealth, was continually calling Cæsar tyrant; *ita enim appellari Cæsarem, facto ejus expediebat*; "for so Cæsar was called, it was expedient to his case." So when men have caused such lamentable divisions in the church, by their several parties and factions, it concerns them to condemn all others beside themselves, lest they most of all condemn themselves for making unnecessary divisions in the church of God. This uncharitableness and ill opinion of all different parties, only gathers the fuel together, and prepares combustible matter, which wants nothing but the clashing of an adverse party, acting on principles of a like nature, to make it break out into an open flame. And such we have seen, and with sadness and grief of heart felt to be in the

<sup>1</sup> See Mosheim's Church History, vol. 1, p. 402 to 409, and vol. 2, p. 58.



vitals of our own church and nation, by reason of those violent calentures<sup>1</sup> and paroxysms of the spirits of men, those heart-burnings and contentions which have been among us, that will require both time and skill to purge out those noxious humours, which have been the causes of them. I know no prescriptions so likely to effect this happy end, as an infusion of the true spirits of religion, and the revulsion of that extravasated blood into its proper channels. Thereby to take men off from their eager pursuits after ways and parties, notions and opinions, (wherein many have run so far, that they have left the best part of their religion behind them,) and to bring them back to a right understanding of the nature, design and principles of Christianity.

Christianity is a religion, such that it is next to a miracle, that men should ever quarrel or fall out about, much less that it should be the occasion, or at least the pretence of all that strife and bitterness of spirit, of all those contentions and animosities, which are at this day in the Christian world. But our only comfort is, that whatever may be our tempers, our God is the God of Peace; our Saviour is the Prince of Peace; and that wisdom which this religion teaches, is both pure and peaceable. It was for that which our religion, once so amiable in the judgment of impartial heathens, that they said *nil nisi justum suadet et lenē*, “nothing except what is just and mild persuades,” that the court of a Christian’s conscience was thought to be the best court of equity in the world. Christians were once known by their *ἡγρον καὶ μελιχρον ηθος*, “the benignity and sweetness of their disposition,” by the candour and ingenuity of their spirits, by their mutual love, forbearance and condescension towards one another. But, *aut hoc non est evangelium, aut nos non sumus evangelici*;<sup>2</sup> either this is not the practice of Christianity, or it was never calculated for our meridian, wherein men’s spirits are of too high an elevation for it.

If pride and uncharitableness, if divisions and strife, if wrath and envy, if animosities and contentions, were but the marks of true Christians, Diogenes never need light his lamp at noon to find out such among us. But if a spirit of meekness, gentleness, and condescension, if a stooping to the weakness and infirmities of others, if a pursuit after peace even when it flies from us, be the indispensable duties, and the

<sup>1</sup> An ardent fever, peculiar to hot climates: from caleo, to be hot.

<sup>2</sup> Literally, “either this is not the gospel, or we are not evangelic.”

characteristic marks of those who have more than the name of Christians, it may possibly prove a difficult inquest to find out such among the crowds of those who shelter themselves under that glorious name. Whence came it else to be so lately looked on, as the way *to advance religion to banish peace*, and to reform men's manners by taking away their lives? Whereas in those pure and primitive times, when religion did truly flourish, it was accounted the greatest instance of the piety of Christians not to fight but to die for Christ. It was never thought then that Bellona<sup>1</sup> was a nursing mother to the church of God, nor Mars a god of reformation. Religion was then propagated, not by Christians shedding the blood of others, but by laying down their own. They thought there were other ways to a Canaan of reformation besides the passing through a wilderness of confusion and a red sea of blood. Origen could say to the Christians in his time, "For we no longer take up the sword against the pagans, nor do we yet learn to war, having become the children of peace through Jesus."<sup>2</sup> They had not learned to make way for religion into men's minds, by the dint of the sword, because they were the disciples of that Saviour, who never pressed followers as men do soldiers, but said, "If any man will come after me, let him take up his cross, (not his sword,) and follow me," Ἡμενος και φιλανθρωπος νομοθεσια, "his very commands showed his meekness and philanthropy;" his laws were sweet and gentle laws—not like Draco's that were written in blood, unless it were his own that gave them.

His design was to ease men of their former burdens, and not to lay on more. The duties He required were no other but such as were necessary, and withal very just and reasonable. He that came to take away the insupportable yoke of Jewish ceremonies, certainly did never intend to gall the necks of his disciples with another instead of it. And it would be strange that the church should require more than Christ himself did; and make other conditions of her communion than our Saviour did of discipleship. What possible reason can be assigned or given why such things should not be sufficient for communion with a church, which are sufficient for eternal salvation? And certainly those things are sufficient for that, which are laid down as the necessary duties of Christianity by our Lord

<sup>1</sup> The goddess of war, or Mars' wife.

<sup>2</sup> Ουκετι γαρ λαμβανομεν επ' εθνους μαχαιραν, ουδε μαυθνομεν 'ετι πολεμειν γενομενοι δια τον Ιησουν υιοι της ειρηνης.



and Saviour in his word. What ground can there be why Christians should not upon the same terms act now as they did in the time of Christ and his apostles? Was not religion sufficiently guarded and fenced in then? Was there ever more true and cordial reverence in the worship of God? What charter hath Christ given the church to bind men up to more than himself hath done? or to exclude those from her society, who may be admitted into heaven? Will Christ ever thank men at the great day for keeping such out from communion with his church, to whom he will vouchsafe (not only) crowns of glory? (but it may be aureolæ, golden, too, if there be any such things there?) The grand commission with which the apostles were sent out, was only to teach what Christ had commanded them. Not the least intimation of any power given them to impose or require anything beyond what himself had spoken to them, or they were directed to by the immediate guidance of the spirit of God. It is not, whether the things commanded and required be lawful or not? It is not, whether indifferencies may be determined or not; it is not how far Christians are bound to submit to a restraint of their Christian liberty which I now inquire after; (of these things in the treatise itself;) but, whether they do consult for the church's peace and unity who suspend it upon such things? How far either the example of our Saviour or his apostles doth warrant such rigorous imposition? We never read the apostles' making laws but of things supposed necessary. When the council of apostles met at Jerusalem, for deciding a case that disturbed the church's peace, we see they would lay no other burden *πλην των αναγκης τουτων*, "besides these necessary things," *Acts* xv. 28. It was not enough with them that the things should be necessary when they had required them, but they looked on an antecedent necessity either absolute or for the present state, which was the only ground of their imposing those commands upon the gentle Christians. There were after this great diversities of practice and varieties of observances among Christians, but the Holy Ghost never thought those things fit to be made matters of laws to which all parties should conform. All that the apostles required as to these, was mutual forbearance and condescension towards each other in them. The apostles valued not indifferencies at all, and those things it is evident they accounted such, which whether men did them or not, was not of concernment to salvation. And what reason is there why men should be so strictly tied up to such things, which they may do or let alone, and yet be very good Chris-

tians still? Without all controversy, the main inlet of all the distractions, confusions, and divisions of the Christian world, hath been by adding other conditions of church communion than Christ hath done. Had the church of Rome never taken upon her to add to the rule of faith, nor imposed idolatrous and superstitious practices, all the injury she had done herself had been to have avoided that fearful schism which she hath caused throughout the Christian world. Would there even be the less peace and unity in a church, if a diversity were allowed as to practices supposed indifferent? yea there would be so much more as there was a mutual forbearance and condescension as to such things. The unity of the church is an unity of love and affection, and not a bare uniformity of practice or opinion. This latter is extremely desirable in a church: but as long as there are several ranks and sizes of men in it, it is hardly attainable, because of the different persuasions of men's minds as to the lawfulness of the things required; and it is no commendation for a Christian to have only the civility of *Procrustes*, to commensurate all other men to the size and shape of his own humour and opinion. There is nothing the primitive church deserves greater imitation by us in, than in that admirable temper, moderation, and condescension which was used in it, towards all the members of it. It was never thought worth the while to make any standing laws for rites and customs that had no other original but tradition, much less to suspend men from her communion for not observing them. As *Sozomen* tells us, "they judged it, and that very justly, a foolish and frivolous thing for those that agree in the weighty matters of religion, to separate from one another's communion for the sake of some petty customs and observances."<sup>1</sup> "For not the same traditions are to be found in all the churches, though as to all doctrines essential, they are of the same mind."<sup>2</sup> For churches agreeing in the same faith, often differ in their rites and customs. And that not only in different churches, but in different places belonging to the same church; for, as he tells us, many cities and villages in Egypt, not only differed from the customs of the mother church of Alexandria, but from all other churches besides in their public assemblies on the evenings of the Sabbath, and receiving the eucharist after dinner. This

<sup>1</sup> Εὐηθε, γὰρ καὶ μαλὰ δίκαιως ὑπελαβὼν εἶδαν ἕνεκεν ἀλλήλων χωρίζεσθαι, περὶ τὰ καιρία τῆς θρησκείας συμφωνούντες.—Hist. Eccl. l. 7, c. 19.

<sup>2</sup> Οὐ γὰρ τὰς αὐτὰς παραδόσεις κατὰ πάντα ὁμοίας καὶ ὁμοδοξοὶ εἶεν, ἐν πασαις ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις ἔυρειν εἰσιν.

admirable temper in the primitive church might be largely cleared from that liberty they allowed freely to dissenters from them in matters of practice and opinion: as might be proved from *Cyprian*, *Austine*, *Jerome* and others; but that would exceed the bounds of a preface. The first who broke this order in the church, were the Arians, Donatists and Circumcellians, while the true church was still known by its pristine moderation and sweetness of deportment towards all its members. The same we hope may remain as the most infallible evidence of the conformity of our church of England to the primitive, not so much in using the same rites that were in use then, as in not imposing them, but leaving men to be won by the observing the true decency and order of churches, whereby those who act upon a true principle of Christian ingenuity may be sooner drawn to a compliance in all lawful things, than by force and rigorous impositions, which make men suspect the weight of the thing itself when such force is used to make it enter. In the meantime what cause have we to rejoice that Almighty God hath been pleased to restore us a prince of that excellent prudence and moderation, who hath so lately given assurance to the world of his great indulgence towards all that have any pretence from conscience to differ with their brethren! The only thing then seeming to retard our peace, is, the controversy about church government, an unhappy controversy to us in England, if ever there was any in the world. And the more unhappy, in that our contentions about it have been so great, and yet so few of the multitudes engaged in it, have truly understood the matter they have so eagerly contended about. For the state of the controversy, as it concerns us, lies not here, as it is generally mistaken, What form of government comes the nearest to apostolical practice; but, Whether any one individual form be founded so upon divine right, that all ages and churches are bound unalterably to observe it? The clearing up of which by an impartial inquiry into all the grounds produced for it, being of so great tendency to an accommodation of our present differences, was the only motive which induced me to observe *Aristotle's* wild politics, of exposing this deformed conception to the entertainment of the wide world. And certainly they who have espoused the most the interest of a *jus divinum*, cannot yet but say that if the opinion I maintain be true, it doth exceedingly conduce to a present settlement of the differences that are among us.

For then all parties may retain their different opinions concerning the primitive form, and yet agree and pitch upon one compounded of all together as the most suitable to the state and condition of the church of God among us. That so the people's interest be secured by consent and suffrage, which is the pretence of the congregational way, the due power of presbyteries asserted by their joint concurrence with the bishop, as is laid down in that excellent model of the late incomparable primate of Armagh: and the just honour and dignity of the bishop asserted, as a very laudable and ancient constitution for preserving the peace and unity of the church of God. So the learned *Is. Casaubon* describes the polity of the primitive church: "Bishops, together with presbyters, were appointed in each of the churches, and every one, by his singular care, taking charge of his own, and all of the whole in common interest, gave a specimen of a certain kind of admirable aristocracy."<sup>1</sup> My main design throughout this whole treatise, is to show that there can be no argument drawn from any pretence of a divine right, that may hinder men from consenting and yielding to such a form of government in the church as may bear the greatest correspondence to the primitive church, and be most advantageously conducive to the peace, unity, and settlement of our divided church. I plead not at all for any abuses or corruptions incident to the best form of government through the corruption of men and times. Nay I dare not harbour so low apprehensions of persons enjoying so great dignity and honour in the church, that they will in anywise be unwilling of themselves to reduce the form of church government among us to its primitive state and order, by retrenching all exorbitances of power, and restoring those presbyteries which no law hath forbidden, but only through disuse have been laid aside. Whereby they will give to the world that rare example of self-denial and the highest Christian prudence, as may raise an honourable opinion of them even among those who have hitherto the most slighted so ancient and venerable an order in the church of God, and thereby become the repairers of those otherwise irreparable chasms in the church of God. I conclude with

<sup>1</sup> *Episcopi in singulis ecclesiis constituti cum suis prebyteriis, et propriam sibi quisque peculiari cura, et universam omnes in commune curantes, admirabilis cujusdam aristocratiae speciem referebant.* "By aristocracy, in this ecclesiastic sense, was meant simply, a government, by a regular gradation of ranks filling up, each its own place and duty in the general system."



the words of a late learned, pious and moderate prelate in his *Via media*;<sup>1</sup> I have done, and now I make no other account, but that it will fall out with me, as it doth commonly with him that offers to part a quarrel, both parts will perhaps drive at me for wishing them no worse than peace. My ambition of the public tranquillity shall willingly carry me through this hazard: let both beat me, so their quarrel may cease: I shall rejoice in those blows and scars which I shall take for the church's safety.

<sup>1</sup> The middle path; Horace's *aurea mediocritas*, "the golden mean;" or Ovid's, *in medio tutissimus ibis*, "thou shalt pass most safely midway between both extremes."





# CONTENTS.

## PART I.

### CHAPTER I.

Things necessary for the church's peace, must be clearly revealed. The form of Church Government not so, as appears by the remaining controversy about it. An evidence thence, that Christ never intended any one Form, as the only means to peace in the church. The nature of a Divine right discussed. Right in general either makes things lawful, or else due. For the former, a non-prohibition is sufficient; the latter, an express command. Duty supposeth legislation and promulgation. The question stated. Nothing binds unalterably but by virtue of a standing law, and that twofold; The law of nature and positive laws of God. Three ways to know when positive laws are unalterable. The Divine right arising from Scripture examples, Divine acts, and Divine approbation, considered. - - - - - 33

### CHAPTER II.

Six Hypotheses laid down, as the basis of the following Discourse. 1. The irreversible obligation of the Law of Nature, either by human, or Divine positive Laws, in things immediately flowing from it. 2. Things agreeable to the Law of Nature may be lawfully practised in the Church of God, where there is no prohibition by positive Laws; enlarged into five subservient propositions. 3. Divine positive Laws, concerning the manner of the thing whose substance is determined by the Law of Nature, must be obeyed by virtue of the obligation of the natural Law. 4. Things undetermined, both by the natural and positive Laws of God, may be lawfully determined by the supreme authority in the Church of God. The Magistrate's power in matters of Religion, largely asserted and cleared. The nature of Indifferency in actions stated. That Matters of Christian liberty are subject to restraints, largely proved. Proposals for accommodation as to matters of Indifferency. 5. What is thus determined by lawful authority, doth bind the consciences of men, subject to that authority—to obedience to those determinations. 6. Things thus determined by lawful authority, are not thereby made unalterable, but may be revoked, limited, and changed by the same authority. - - - - - 58

## CHAPTER III.

How far Church Government is founded upon the Law of Nature. Two things in it founded thereon. 1. That there must be a society of men for the worship of God. 2. That this society be governed in the most convenient manner. A society for worship manifested, *Gen.* iv. 26, considered. The sons of God, and the sons of men, who? Societies for worship among Heathens evidenced by three things. 1. Solemnity of Sacrifices; Sacrificing, how far natural; the antiquity of the Feast of first fruits, largely discovered. 2. The original of festivals for the honour of their Deities. 3. The secrecy and solemnity of their mysteries. This further proved from man's sociable nature, the improvement of it by Religion, the honour redounding to God by such a society for his worship. - - - - - 100

## CHAPTER IV.

The second thing the law of nature dictates, that this society be maintained and governed in the most convenient manner. A further inquiry, what particular orders for government in the Church come from the law of nature. Six laid down, and evidenced to be from thence. First, a distinction of some persons, and their superiority over others, both in power and order, cleared to be from the law of nature. The power and application of the power distinguished; this latter not from any law of nature binding, but permissive: therefore may be restrained. People's right of choosing Pastors considered. Order distinguished from the form and manner of government: the former natural, the other not. The second is, that the persons employed in the service of God, should have respect answerable to their employment, which appears from their relation to God as his servants; from the persons employed in this work before positive laws. Masters of families the first Priests. The priesthood of the first born before the Lord discussed: the arguments for it answered. The conjunction of civil and sacred authority largely shown, among Egyptians, Grecians, Romans, and others. The ground of separation of them afterwards, from *Plutarch* and others. - - - - - 113

## CHAPTER V.

The third thing dictated by the Law of Nature, is the solemnity of all things to be performed in this society; which lies in the gravity of all rites and ceremonies; in the composed temper of mind, God's worship rational. His Spirit destroys not the use of reason. The enthusiastic spirit discovered. The circumstantiating of fit time and place for worship. The seventh day, on what account so much spoken of by Heathens. The Romans' holy days. Cessation of labour upon them. The solemnity of ceremonies used. *ἁγνυψ*,<sup>1</sup> *περιβάπτης*,<sup>2</sup> "Silence in devotions." Exclusion of unfit persons. Solemnity of disci-

<sup>1</sup> *ἁγνυψ*, "consecrated water for the washing of hands before sacrifice."

<sup>2</sup> *Περίπαπτης*, "vessels for sprinkling water around in lustrations."

pline: excommunication among the Jews by the sound of a trumpet; among Christians by a bell. . . . .	121
--	-----

## CHAPTER VI.

The fourth thing dictated by the Law of Nature, that there must be a way to end controversies arising, which tend to break the peace of the society. The nature of schism considered. The Church's power as to opinions explained. When separation from a Church may be lawful. Not till communion becomes sin; which is, when corruptions are required as conditions of communion. Not lawful to erect new Churches, upon supposition of corruption in a Church. The <i>ratio</i> of a fundamental article explained; it implies both necessity and sufficiency in order to salvation. Liberty of judgment and authority distinguished; the latter must be parted with in religious societies as to private persons. What way the light of nature directs to, for ending controversies. First, in an equality of power, that the less number yield to the greater: on what Law of Nature that is founded. Secondly, in a subordination of power that there must be a liberty of appeals defined. Independency of particular congregations considered. Elective Synods. The case paralleled between civil and church government. Where appeals finally lodge. The power of calling synods, and confirming their acts in the magistrate. . . . .	132
---	-----

## CHAPTER VII.

The fifth thing dictated by the law of nature; that all that are admitted into this society, must consent to be governed by the laws and rules of it. Civil societies founded upon mutual consent; express in the first entrance, implicit in others born under societies actually formed. Consent as to a Church necessary, the manner of consent determined by Christ by Baptism and profession. Implicit consent supposed in all baptized; explicit, declared by challenging the privileges, and observing the duties of the Covenant. Explicit by express owning the Gospel when adult, very useful for recovering the credit of Christianity. The discipline of the primitive Church cleared from <i>Origen</i> , <i>Justin Martyr</i> , <i>Pliny</i> , <i>Tertullian</i> . The necessary requisites of church membership, whether positive signs of grace: nothing required by the Gospel beyond reality of profession. Explicit Covenant, how far necessary; not the formal constitution of a church: proved by several arguments. . . . .	159
---	-----

## CHAPTER VIII.

The last thing dictated by the law of nature is, that every offender against the laws of this society, must give an account of his actions to the governors of it, and submit to the censures inflicted upon him by them. The original of penalties in societies. The nature of them, according to the nature and ends of societies. The penalty of the church no civil mulct; because its laws and	
---	--

ends are different from civil societies. The practice of the *Druids* and *Cercetæ* in excommunication. Among the *Jews*, whether a mere civil or sacred penalty. The latter proved by six arguments. <sup>1</sup>*Cherem Col Bo*, what? Objections answered. The original of the mistake showed. The first part concluded. 168

## PART II.

### CHAPTER I.

The other ground of divine right considered, viz. God's positive laws; which imply a certain knowledge of God's intention to bind men perpetually. As to which, the arguments drawn from tradition, and the practice of the church in after ages, proved invalid by several arguments. In order to a right stating the question, some concessions laid down; First, that there must be some form of government in the church, is of divine right. The notion of a church explained: whether it belongs only to particular congregations, which are manifested not to be of God's primary intention, but for our necessity. Evidence for national churches under the gospel. A national church government necessary. - - - - - 177

### CHAPTER II.

The second concession is, that church government formally considered, must be administered by officers of divine appointment. To that end, the continuance of a Gospel ministry fully cleared from all those arguments, by which positive laws are proved immutable. The reason of the appointment of it continues; the idea of a *seculum spiritûs sancti*, first broached by the Mendicant Friars upon the rising of the *Waldenses* discussed. God's declaring the perpetuity of a Gospel ministry, Matth. xxviii. 20, explained. A novel interpretation largely refuted. The world to come, what. A ministry necessary for the church's continuance, Ephes. iv. 12, explained and vindicated. 185

### CHAPTER III.

The question fully stated. Not what form of government comes the nearest to the primitive practice, but whether any be absolutely determined. Several things propounded for resolving the question. What the form of church government was under the law. How far Christians are bound to observe that. Neither the necessity of a superior order of church officers, nor the unlawfulness can be proved from thence. - - - - - 197

<sup>1</sup> An anathema, a curse, a thing devoted.—*Am. Ed.*

## CHAPTER IV.

Whether Christ hath determined the form of government by any positive laws. Arguments of the necessity why Christ must determine it, largely answered; as *First*, Christ's faithfulness compared with *Moses*, answered, and retorted, and thence proved, that Christ did not institute any form of government in the church because he gave no such law for it as *Moses* did; and we have nothing but general rules, which are applicable to several forms of government. The office of *Timothy* and *Titus*, what it proves in order to this question; the lawfulness of Episcopacy shown thence, but not the necessity. A particular form, how far necessary, as Christ was the governor of his church; the similitudes the church is set out by, prove not the thing in question. Nor the difference between civil and church government; nor Christ setting officers in his church; nor the inconvenience of the church's power in appointing new officers. Every minister hath a power respecting the church in common, which the church may determine, and fix the bounds of Episcopacy thence proved lawful; the argument from the Scriptures' perfection answered. . 202

## CHAPTER V.

Whether any of Christ's actions have determined the form of government. All power in Christ's hands for governing the church. What order Christ took in order thereto when he was in the world. Calling Apostles the first action respecting outward government. Three steps of the Apostles' calling, to be Disciples; in their first mission; in their plenary commission. Several things observed upon them pertinent to our purpose. The name and office of Apostles cleared. An equality among them proved during our Saviour's life. *Peter* not made Monarch of the church by Christ. The pleas for it answered. The Apostles' power over the seventy disciples considered, with the nature and quality of their office, *Matth.* xx. 25, 26, 27, largely discussed and explained. It excludes all civil power; but makes not all inequality in church officers unlawful; by the difference of Apostles and pastors of churches, *Matth.* xviii. 15, 16, 17. No evidence for any one form from thence, because equally applied to several. What the offences are, there spoken of? What church spoken to? Not an Ecclesiastical Sanhedrim among the Jews, nor yet the civil Sanhedrim as *Erastus* and his followers explain it: nor a consistorial or congregational church under the gospel; but only a select company for ending private differences among Christians. . . . . 225

## CHAPTER VI.

The next and chief thing pleaded for determining the forms of church government, is apostolical practice; two things inquired into concerning that, What it was? How far it binds? The apostles invested with the power and authority of governing the whole church of Christ by their commission, *Joh.* xx. 21; *Matth.* xxviii. 19. What the apostles did in order to church government



before Pentecost, *κληρος αποστολης*,<sup>1</sup> *τοπος ιδιος*,<sup>2</sup> explained. No division of provinces made among the Apostles then; made appear by several arguments. Whether *Paul* and *Peter* were confined, one to the circumcision, the other to the uncircumcision, and different churches erected by them in the same cities? What course the apostles took in settling the government of particular churches? Largely proved that they observed the customs of the Jewish synagogue. The model of the synagogue government described. Whether peculiar ordination for the synagogue officers? The service of the synagogue set forth, with the officers belonging to it. Grounds proving that the Apostles copied from the synagogue model. Community of names and customs between Jews and Christians then. Forming churches out of synagogues: whether any distinct *Catus*, assembly, of Jewish and Gentile Christians in the same cities? Correspondency of the church with the synagogue, in the orders of public service. In the custom of ordination. *Jerome* explained. The power of ordination, in whom it lodgeth in the Christian Church. The opinions of *Jerome* and *Arius* considered. The name of presbyters and bishops, explained. Three general considerations touching apostolical practice. First, That we cannot attain to such a certainty of apostolical practice, as thereon to ground a divine right; the uncertainty of apostolical practice as to us fully discovered. 1. From the equivalency of the names which should determine the controversy. 2. In that the places in controversy may without incongruity be understood of the different forms. 3. From the defectiveness, ambiguity, partiality and repugnancy of the records of antiquity, which should inform us what the apostolical practice was; these fully discoursed upon. The testimonies of *Eusebius*, *Irenæus*, *Tertullian*, *Hilary*, *Jerome* and *Ignatius* discussed; and these two last proved not to contradict each other. Episcopacy owned as a human institution by the sense of the church. Second consideration; that in all probability the apostles did not observe any one fixed course of settling church government; but settled it according to the several circumstances of time, places and persons. Several things premised for clearing it. This opinion, though seemingly new, is proved at large to be most consonant to antiquity, by the several testimonies of *Clemens*, *Rom. Alexandrinus*, *Euphrianius*, (whose testimony is corrected, explained and vindicated,) *Hilary* and divers others. This opinion of great consequence towards our present peace. No foundation for lay-elders, either in scripture or antiquity. Third consideration; mere apostolical practice, if supposed, founds not any divine right, proved by a fourfold argument. The right of tithes resolved upon the same principles with that of church government. Rites and Institutions apostolical grown quite out of use among the several contending parties. - - 254

## CHAPTER VII.

The churches' polity in the ages after the apostles considered; Evidences thence that no certain unalterable form of church government was delivered to them,

<sup>1</sup> The lot or portion of apostleship.

<sup>2</sup> His own place.



1. Because church power did enlarge as the churches did. Whether any metropolitan churches established by the apostles. Seven Churches of Asia, whether Metropolitan. Philippi no metropolis, either in civil or ecclesiastical sense. Several degrees of enlargement of churches. Churches first Christians in whole cities, proved by several arguments; the *Eulogiæ* an evidence of it. Churches extended into the neighbouring territories by the preaching there of city presbyters; thence comes the subordination between them. Churches by degrees enlarged to diocesses; from thence to provinces. The original of metropolitans and patriarchs. 2. No certain form used in all churches. Some churches without bishops,—Scots, Goths. Some with but one bishop in their whole country. Seythian, Ethiopian churches how governed. Many cities without bishops. Diocesses much altered. Bishops discontinued in several churches for many years. 3. Conforming ecclesiastical government to the civil in the extent of diocesses. The suburbicarian churches what. Bishops answerable to the civil governors. Churches' power rises from the greatness of cities. 4. Validity of ordination by presbyters in places where bishops were. The case of *Ischyra*s discussed; instances given of ordination by presbyters not pronounced null. 5. The church's prudence in managing its affairs, by the several canons, provincial synods, Code of Canons. - - - - - 369

## CHAPTER VIII.

An inquiry into the judgment of reformed divines concerning the unalterable divine right of particular forms of church government: wherein it is made appear, that the most eminent divines of the Reformation did never conceive any one form necessary; manifested by three arguments. 1. From the judgment of those who make the form of church government mutable, and to depend upon the wisdom of the magistrate and church. This cleared to have been the judgment of most divines of the Church of England since the Reformation. Archbishop Cranmer's judgment, with others of the Reformation in Edward the Sixth's time, now first published from his authentic MS. The same ground of settling Episcopacy in Queen Elizabeth's time. The judgment of Archbishop Whitgift, Bishop Bridges, Dr. Loe, Mr. Hooker, largely to that purpose, in King James's time. The King's own opinion. Dr. Sutcliffe. Since of Crakanthorp, Mr. Hales, Mr. Chillingworth. The testimony of foreign divines to the same purpose. Chemnitius, Zanchy. French divines, Peter Moulin, Fregevil, Blondell, Bochartus, Amyraldus. Other learned men, Grotius, Lord Bacon, &c. 2. Those who look upon equality as the primitive form, yet judge Episcopacy lawful. Augustine Confession, Melancthon, Articuli Smalcaldici. Prince of Anhalt, Hyperius, Hemingius: the practice of most foreign churches. Calvin and Beza both approving Episcopacy and Diocesan Churches. Salmasius, &c. 3. Those who judge Episcopacy to be the primitive form, yet look not on it as necessary. Bishop Jewell, Fulk, Field, Bishop Downam, Bishop Bancroft, Bishop Morton, Bishop Andrews, Saravia, Francis Mason, and others. The conclusion hence laid in order to peace. Principles

conducting thereto. 1. Prudence must be used in church government, at last confessed by all parties. Independents in elective synods, and church covenants, admission of members, number in congregations. Presbyterians in classes, and synods, lay-elders, &c. Episcopal in diocesses, causes, rites, &c. 2. That prudence best, which comes nearest primitive practice. A Presidency for life over an Ecclesiastical Senate showed to be that form, in order to it. Presbyteries to be restored. Diocesses lessened. Provincial Synods kept twice a year. The reasonableness and easiness of accommodation shown. The whole concluded. . . . . 407

---

### CONTENTS OF A DISCOURSE ON THE POWER OF EXCOMMUNICATION BY THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH.

The name of power in a church explained. The mistake of which, the foundation of Erastianism. The notion of the church opened, as it is the subject of power. The church proved to be a society distinct from the commonwealth; by reason of its different nature, and divine institution; distinct officers, different rights, and ends, and peculiar offences. The power of the church doth not arise from mere confederation. The church's power founded on the nature of the Christian society, and not on particular precepts. The power of church officers not merely doctrinal, proved by several arguments. Church power as to particular persons antecedent to confederation. The power of the keys relates to baptism. The church's power extends to excommunication: what it is and what grounds it had under the law. No exclusion from temple worship among the Jews. Excommunication necessary in a Christian church, because of the conditions supposed to exist in communion with it. Of the incestuous person, and the grounds of the apostolical censure. Objections against excommunication answered. The fundamental rights of the church continue after its being incorporated into the civil state. The magistrate's power as to excommunication cleared. . . . . 443

# A WEAPON SALVE

FOR THE

## CHURCH'S WOUNDS:

OR,

THE DIVINE RIGHT OF PARTICULAR FORMS OF GOVERNMENT  
IN THE CHURCH OF GOD, DISCUSSED AND EXAMINED, AC-  
CORDING TO THE PRINCIPLES OF THE LAW OF NATURE,  
THE POSITIVE LAWS OF GOD, THE PRACTICE OF THE  
APOSTLES, AND THE PRIMITIVE CHURCH: AND THE JUDG-  
MENT OF REFORMED DIVINES.

---

### PART I.

#### CHAPTER I.

Things necessary for the church's peace, must be clearly revealed. The form of Church Government not so, as appears by the remaining controversy about it. An evidence thence, that Christ never intended any one Form, as the only means to peace in the church. The nature of a Divine right discussed. Right in general either makes things lawful, or else due. For the former, a non-prohibition is sufficient; the latter, an express command. Duty supposeth legislation and promulgation. The question stated. Nothing binds unalterably but by virtue of a standing law, and that twofold; The law of nature and positive laws of God. Three ways to know when positive laws are unalterable. The Divine right arising from Scripture-examples, Divine acts, and Divine approbation, considered.

§ 1. HE that imposes any matter of opinion upon the belief of others, without giving evidence of reason for it proportionable to the confidence of his assertion, must either suppose the thing propounded to carry such unquestionable credentials of truth and reason with it, that none who know what

they mean can deny it entertainment; or else that his own understanding hath attained so great perfection as to have authority sufficient to oblige all others to follow it. This latter cannot be presumed among any who have asserted the freedom of their own understandings from the dictates of an infallible chair: but if any should forget themselves so far as to think so, there needs no other argument to prove them not to be infallible in their assertions, than this one assertion, that they are infallible; it being an undoubted evidence that they are actually deceived who know so little the measure of their own understandings. The former can never be pretended in anything which is a matter of controversy among men who have not wholly forgot they are reasonable creatures, by their bringing probable arguments for the maintaining one part of an opinion as well as another. In which case, though the arguments brought be not convincing for the necessary entertaining either part to an unbiassed understanding, yet the difference of their opinions is argument sufficient, that the thing contended for is not so clear as both parties would make it to be on their own side; and if it be not a thing of necessity to salvation, it gives men ground to think that a final decision of the matter in controversy was never intended as a necessary means for the peace and unity of the church of God. For we cannot with any show of reason imagine, that our Supreme lawgiver and Saviour, who hath made it a necessary duty in all true members of his church to endeavour after the peace and unity of it, should suspend the performance of that duty upon a matter of opinion, which when men have used their utmost endeavours to satisfy themselves about, they yet find that those very grounds which they are most inclinable to build their judgments upon, are either wholly rejected by others as wise and able as themselves, or else, it may be, they erect a far different fabric upon the very same foundations.

It is no ways consistent with the wisdom of Christ in founding his church, and providing for the peace and settlement of it, to leave it at the mercy of men's private judgments, and apprehensions of things, than which nothing is more uncertain, and thereby make it to depend upon a condition never likely to be attained in this world, which is the agreement and uniformity of men's opinions. For as long as men's faces differ, their judgments will. And until there be an *Intellectus Averoisticus*, the same understanding in all persons, we have little ground to hope for such a universal harmony in the intellectual world; and yet even then the soul might pass a



different judgment upon the colours of things, according to the different tincture of the several optic-glasses in particular bodies, which it takes a prospect of things through. Reason and experience then give us little hope of any peace in the church, if the unity of men's judgments be supposed the condition of it: the next inquiry then is, how the peace of the church shall be attained or preserved, when men are under such different persuasions; especially if they respect the means, in order to a peace and settlement. For the ways to peace, like the fertile soils of *Greece*, have been often the occasion of the greatest quarrels. And no sickness is so dangerous as that when men are sick of their remedy, and nauseate that most which tends to their recovery. But while physicians quarrel about the method of cure, the patient languishes under their hands; and when men increase contentions on the behalf of peace, while they seem to court it, they destroy it. The only way left for the church's settlement and peace under such variety of apprehensions concerning means and method, is to pitch upon such a foundation, if possible to be found out, whereon the different parties retaining their private apprehensions, may yet be agreed to carry on the same work in common, in order to the peace and tranquillity of the church of God. Which cannot be by leaving all absolutely to follow their own ways; for that were to build a *Babel* instead of *Salem*, *confusion* instead of *peace*; it must be then by convincing men, that neither of those ways to peace and order, which they contend about, is necessary by way of Divine command (though some be as a means to an end); but which particular way or form it must be, is wholly left to the prudence of those in whose power and trust it is to see the peace of the church secured on lasting foundations. How nearly this concerns the present debate about the government of the church, any one may quickly discern. The main plea for forms of government in the church, is their necessity, in order to its peace and order, and yet nothing hath produced more disorder and confusion than our disputes have done. And our sad experience still tells us, that, after all our debates, and the evidences brought on either side, men yet continue under very different apprehensions concerning it. But if we more strictly inquire into the causes of the great distances and animosities which have risen upon this controversy, we shall find it hath not been so much the difference of judgments concerning the primitive form of government, which hath divided men so much from one another, as the prevalency of faction

and interest in those whose revenues have come from the rents of the church, and among others of greater integrity it hath been the principle or hypothesis which men are apt to take for granted, without proof; *viz.* that it is in no case lawful to vary from that form, which by obscure and uncertain conjectures, they conceive to have been the primitive practice. For hereby men look upon themselves as obliged by an unalterable law, to endeavour to effect the establishment of the idea of government, which often affection and interest, more than reason and judgment, have formed within them; and so likewise bound to overthrow any other form not suitable to those correspondencies which they are already engaged to maintain. If this then were the cause of the wounds and breaches this day among us, the most successful weapon-salve to heal them, will be, to anoint the sword which hath given the wound, by a seasonable inquiry into the nature and obligation of particular forms of government in the church. The main subject then of our present debate will be, whether any one particular form of church government be settled upon an unalterable Divine right; by virtue whereof all churches are bound perpetually to observe that individual form: or, whether it be left to the prudence of every particular church to agree upon that form of government which it judgeth most conducive within itself to attain the end of government, the peace, order, tranquillity, and settlement of the church. If this latter be made fully to appear, it is then evident that, however men's judgments may differ concerning the primitive form of government, there is yet a sure ground for men to proceed on in order to the church's peace. Which one consideration will be motive sufficient to justify an attempt of this nature, it being a design of so great importance, as the recovery of an advantageous piece of ground, whereon different parties may with safety not only treat, but agree in order to a speedy accommodation.

§ 2. We come therefore closely to the business in hand; and, for the better clearing of our passage, we shall first discuss the nature of a divine right, and show whereon an unalterable divine right must be founded; and then proceed to show how far any form of government in the church is settled upon such a right. Right<sup>1</sup> in the general is a relative thing, and the signification and import of it must be taken from the respect it bears to the law which gives it. For although in common acception it be often understood to be the same with the law

<sup>1</sup> τὸ δίκαιον ἀναλογόν τι. Arist. Ethic. l. 5. c. 6.



itself, as it is the rule of actions (in which sense *jus naturæ, gentium, civile*, is taken for the several “*laws of nature, nations, and particular states*”); yet I say *jus*, and so right is properly something accruing to a person by virtue of that law which is made, and so *jus naturæ* is that right which every man is invested in by the *law of nature*, which is properly *jus personæ*, and is by some called *jus activum*, which is defined by *Grotius* to be “the moral quality of a person sufficient to do, or have any just thing;”<sup>1</sup> by *Lessius* to be “a legitimate power to obtain anything.”<sup>2</sup> But the most full description of it is given by *Martinus*, that “right is that necessity, or rightful power attached to a person to do, omit, or suffer anything.”<sup>3</sup> For we are to consider that there is a twofold right, either such whereby a man hath liberty and freedom by the law to do anything; or such whereby it becomes a man’s necessary duty to do anything.<sup>4</sup> The opening of the difference of these two, and the different influences they have upon persons and things, is very useful to our present purpose: *jus* then is first that which is *justum*; so *Isidore*, *jus dictum quia justum est*. “It is called right, because it is just.” So whatever is just, men have right to do it. Now a thing may be said to be just either more generally, as it signifies anything which is lawful, or in a more restrained sense, when it implies something that is equal and due to another. So *Aristotle*<sup>5</sup> distributes τὸ δίκαιον, justice, into τὸ νομιμον καὶ τὸ ἰσον, law and equity. The former sense of it is here only pertinent, as it implies anything which may be done according to law, that is, done *jure*, because a man hath right to do it. In order to this we are to observe, that an express positive command is not necessary to make a thing lawful, but a non-prohibition is sufficient for that. For it being the nature of laws to bind up men’s rights, what is not forbidden by the law is thereby supposed to be left in men’s power still to do. So that it is to little purpose for men to seek for positive commands for every particular action to make it lawful; it suffices to make any action lawful, if there be no bar made by any direct or consequential prohibition;

<sup>1</sup> Qualitas moralis personæ competens ad aliquid juste habendum aut agendum.—Grot. de jure belli et pac. lib. I. cap. I. sect. 4.

<sup>2</sup> Potestas legitima ad rem aliquam obtinendam.—Less. de justit. et jure l. 2. c. 2. Dub. 1. Etymol. Philol. voc. jus.

<sup>3</sup> Adhærens personæ necessitas vel potestas recta ad aliquid agendum, omit-tendum, aut permittendum.

<sup>4</sup> Etymol. l. 5, cap. 3.

<sup>5</sup> Ethic. l. 5, cap. 2.

unless it be in such things whose lawfulness and goodness depend upon a mere positive command. For in those things which are therefore only good, because commanded, a command is necessary to make them lawful, as in immediate positive acts of worship towards God; in which nothing is lawful any further than it is founded upon a divine command. I speak not of circumstances belonging to the acts of worship, but whatever is looked upon as a part of divine worship, if it be not commanded by God himself, it is no ways acceptable to him, and therefore not lawful. So our Saviour cites that out of the prophet, "*In vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men,*"<sup>1</sup> which the Chaldee paraphrast and Syriac version render thus, the worship they offer to me is from human precept and authority,<sup>2</sup> plainly imputing the reason of God's rejecting their worship, to the want of a divine command for what they did. And therefore *Tertullian*<sup>3</sup> condemns all those things to be devoid of sanction and to be attributed to superstition,<sup>4</sup> as superstitions, which are done without the warrant of divine command.<sup>5</sup> Although even here we may say too, that it is not merely the want of a divine precept which makes any part of divine worship uncommanded by God unlawful, but the general prohibition, that nothing should be done in the immediate worship of God, but what we have a divine command for. However, in matters of mere decency and order in the church of God, or in any other civil action of the lives of men, it is enough to make things lawful, if they are not forbidden. But against this, that a non-prohibition is warrant enough to make anything lawful, this objection will be soon levied, that it is an argument *ab autoritate negative*, from authority negatively, and therefore is of no force. To which I answer, that the rule, if taken without limitation, upon which this objection is founded, is not true; for although an argument *ab autoritate negative*, as to matter of fact avails not, yet the negative, from authority, as to matter of law and command, is of great force and strength. I grant the argument holds not here; we do not read that ever Christ or his apostles did such a thing, therefore it is not to be done; but this, we read of no law or precept commanding us to do it, therefore it is not unlawful not

<sup>1</sup> Mat. xv, 9; Isa. xxix, 11.

<sup>2</sup> Reverentia quam mihi exhibent est ex præcepto et documento humano.

<sup>3</sup> Tertull. de Orat. cap. 12, v. Herald. digress. lib. 2, cap. 2, in Tertull.

<sup>4</sup> Vacuæ observationis et superstitioni deputanda.

<sup>5</sup> Sine ullius dominici aut apostolici præcepti auctoritate.

to do it; and we read of no prohibition forbidding us to do it, therefore it may be lawfully done; this holds true and good, and that upon this twofold reason.

First, from God's intention in making known his will; which was not to record every particular fact done by himself, or Christ, or his apostles, but it was to lay down those general and standing laws, whereby his church in all ages should be guided and ruled: and in order to be a perpetual obligation upon the consciences, there must be a sufficient promulgation of those laws which must bind men. Thus in the case of infant baptism, it is a very weak unconcluding argument to say that infants must not be baptized, because we never read that Christ or his apostles did it; for this is a negative in matter of fact; but on the other side, it is an evidence that infants are not to be excluded from baptism, because there is no divine law which doth prohibit their admission into the church by it; for this is the negative of a law; and if it had been Christ's intention to have excluded any from admission into the church, who were admitted before as infants were, there must have been some positive law whereby such an intention of Christ should have been expressed; for nothing can make that unlawful which was a duty before, but a direct and express prohibition from the legislator himself, who alone hath power to rescind as well as to make laws. And therefore anti-pædo-baptists must, instead of requiring a positive command for baptizing infants, themselves produce an express prohibition excluding them, or there can be no appearance of reason given, why the gospel should exclude any from those privileges, to which the law admitted them. Secondly, I argue from the intention and end of laws, which is to circumscribe and restrain the natural liberty of man, by binding him to the observation of some particular precepts. And therefore where there is not a particular command and prohibition, it is in nature and reason supposed that men are left to their natural freedom; as is plain in positive human laws; wherein men by compact and agreement for their mutual good in societies, were willing to restrain themselves from those things which should prejudice the good of the community; this being the ground of men's first inclosing their rights and common privileges, it must be supposed, that what is not so inclosed, is left common to all as their just right and privilege still. So it is in divine positive laws, God intending to bring some of mankind to happiness, by conditions of his own appointing, hath laid down many positive precepts, binding men to the practice of

those things as duties which are commanded by him. But where we find no command for performance, we cannot look upon that as an immediate duty, because of the necessary relation between duty and law; and so where we find no prohibition, there we can have no ground to think that men are debarred from the liberty of doing things not forbidden. For as we say of exceptions, as to general laws and rules, that an exception expressed *firmit regulam in non exceptis*, confirms the rule in things not excepted, makes the rule stronger in things not expressed as excepted; so it is as to divine prohibitions; as to the positives, that those prohibitions we read in scripture make other things not prohibited to be therefore lawful, because not expressly forbidden. As God forbidding *Adam* to taste of the fruit of one tree, did give him a liberty to taste of all the rest. Indeed, had not God at all revealed his will and laws to us by his word, there might have been some plea why men should have waited for particular revelations to dictate the goodness or evil of particular actions, not determined by the law of nature; but since God hath revealed his will, there can be no reason given why those things should not be lawful to do, which God hath not thought fit to forbid men the doing of. Further we are to observe, that in these things which are thus undetermined in reference to an obligation to duty, but left to our natural liberty as things lawful, the contrary to that which is thus lawful, is not thereby made unlawful. But both parts are left in men's power to do, or not to do; as is evident in all those things which carry a general equity with them, and are therefore consonant to the law of nature, but have no particular obligation, as not flowing immediately from any dictate of the natural law. Thus community of goods is lawful by the law and principles of nature; yet every man hath a lawful right to his goods by dominion and propriety. And in a state of community it was the right of every man to impropriate upon a just equality, supposing a preceding compact and mutual agreement. Whence it is that some of the schoolmen say, that although the law of nature be immutable, as to its precepts and prohibitions, yet not as to its demonstrations (as they call them); as, *Do as you would be done to*, binds always indispensably; but, *that in a state of nature all things are common to all*. This is true, but it binds not men to the necessary observance of it. These which they<sup>1</sup> call demonstrations are only such things as are

<sup>1</sup> Alex. Alensis, part. 3, q. 27, m. 3.



agreeable to nature, but not particularly commended by any indispensable precept of it. Thus likewise it is agreeable to nature, that the next of the kindred should be heir to him who dies intestate; but he may lawfully waive his interest if he please. Now to apply this to our present case; according to this sense of *jus* for that which is lawful, those things may be said to be *jure divino*, which are not determined one way or other by any positive law of God, but are left wholly, as things lawful, to the prudence of men to determine in a way agreeable to natural light, and the general rules of the word of God. In which sense I assert any particular form of government agreed on by the governors of the church, consonant to the general rules of scripture, to be by divine right, *i. e.* God by his own laws hath given men a power and liberty to determine the particular form of church government among them. And hence it may appear, that though one form of government be agreeable to the word, it doth not follow that another is not; or, because one is lawful, another is unlawful: but one form may be more agreeable to some parts, places, people and times, than others are. In which case that form of government is to be settled which is most agreeable to the present state of a place, and is most advantageously conducive to promoting the ends of church government in that place or nation. I conclude then according to this sense of *jus*, that the *Ratio regiminis Ecclesiastici est juris divini naturalis*, “the reason of church government is naturally of divine right,” that is, that the reason of church government is immutable, and holds in all times and places, which is the preservation of the peace and unity of the church; but the *modus regiminis Ecclesiastici*, “the particular form of that government,” is *juris divini permissivi*, of the right of divine permission that both the laws of God and nature have left it to the prudence of particular churches to determine. This may be cleared by a parallel instance. The reason and the science of physic is immutable, but the particular prescriptions of that science are much varied, according to the different tempers of patients. And the very same reason in physic which prescribes one sort to one, doth prescribe a different sort to another, because the temper or disease of the one calls for a different method of cure; yet the ground and end of both prescriptions were the same, to recover the patient from his distemper. So I say in our present case; the ground and reason of government in the church is unalterable *by divine right*; yea, and that very reason which determines the particular forms: but yet, those



particular forms flowing from that immutable reason, may be very different in themselves, and may alter according to the several circumstances of times, and places, and persons, for the more commodious advancing the main end of government. As in morality there can be but one thing to a man *in genere summi boni*, "in the general class of the chief good," *quò tendit et in quod dirigit arcum* to what it tends and towards what he directs his aim, to which he refers all other things; yet there may be many things *in genere boni conducentis*, "as means in order to attaining that end." So though church government vary not as to the ground, end, and reason of it; yet it may, as to the particular forms of it: as is further evident, as to forms of civil government: though the end of all be the same; yet monarchy, aristocracy, and democracy, are in themselves lawful means for the attaining the same common end. And as *Alensis* determines it, in the case of community of goods by the law of nature, that the same reason of the law of nature which did dictate community of goods to be most suitable to man in the state of innocence, did in his fallen estate prescribe a propriety of goods, as most agreeable to it; so that herein the *modus observantiæ*, "the mode of observing it," differed, but the *ratio præcepti*, "the reason of the precept," was the same still; which was man's comfortable enjoyment of the accommodations of life; which in innocency might have been best done by community, but in man's degenerate condition, must be by a propriety. So the same reason of church government may call for an equality in the persons, acting as governors of the church in one place, which may call for superiority and subordination in another.

§ 3. Having now despatched the first sense of a divine right, I come to the other, which is the main seat of the controversy, and therefore will require a longer debate. And so *jus* is that which makes a thing to become a duty: so *jus quasi jussum*, "it is law because it is commanded;" and *jussa jura*, "laws commanded," as *Festus* explains it, *i. e.* that whereby a thing is not only *licitum*, lawful, in men's lawful power to do, or not, but is made *debitum*, a debt, and is constituted a duty by the force and virtue of a divine command. Now man's obligation to anything as a duty doth suppose on the part of him from whose authority he derives his obligation, both *legislation* and *promulgation*. First, there must be a *legislative power* commanding it; which if it respects only the outward actions of a man in a nation embodied by laws, is the supreme magistrate;

but if the obligation respect the consciences of all men directly and immediately, then none have the power to settle anything by way of an universal standing law, but God himself; who, by being sole creator and governor of the world, hath alone absolute and independent dominion and authority over the souls of men. But, besides legislation, another thing necessary to man's obligation to duty, is, a *sufficient promulgation* of the law made; because though before this there be the ground of obedience on man's part to all God's commands, yet there must be a particular declaration of the laws, whereby man is bound in order to the determination of his duty. Which in positives is so absolutely necessary, that unless there be a sufficient promulgation and declaration of the will of the law-giver, man's ignorance is excusable in reference to them; and so frees from guilt and the obligation to punishment. But it is otherwise in reference to the dictates of the natural law, wherein though man be at a loss for them, yet his own contracted pravity being the cause of his blindness, leaves him without excuse. Hence it is said, with good reason, that though man under the moral law was bound to obey gospel precepts, as to the reason and substance of the duties by them commanded, as faith, repentance from dead works, and new obedience; yet a more full and particular revelation by the gospel was necessary, for the particular determination of the general acts of obedience to particular objects under their several modifications expressed in the gospel. And therefore faith and repentance under the moral law, taken as a transcript of the law of nature, were required under their general notion as acts of obedience, but not in that particular relation which those acts have under the covenant of grace. Which particular determination of the general acts to special objects under different respects, some call new precepts of the gospel, others new light; but taking that light as it hath an influence upon the consciences of men, the difference is so small that it deserves not to be named a controversy.

But that which I am now clearing is this; that whatsoever binds Christians as a universal standing law, must be clearly revealed as such, and laid down in Scripture in such evident terms, as all who have their senses exercised therein, may discern it to have been the will of Christ, that it should perpetually oblige all believers to the world's end, as is clear in the case of baptism and the Lord's supper. But here I shall add one thing by way of caution; that there is not the same

necessity for a particular and clear revelation in the *alteration* of a *law unrepealed* in some circumstances of it, as there is for the establishing of a *new law*. As to the former, *viz.* the change of a standing law as to some particular circumstance, a different practice by persons guided by an infallible spirit is sufficient, which is the case as to the observation of the Lord's day under the gospel: for the fourth command standing in force as to the morality of it, a different practice by the apostles may be sufficient for the particular determination of the more ritual and occasional part of it, which was the limitation of the observation of it to that certain day. So likewise that other law standing in force, that persons taken into covenant with God should be admitted by some visible sign, apostolical practice, clearly manifested, may be sufficient ground to conclude what the mind of Christ was, as to the application of it to particular persons; and what qualifications are requisite in such as are capable of admission, as in the case of infants. Whereby it is clear why there is no particular law or command in reference to them under the gospel, because it was only the application of a law in force already to particular persons, which might be gathered sufficiently from the apostles' practice, the analogy of the dispensation, the equal reason of exclusion under the law, and yet notwithstanding the continual admission of them then into the same gospel covenant; circumcision being the seal of the righteousness of faith.<sup>1</sup> But this, by the way, to prevent mistakes. We must now by parity of reason say, that either the former law, in those things wherein it was not typical, must hold in reference to the form of government in the church of Christ; or else that Christ by a universal law hath settled all order in church government among the pastors themselves; or else that he hath left it to the prudence of every particular church, to determine its own form of government, which I conceive is the direct state of the question about divine right, *viz.* whether the particular form of government in the church be settled by a universal binding law or not?

§ 4. But for a further clearing the state of the question, we must consider what it is that makes an unalterable divine right, or a standing law in the church of God: for those who found forms of government upon a divine right, do not plead a law in express terms, but such things from whence a divine right by law may be inferred. Which I now come to exa-

<sup>1</sup> Rom. iv. 8.

mine; and that which I lay down as a *postulatum*,<sup>1</sup> or a certain conclusion according to which I shall examine others' assertions concerning divine right, is, that nothing is founded upon a divine right, nor can bind Christians directly or consequentially as a positive law, but what may be certainly known to have come from God, with an intention to oblige believers to the world's end. For either we must say, it binds Christians as a law when God did not intend it should; or else God's intentions to bind all believers by it, must be clearly manifested. Now then, so many ways, and no more, as a thing may be known to come from God with an intention to oblige all perpetually, a thing may be said to be of an unalterable divine right, and those can be no more than these two; either by the law of nature, or by some positive law of God: nothing else can bind universally and perpetually but one of these two, or by virtue of them, as shall be made appear. I begin with the law of nature. The law of nature binds indispensably, as it depends not upon any arbitrary constitutions, but is founded upon the intrinsic nature of good and evil in the things themselves, antecedently to any positive declaration of God's will. So that till the nature of good and evil be changed, that law is unalterable as to its obligation. When, I say, the law of nature is indispensable, my meaning is, that in those things which immediately flow from that law by way of precept, as the three first commands of the moral law, no man can by any positive law be exempted from his obligation to do them; neither by any abrogation of the laws themselves, nor by derogation, nor interpretation of them, nor change in the object, matter, or circumstance, whatsoever it be. Now, although the *formal reason* of man's obedience to the precepts of this law, be the conformity which the things commanded have to the divine nature and goodness; yet I conceive *the efficient cause* of man's *obligation* to these things, is to be fetched from the will, command, and pleasure of God: not as it is taken for an arbitrary, positive will, but as it is executive of divine purposes, and as it engraves such a law upon the hearts of men. For, notwithstanding man's reason, considered in itself, be the chief instrument of discovery what are these necessary duties of human nature (in which sense *Aristotle*<sup>2</sup> defines a natural law to be that which *πανταχου την*

<sup>1</sup> What one demands to be granted, as something self-evident, from what has been antecedently proved. *Am. Ed.*

<sup>2</sup> *Ethic.* l. 5, cap. 10.



αὐτὴν ἐχει δυνάμει “hath everywhere the same force and strength,” i. e. as *Andronicus Rhodius* very well interprets it, “among all that have the free use of their reason and faculties, neither are diseased nor perverted in mind,<sup>1</sup>) yet I say, it is not bare reason which binds men to the doing of those things commanded in that law, but as it is expressive of an eternal law, and deduceth its obligation from thence. And so this law, if we respect the rise, extent, and immutability of it, may be called deservedly the law of nature; but if we look at the emanation, efflux, and original of it, it is a divine law, and so it is called by *Molina*, *Alphonsus à Castro*, and others.<sup>2</sup> For the sanction of this law of nature, as well as others, depends upon the will of God, and therefore the obligation must come from him, it being in the power of no other to punish for the breach of a law, but those who had the legislative power to cause the obligation to it. It appears then from hence, that whatever by just consequence can be deduced from the preceptive law of nature, is of divine right, because from the very nature of that law (it being indispensable) it appears that God had an intent to oblige all persons in the world by it.

§ 5. The second way whereby we may know what is of divine right, is by God’s positive laws; for God being the supreme governor of the world, hath the legislative power in his hands, to bind to the performance of what duties he please, which carry no repugnancy in them to his divine nature and goodness. Hence arise all those positive laws of God which we have in Scripture; for God’s end in his written law was, that man should have a copy of all divine constitutions by him, that he might therein read what his duty was towards his Maker. The precepts of the law of nature are by the Jews called משפטים judgments and מצות commandments absolutely, without any addition; because they are of such things as do perpetually bind, which because they are known to all by natural right, they sometimes call them מצות הרעה the precepts of knowledge and being that their righteousness is so evident and apparent, they call them רברים המישורים the words of righteousness: but the clearest difference between the precepts of the law of nature, and other positive commands, is that which

<sup>1</sup> Παρ ἀνθρώποις τοῖς τε ὁρθῶς καὶ ὑγιῶς ἔχουσιν, οὐδὲ τοῖς νοσοῦσιν τὰς φρένας ἢ διεστραμμένους.

<sup>2</sup> V. Selden. de jure Nat. apud Ebræ. lib. 1, c. 7 and 8. Mol. de just and iur. p. 1, disp. 3. Alphons. de leg. pur. l. 2, c. 14.



the famous *Is. Casaubon*<sup>1</sup> takes notice of out of the Jewish doctors.<sup>2</sup> The most learned among the rabbis observe that there is this difference between מצות and חוקים, that Mitzvoth signifies the laws of which the reason is evident, as worship God, Honour thy father and mother; but they say, that *Chukim* denotes the established decrees of those things of which the reason is known only to God, as circumcision and the like.<sup>3</sup> The reason of the laws of nature is evident, but of positive laws there is no reason to be given אֵינוֹ אֶלָּא גִזְרַת מֶלֶךְ no other except the decree of the king; no other account but the will of God.<sup>4</sup> The laws of nature are by the LXX. often called δικαιώματα, precepts, and so used, *Rom. ii. 16.* by *Justin Martyr*,<sup>4</sup> τα καθολον, και φνσει, και αιωνια καλα, universally, laws according to nature, and properly eternal; by *Josephus*, της φνσεως δικαιωματα, the precepts of nature; but God's positive laws are called εντολαι, commandments, thence we read of *Zachary* and *Elizabeth*, Luke i. 6, πορευομενοι πασαις ταις εντολαις και δικαιωμασι, &c. *walking in all the ordinances and commandments of God blameless*, and those are called νομος εντολων εν δογμασι, by *S. Paul*, Ephes. ii. 15, "*the law of commandments in ordinances.*" Now although this difference be not always observed in the words in Scripture, yet there is a vast difference between the things themselves, though both equally commanded by God. That which is most to our present purpose to observe, is, that positives being mutable and alterable in themselves, a bare divine command is not sufficient to make them immutable, unless there be likewise expressed, that it is the will of God that they should always continue. This was that which the Jews stumbled at so much, and do to this day; because they are assured their law came once from God, therefore it must of necessity have a perpetual obligation: as may be seen in their two great doctors *Maimonides* and *Abarbinel*,<sup>5</sup> who both of them make the eternity of the law the fundamental articles of their creed. But *Abarbinel* splits this article into two; whereof the first is, that the

<sup>1</sup> Exercit. eccles. advers. bar. ex. 16, sec. 43.

<sup>2</sup> Observant doctissimi à rabbinis, inter מצות et חוקים hanc esse differentiam, quod Mitsvoth, sive præceptorum ratio aperta est, ut, Deum cole, honora patrem et matrem; at Chukim, statuta sive decreta earum rerum esse dicunt quarum דָּבָר ratio soli Deo sit nota, ut Circumcisionis et similibus.

<sup>3</sup> Seld. de jure Nat. apud Ebr. l. i. cap. 10.

<sup>4</sup> Colloq. cum Tryph. Judæc. Origin. lib. 16, cap. 10, V. Grot. Luc. i. 6.

<sup>5</sup> Maimon. de fundam. legis, cap. 9, sect. 1. Abarb. de capit. sidei. cap. 8, p. 29, ed. vorstii.

law of *Moses* shall never be changed; the other, that no other law shall come instead of it. The original of which grand error is from want of observing the difference between things commanded by God, some of which are good, and therefore commanded; others commanded, and therefore good. In which latter, if the reason of the command ceaseth, the command itself obligeth no longer. As the ceremonial law was to be their παιδαγωγός εἰς Χριστόν, schoolmaster to Christ, which is not meant in regard of the sharp severe nature of the law to drive them unto Christ,<sup>1</sup> as it is by many interpreted; but the law is a pedagogue in regard of its tutorage and conduct, as it signified him whose office it was to conduct noblemen's children to the school (as a learned man observes). This being then the office of the law, when the church was now entered into Christ's school, the office of this pedagogue then ceased. And so the ceremonial law needed no abrogation at all, expiring of itself at Christ's coming, as laws made for the times of war do when peace comes. Only because the Jews were so hardly persuaded that it should expire (the believing Jews conceiving at first the gospel came rather to help them to obey the law of *Moses* than to cancel the obligation of it), therefore it was necessary that a more honourable burial should be given to it, and the apostles should *pro rostris*, from the rostrum declare more fully that believers were freed from that yoke of ceremonies, under which the neck of their forefathers had groaned so long. It appears then that a positive law coming from God doth not merely by virtue of its being enacted by God, bind perpetually all persons, unless there be a declaration of God's will adjoined that it should do so.

§ 6. It will be here then well worth our inquiry to find out some *κειμήλια* "distinguishing marks" whereby to know when positive laws bind immutably, when not; I shall lay down these following. First, when the same reason of the command continues still, then we cannot conceive how that which was instituted upon such an account as remains still, should not have the same force now which it had at first. That positive law under which *Adam* was in his state of innocency touching the forbidden fruit, did not bind any longer than his fall; because the reason of the command ceased, which was the trial of man's obedience: for which, God made choice of a very easy command, according to that rule of politicians *In minimis obedientiæ periculum faciunt legislatores* in matters

<sup>1</sup> Gal. iii. 24.

of small moment, legislators make trial of men's obedience," of which they give this rational account, legislators binding to obedience is to be regarded rather than the reason of the duty concerning which the law is made.<sup>1</sup> Thence arose that law of the *Ephori* at Sparta, *barbam tondere*, to shave off the beard, to which no other reason was annexed but this, *obtemperare legibus*, "to obey the laws." This was God's aim in that easy command given to *Adam*, to make thereon an experiment of man's willingness to obey his Maker, and wherein man soon lost that *obsequii gloria*, "the glory of obedience," as he in *Tacitus* calls it, which, as *Pliny* saith, is *in eo major quod quis minus velit*. "The crime was so much the greater as he willed the obligation to be the less." But had this law been a standing one for all mankind, it would have continued its obligation still; but we see that it was only a personal, temporary, probative precept; for no sooner was man fallen but its obligation ceased. So likewise those precepts of the judicial law which immediately respected the commonwealth of the Jews as such, their obligation reacheth not to Christians at all, nor (as it is generally conceived), to the Jews themselves, when out of the confines of their own country, because the reason of those laws doth neither descend to Christians, nor did travel abroad with the Jews. But those judicial laws which are founded upon common equity do bind still, not by virtue of that *sanction*, but by virtue of common principles of equity, which certainly in the present shortness of human reason cannot be fetched from a clearer fountain than those laws which once came from the fountain of goodness: none of whose constitutions can any ways be supposed to deviate from the most exact rules of justice and equity. And upon this very ground too, some part of the fourth commandment is abrogated, and the other continues to bind still; for the reason of the ceremonial and occasional part is ceased, and the reason of what was moral, continues. Therefore the schoolmen say right of the sabbath day, *Cultus est à naturâ, modus à lege, virtus à Gratiâ*, "its observance is from nature, the manner from law, the virtue from grace." Nature dictates that God should be worshipped, the law informs what day and time to spend in his worship, grace must enable us to perform that worship on that day in a right manner. And because the same reason for God's worship continues still, there-

<sup>1</sup> Quia legislatoris ad obedientiam obligantis potius habenda est ratio, quam rei de qua lex est lata.

fore it is a precept of the natural law, that God should be worshipped. What time must be spent in God's worship, (as one day in seven) though the reason be evident from the nature of it when it is made known; yet it is hard to conceive that nature could have found out the precise determination of the time. Although I must confess the general consent of nations, as to the seventh part, would speak fair to be the voice of nature, or at least a tradition received from the sons of *Noah*, which, if so, will be an evidence of the observation of the sabbath before the children of Israel's being in the wilderness. But granting that the seventh part of the time was a positive law of God, yet I say it binds immutably, because there is as strong a reason for it now as ever, and *Ratio immutabilis præcepti, facit præceptum immutabile*. "The reason of a precept being immutable, makes the precept immutable." This I take to be the sense of those who distinguish between *morale positivum*, the moral absolute, and *morale naturale*, the moral natural, *i. e.* that some things are so moral, that even nature itself can discover them, as that God should be worshipped. Other things are so moral, that though the reason of them be founded in nature, yet there wants divine revelation to discover them to us; but when once discovered, are discerned to be very agreeable to common principles of reason: And these when thus discovered, are as immutably obligatory as the other, because the reason of them is immutable. And of this nature is the determination of the particular time for God's worship, and limitation of it to one day in seven. But what was in that precept merely occasional, as the first and original ground of its limitation to the seventh in order, *God's resting on that day from the work of creation*, and the further ground of its enforcement to the Jews, *viz. their deliverance out of Egypt*,<sup>1</sup> being not immutable, but temporary and occasional, may upon as great ground given, and approved of God for that end (as is evident by the apostles' practice) be sufficient reason of the alteration of the seventh day to the first day of the week. By this may briefly be seen how irrationally those speak, who say we have no further ground for our observation of the Lord's day now, than for other arbitrary festivals in the church, *viz.*, The tradition of the church of God. I grant, the tradition of the church doth acquaint us with apostolical practice, but the ground of our observation of the Lord's day, is not the church's tradition, but that apostolical practice con-

<sup>1</sup> Gen. ii. 2. Deut. v. 15.



veyed by universal tradition (which setting aside the festivals observed upon the Lord's days, can very hardly be found for any other). But supposing universal tradition for other festivals; I say, here tradition is not only used as a testimony and instrument of conveyance, as in the other case of the Lord's day; but is itself the only argument, and the very ground of the original observance. Between which two what a wide difference there is, let any rational man judge. But for a further clearing this observation, we must consider, that the reason of the command, which we say is the measure of its obligation, must not be fetched from men's uncertain conjectures (among whom dreams often pass for reasons), but it must be either expressed in the law itself, or deducible by apparent and easy inference from it; as is plain in the decrees of the apostles about *things strangled, and offered to idols*,<sup>1</sup> where the reason of the command is plainly implied, to wit, for present compliance with the Jews; and therefore no sooner did the reason of the command cease, but the obligation of it ceased too: but of this more afterwards. This is one way then to discern the difference between positive laws, as to the obligation of them, by the ground and reason of the command. And therefore it is well observed by divines, (which further confirms what I now prove,) that no command doth bind against the reason of the command; because it is not the words, but the sense and reason of a command which hath the greatest obligatory force. Therefore *Tully*<sup>2</sup> tells us, that the *ratio juris et legislatoris consilium*, "the reason of the law and the design of the legislator," is the best interpreter of any law; who excellently and largely proves, that the reason of the law is the law, and not the words. So much for the first rule.

§ 7. Secondly, another way to know when positive laws are immutable, is, when God's will is expressly declared that such laws shall bind immutably. For, it being granted on all hands, that God may bind us to those things which are left indifferent by the law of nature, and likewise for what term he please; the only inquiry left, is to see in his word whether he hath so bound us or not; and, if he hath, whether he hath left it in man's power to revoke his laws. For as to positive laws, expressly laid down in Scripture, the ground of which is only as the Jews speak *נִירָה מֶלֶךְ* "*the will of the King*," i. e. God's own pleasure, without any reason or occasion of it else

<sup>1</sup> Acts xv. 29.<sup>2</sup> Ora. Cœlia.



expressed, or necessarily implied; these do bind immutably, unless the same power which commanded them, doth again revoke them. For we cannot in any wise conceive that the wise God should, after declaring his own will, leave it in the power of any corrupt fallible being to determine, or dispense with the obligation of his own laws. Which to do, and instead of them to enforce others immediately upon the consciences of men, as standing laws, is an attempt beyond that of the giants against heaven, (or the men at *Babel*,) that being only an affectation of reaching heaven, but this an actual usurpation of God's supreme and legislative power and authority. But though man hath not, God always reserves to himself a power to relax, interpret, and dispense with his own positive laws, which imply no repugnancy to his own nature. And this power is always to be understood in all laws to be reserved to God, where he hath not himself declared that he will not use it; which is done either by the annexing an oath or a promise, which the apostle calls the *two immutable things in which it is impossible for God to lie*. For though God be free to promise, yet when he hath promised, his own nature and faithfulness bind him to perform; in which sense I understand those who say, God in making promises is bound only to himself, and not to men; that is, that the ground of performance ariseth from God's faithfulness. For else, if we respect the right coming by the promise, that must immediately respect the person to whom it is made, and in respect of which we commonly say that the promiser is bound to performance. But the case is otherwise in penal laws, which, though never so strict, do imply a power of *relaxation* in the legislator: because penal laws do only constitute the *debitum pœnæ*, the debt of punishment, and bind the sinner over to punishment, but do not bind the legislator to an actual execution upon the debt. Which is the ground that the person of a mediator was admissible in the place of fallen man, because it was a penal law, and therefore relaxable. But since the debt of punishment is immediately contracted upon the breach of the law, therefore satisfaction was necessary to God as lawgiver, either by the person himself, or another for him; because it was not consistent with the holiness of God's nature, and his wisdom as Governor, to relax an established law, without valuable consideration. Now for the third kind of God's laws, besides promissory and penal, *viz.* such as are merely positive respecting duties, which become such by virtue of an express command: these, though

they be revocable in themselves, yet being revocable only by God himself, and his own power, since he hath already in his word fully revealed his will, unless therein he hath declared when their obligation shall cease, they continue irreversible. This is the case as to the sacraments of the New Testament, which being commands merely positive, yet Christ commanding Christians as Christians to observe them, and not as Christians of the first and second ages of the church; his mind can be no otherwise interpreted concerning them, than that he did intend immutably to bind all Christians to the observance of them. For, although the *Socinians*<sup>1</sup> say that baptism was only a rite instituted by Christ for the passing men from Judaism and Gentilism to Christianity, yet we are not bound to look upon all as reason that comes from those who profess themselves the admirers of it. For Christ's command nowhere implying such a limitation; and an outward visible profession of Christianity being a duty now, and the covenant entered into by that rite of initiation, as obligatory as ever, we have no reason to think that Christ's command doth not reach us now, especially the promise being made to as many as God shall call,<sup>2</sup> and consequently the same duty required which was then in order to the obtaining of the same ends. A third way to discern the immutability of positive laws, is, when the things commanded in particular are necessary to the being, succession, and continuance of such a society of men professing the gospel, as is instituted and approved by Christ himself. For Christ must be supposed to have the power himself to order what society he please, and appoint what orders he please to be observed by them; what rites and ceremonies to be used in admission of members into his church, in their continuing in it, in the way, means, manner of ejection out of it; in the preserving the succession of his church, and the administration of ordinances of his appointment. These being thus necessary for the maintaining and upholding this society, they are thereby of a nature as unalterable, as the duty of observing what Christ hath commanded is. How much these things concern the resolution of the question proposed, will appear afterwards. Thus we have gained a resolution of the second thing, whereon an unalterable divine right is founded; *viz.* either upon the dictates of the law of nature, concurring with the rules of the written word; or upon express positive laws of God, whose reason is immutable, or

<sup>1</sup> Catech. Racov. cap. 4.<sup>2</sup> Acts ii. 39.

which God hath declared shall continue, as necessary to the being of the church.

§ 8. The next thing is to examine the other pretences which are brought for a divine right; which are either *Scripture examples*, or *divine acts*, or *divine approbation*. For *Scripture examples*: first, I take it for granted on all hands, that all Scripture examples do not bind us to follow them; such are the mediatory acts of Christ, the heroical acts of extraordinary persons, all accidental and occasional actions. Example doth not bind us as an example; for then all examples are to be followed, and so we shall of necessity go, *quà itur, non quà eundum*, "walk by the most examples, and not by rule." There is then no obligatory force in example itself. Secondly, there must be then some rule fixed to know when examples bind, and when not; for otherwise there can be no discrimination put between examples which we are to follow, and which to avoid. This rule must be either immediately *obligatory*, making it a duty to follow such examples, or else *directive*, declaring what examples are to be followed: and yet even this latter doth imply, as well as the former, that the following these examples thus declared, is become a duty. There can be no duty without a law making it to be a duty, and consequently, it is the law making it to be a duty to follow such example, which gives a divine right to those examples, and not barely the examples themselves. We are bound to follow Christ's example, not barely because he did such and such things, (for many things he did we are not bound to follow him in,) but because he himself hath by a command made it our duty to follow him in his humility, patience, self-denial, &c. and in whatever things are set out in Scripture for our imitation.<sup>1</sup> When men speak then with so much confidence, that scripture examples do bind us unalterably, they either mean that the example itself makes it a duty, which I have shown already to be absurd; or else that the moral nature of the action done in that example, or else the law making it our duty to follow the example, though in itself it be of no moral nature. If the *former* of these two, then it is the morality of the action binds us, without its being *incarnate* in the example: for the example in actions not moral, binds not at all, and therefore the example binds only by virtue of the morality of it; and consequently, it is the morality of the action which binds, and not the example. If the *latter*, the rule making

<sup>1</sup> Matth. xi. 21. 1 John ii. 6. 1 Pet. ii. 22.

it our duty, then it is more apparent that it is not the example which binds necessarily, but that rule which makes it a duty to follow it; for examples in indifferent things do not bind without a law making it to be a duty: and so it evidently appears, that all obligatory force is taken off from the examples themselves, and resolved into one of the two former, the moral nature of the action, or a positive law. And therefore those who plead the obligatory nature of scripture examples, must either produce the moral nature of these examples, or else a rule binding us to follow them. Especially, when these examples are brought to found a new positive law, obliging all Christians necessarily to the end of the world. Concerning the binding nature of apostolical practice, I shall discourse largely afterwards. The next thing pleaded for a divine right, is by *divine acts*. As to this, it is again evident that all divine acts do not constitute such a right; therefore there must be something expressed in those acts when such a divine right follows them; whence we may infallibly gather, it was God's intention they should perpetually oblige: as is plain in the cases instanced in the most for this purpose; as God's resting on the seventh day making the sabbath perpetual:<sup>1</sup> for it was not God's resting that made it the sabbath, for that is only expressed as the occasion of its institution; but it was God's sanctifying the day, that is, by a law setting it apart for his own service, which made it a duty. And so Christ's resurrection was not it which made the Lord's day a sabbath of divine right; but Christ's resurrection was the occasion of the apostles altering only a circumstantial part of a moral duty already; which being done upon so great reasons, and by persons indued with an infallible spirit, thereby it becomes our duty to observe that moral command in this limitation of time. But here it is further necessary to distinguish between acts merely *positive*, and acts *donative* or *legal*. The former confer no right at all, but the latter do; not barely as acts, but as legal acts, that is, by some declaration that those acts do confer right. And so it is in all donations, and therefore in law, the bare delivery of a thing to another doth not give a legal title to it, without express transferring of dominion and propriety with it. Thus in Christ's delivering the keys to *Peter* and the rest of the apostles,<sup>2</sup> by that act I grant the apostles had the power of the keys by divine right; but then it was not any bare act of Christ which did it, but it was

<sup>1</sup> Gen. ii. 2.<sup>2</sup> Matth. xvi. 19; xviii. 18.



only the declaration of Christ's will conferring that authority upon them. Again, we must distinguish between a *right* conferred by a *donative act*, and the *unalterable nature* of that right; for it is plain there may be a right *personal* as well as *successive, derivative, and perpetual*. And therefore it is not enough to prove that a right was given by any act of Christ, unless it be made appear it was Christ's intention that right should be perpetual, if it oblige still. For otherwise the *extent of the apostolic commission, the power of working miracles*, as well as *the power of the keys* (whether by it we mean a power declarative of duty, or a power authoritative and penal), must continue still, if a difference be not made between these two; and some rule found out to know when the right conferred by divine acts is personal, when successive. Which rule thus found out, must make the right unalterable, and so concerning us; and not the bare donative act of Christ: for it is evident, they were all equally conferred upon the apostles by an act of Christ: and if some continue still, and others do not, then the bare act of Christ doth not make an unalterable divine right. And so though it be proved that the apostles had superiority of order and jurisdiction over the pastors of the church by an act of Christ; yet it must further be proved, that it was Christ's intention that superiority should continue in their successors, or it makes nothing to the purpose. But this argument I confess, I see not how those who make a necessary divine right to follow upon the acts of Christ, can possibly avoid the force of. The last thing pleaded for divine right, is *divine approbation*; but this least of all constitutes a divine right: for if the actions be extraordinary, God's approbation of them as such, cannot make them an ordinary duty. In all other actions which are good, and therefore only commendable, they must be so, either because done in conformity to God's revealed will, or to the nature of things good in themselves. In the one, it is the positive law of God, in the other the law of nature, which made the action good, and so approved by God, and on that account we are bound to do it. For God will certainly approve of nothing but what is done according to his will revealed, or natural; which will and law of his, is that which makes anything to be of divine right, *i. e.* perpetually binding, as to the observation of it. But for acts of merely positive nature, which we read God's approbation of in Scripture, by virtue of which approbation those actions do oblige us; in this case, I say, it is not God's mere approbation that makes the obligation, but as



that approbation, so recorded in Scripture, is a sufficient testimony and declaration of God's intention to oblige men: and so it comes to be a positive law, which is nothing else but a sufficient declaration of the legislator's will and intention, to bind in particular actions and cases. Thus now we have cleared whereon a necessary and unalterable divine right must be founded; either upon the law of nature, or some positive law of God, sufficiently declared to be perpetually binding.

## CHAPTER II.

Six Hypotheses laid down, as the basis of the following Discourse. 1. The irreversible obligation of the Law of Nature, either by human, or Divine positive Laws, in things immediately flowing from it. 2. Things agreeable to the Law of Nature may be lawfully practised in the Church of God, where there is no prohibition by positive Laws; enlarged into five subservient propositions. 3. Divine positive Laws, concerning the manner of the thing whose substance is determined by the Law of Nature, must be obeyed by virtue of the obligation of the natural Law. 4. Things undetermined, both by the natural and positive Laws of God, may be lawfully determined by the supreme authority in the Church of God. 5. What is then determined by lawful authority, doth bind the consciences of men, subject to that authority—to obedience to those determinations. 6. Things thus determined by lawful authority, are not thereby made unalterable, but may be revoked, limited, and changed by the same authority.

§ 1. HAVING showed what a divine right is, and whereon it is founded; our next great inquiry will be, how far church government is founded upon divine right, taken either of these two ways. But for our more distinct, clear, and rational proceeding, I shall lay down some things, as so many postulates or general principles and hypotheses, which will be as the basis and foundation of the following discourse; which all of them concern the obligation of laws, wherein I shall proceed gradually, beginning with the law of nature, and so to divine positive laws; and lastly, to speak to human positive laws. The first principle or hypothesis which I lay down, is,

I. *That where the Law of Nature doth determine anything by way of duty, as flowing from the principles of it, there no positive law can be supposed to take off the obligation of it.* Which I prove, both as to human positive laws and Divine: first as to human. For first, the things commanded in the law of nature, being just and righteous in themselves, there can be no obligatory law made against such things. *Nemo tenetur ad impossibile*, “No one is bound to do an impossibility,” is true in the sense of the civil law, as well

as in philosophy; as *impossibile* is taken for *turpe*, "shameful," and *turpe* for that which is contrary to the dictates of nature. A man may be as well bound not to be a man, as not to act according to principles of reason: for the law of nature is nothing else but the dictate of right reason, discovering the good or evil of particular actions, from their conformity or repugnancy to natural light.<sup>1</sup> Whatever positive law is then made directly infringing and violating natural principles, is thereby of no force at all. 'And that which hath no obligation in itself, cannot dissolve a former obligation. Secondly, the indispensableness of the obligation of the law of nature, appears from the end of all other laws, which are agreed upon by mutual compact, which is, the better to preserve men in their rights and privileges. Now the greatest rights of men, are such as flow from nature itself, and therefore, as no law binds against the reason of it, so neither can it against the common end of laws. Therefore, if a human positive law should be made, that God should not be worshipped, it cannot bind, being against the main end of laws, which is to make men live together as reasonable creatures, which they cannot do, without doing what nature requires, which is, to serve God who made it. Again, it overturns the very foundation of all government, and dissolves the tie to all human laws, if the law of nature doth not bind indispensably: for otherwise, upon what ground must men yield obedience to any laws that are made? Is it not by virtue of this law of nature, that men must stand to all compacts and agreements made? If laws take their force among men from hence, they can bind no further than those compacts did extend; which cannot be supposed to be, to violate and destroy their own natures. Positive laws may restrain much of what is only of the permissive law of nature (for the intent of positive laws, was to make men abate so much of their natural freedom, as should be judged necessary for the preservation of human societies,) but against the obligatory law of nature, as to its precepts, no after-law can derogate from the obligation of it. And therefore it is otherwise between the law of nature and positive laws, than between laws merely civil; for as to these the rule is, that *posterior derogat priori*, "the latter (law) takes away from the obligation of the former;" but as to natural laws and positive, *prior derogat posteriori*, "The former takes away from the latter," the law of nature,

<sup>1</sup> Grot. de jure belli, &c. lib. I. cap. I. s. 10.

which is first, takes away the obligation of a positive law, if it be contrary to it. As *Justellus*<sup>1</sup> observes, it was in the primitive church, in reference to the obligation of the canons of the councils, that such as were inserted in the *Codex Canonum*, being of the more ancient councils, did render the obligation of later canons invalid, which were contrary to them, unless it were in matters of small moment. We see then, that supposing the law of nature doth not continue obligatory, the obligation of all human positive laws will fall with it, (as the superstructure needs must when the foundation is removed,) for if any other law of nature may be dissolved, why not that whereby men are bound to stand to covenants and contracts made? and if that be dissolved, how can the obligation to human laws remain, which is founded upon that *basis*? And so all civil societies are thereby overturned. Thirdly, it appears from the nature of that obligation which follows the law of nature, so that thereby no human law can bind against this; for human laws bind only outward human actions *directly*, and internal acts only by virtue of their necessary connection with, and influence upon outward actions, and not otherwise; but the law of nature immediately binds the soul and conscience of man: and therefore *obligatio naturalis*, and *nexus conscientiæ*, “natural obligation and the bond of conscience,” are made to be the same by *Lessius*, *Suarez*, and others. For *Lessius*<sup>2</sup> disputing, whether a will made without solemnity of law, doth bind in conscience or no? He proves it doth by this argument, from the opinion of the lawyers, that without those solemnities there doth arise from it a natural obligation, and the *hæres ab Intestato*, “and the heir to an intestate,” who is the next of kin, is bound to make it good; therefore it doth bind in conscience. So then there ariseth a necessary obligation upon conscience, from the dictates of the law of nature, which cannot be removed by any positive law. For although there lie no action in the civil law against the breach of a merely natural law, as in the former case of succession to a will not legally made; in covenants made without conditions expressed, in recovery of debts from a person to whom money was lent in his pupilage without consent of his tutor; in these cases though no action lie against the persons, yet this proves not that these have no

<sup>1</sup> Præfat. in Cod. Canon. Eccl. Afric. p. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Less. de just. & jure, l. 2, c. 19, dub. 3, n. 12. Suarez de leg. lib. 2, cap. 9, sect. 6.

obligation upon a man, but only that he is not responsible for the breach of moral honesty in them before civil courts. In which sense those lawyers are to be understood, which deny the obligation of the law of nature. But however conscience binds the offender over to answer at a higher tribunal, before which all such offences shall be punished. Thus then we see no positive human law can dispense with, or dissolve the obligation of the law of nature. Much less, secondly, can we suppose any positive divine law should. For although God's power be immense and infinite to do what pleaseth him, yet we must always suppose this power to be conjoined with goodness, else it is no divine power: and therefore *posse malum, non est posse*, "the power to do evil, is not power," *i. e.* it is no power, but weakness to do evil; and without this *posse malum*, there can be no alteration made in the nature of good and evil; which must be supposed, if the obligation of the natural law be dispensed with. Therefore it was well said by *Origen*,<sup>1</sup> when *Celsus* objected to it as the common speech of the Christians, that with God all things are possible; that he neither understood *how it was spoken, nor what these all things are, nor how God could do them*: and concludes with this excellent speech,<sup>2</sup> "*We say*," saith he, "*that God can do all things, which are reconcilable with his Deity, goodness, and wisdom.*" And after adds, "*That as it is impossible for honey to make things bitter, and light to make things obscure, so it is for God to do anything that is unjust.*"<sup>3</sup> "*For the power of doing evil is directly contrary to the Divine nature, and that Omnipotency which is consistent with it.*" To the same purpose he speaks elsewhere,<sup>4</sup> *οδεν μη πρεπον εαντω ο θεος βουλεται*, *God wills nothing unbecoming himself*: and again,<sup>5</sup> *We affirm that God cannot do evil actions: for if he could, he might as well be no God. For if God should do evil, he would be no God.* So then, though God be omnipotent, yet it follows not that he can therefore dissolve the obligation of the preceptive law of nature, or change the natures of good and evil. God may, indeed, alter the properties of those things from whence the respects of

<sup>1</sup> Orig. lib. 3, C. Celsum. p. 154, ed. Cont.

<sup>2</sup> Δυναται γαρ καθ' ημας παντα ο θεος, απερ δυναμενος του θεος ειναι, και του αγαθος ειναι και σοφος ειναι ουκ εξισταται.

<sup>3</sup> Εναντιον γαρ εστιν αυτου τη θεοτητι και τη καθ' αυτην παση δυναμει, η του αδικειν δυναμις.

<sup>4</sup> C. Celsum l. 5, p. 147.

<sup>5</sup> Φαμεν δε οτι ου δυναται αισχερα ο θεος, επει εσαι ο θεος δυναμενος μη ειναι θεος: ει γαρ αισχερον τι δεα ο θεος, ουκ εστι θεος.



good and evil do result, as in *Abraham's* offering *Isaac*, the Israelites taking away the *Ægyptians'* jewels; which God may justly do by virtue of his absolute dominion; but the change here is not in the obligation of the law, but in the things themselves. Murder would be an intrinsical evil still; but that which was done by immediate and explicit command from God, would have been no murder. Theft had been a sin still, but taking things alienated from their properties by God himself, was not theft. We conclude then, what comes immediately from the law of nature by way of command binds immutably and indispensably. Which is the first hypothesis or principle laid down.

§ 2. The second hypothesis is, *that things which are either deducible from the law of nature, or by the light of nature discovered to be very agreeable to it, may be lawfully practised in the church of God, if they be not otherwise determined by the positive laws of God, or of lawful human authority.* We shall first inquire into the nature of these things, and then show the lawfulness of doing them. For the nature of these things: we must consider what things may be said to be of the law of nature. They may be reduced to two heads, which must be accurately distinguished. They are either such things which nature dictates to be done, or not to be done necessarily and immutably; or else such things as are judged to be very agreeable to natural light, but are subject to positive determinations. The former are called by some *jus naturæ obligativum*, the obligatory law of nature; by others *jus naturæ proprium*, the proper law of nature, whereby things are made necessarily duties or sins; the latter *jus naturæ permissivum*, or *reductivum*, law permitted by or reducible to nature, for which it is sufficient if there be no repugnancy to natural light. From these two arise a different obligation upon men; either strict, and is called by *Covarruvias*,<sup>1</sup> *obligatio ex justitiâ*, an obligation of duty and justice; the other larger, *obligatio ex communi æquitate*, or *ex honestate morali*; "an obligation from common equity, that is, according to the agreeableness of things to natural light." The former I have shown already to bind indispensably, but these latter are subject to positive laws. For our better understanding the obligation of these (which is more intricate than the former) we shall consider men under a double notion, either in a state of absolute liberty, which some call a state of

<sup>1</sup> Covarr. c. 10. de testamin 11.

nature; or else in a state wherein they have restrained their own liberty by mutual compacts, or are determined by a higher law. These things premised, I lay down these propositions.

1. *In a state of absolute liberty, before any positive laws were superadded to the natural, whatsoever was not necessarily determined by the obligatory law of nature, was wholly left to men's power to do it or not, and belongs to the permissive law of nature.* And thus all those things which are since determined by positive laws, were in such a supposed state, left to the free choice of a man's own will. Thus it was in men's power to join in civil society with whom they pleased, to recover things, or vindicate injuries in what way they judged best, to submit to what constitutions alone they would themselves, to choose what form of government among them they pleased, to determine how far they would be bound to any authority chosen by themselves, to lodge the legislative and coercive power in what persons they thought fit, to agree upon punishments answerable to the nature of offences. And so in all other things not repugnant to the common light of reason, and the dictates of the preceptive part of the law of nature.

2. *A state of absolute liberty, not agreeing to the nature of man considered in relation to others; it was in men's power to restrain their own liberty upon compacts so far as should be judged necessary for the ends of their mutual society.* A state of nature I look upon only as an imaginary state, for better understanding the nature and obligation of laws. For it is confessed by the greatest assertors<sup>1</sup> of it, that the relation of parents and children cannot be conceived in a state of natural liberty, because children as soon as born are actually under the power and authority of their parents. But for our clearer apprehending the matter in hand, we shall proceed with it. Supposing then all those former rights were in their own power, it is most agreeable to natural reason, that every man may part with his right so far as he please for his own advantage. Here now, men finding a necessity to part with some of their rights, to defend and secure their most considerable ones, they begin to think of compacts one with another (taking this as a principle of the natural law, and the foundation of society, that all covenants are to be performed). When they are thus far agreed, they then consider the terms

<sup>1</sup> Hobbs de Civ. cap 1, s. 11, Ann.

upon which they should enter into society one with another. And here men divest themselves of their original liberty, and agree upon an inclosure of properties, and the fences of those properties; I mean, upon living together in a civil state, and of the laws by which they must be ruled. This is apparently agreeable to natural reason, the things being in their own power, with which they agree to part.

§ 3. *Prop. 3. Men entering upon societies by mutual compacts, things thereby become good and evil, which were not so before.* Thus he who was free before to do what and how he pleased, is now bound to obey what laws he hath consented to; or else he breaks not only a positive law, but that law of nature, which commands man to stand to covenants once made, though he be free to make them. And therefore it is observable, that the doing of things that were lawful before covenants made, and things thereby determined, may be so far from being lawful after, that the doing of them may contradict a principle of the obligatory law of nature. Thus in a state of liberty, every one had right to do what he thought fit for his use; but propriety and dominion being introduced, which was a free voluntary act, by men's determining rights, it now becomes an offence against the law of nature, to take away that which is another man's.<sup>1</sup> In which sense alone it is, that theft is said to be forbidden by the law of nature. And by the same reason, he that resists and opposeth the lawful authority, under which he is born, doth not only offend against the municipal laws of the place wherein he lives, but against that original and fundamental law of societies, *viz.* standing to covenants once made. For it is a gross mistake, as well as dangerous, for men to imagine, that every man is born in a state of absolute liberty, to choose what laws and governors he please; but every one being now born a subject to that authority he lives under, he is bound to preserve it as much as in him lies: thence *Augustus* had some reason to say, he was the best citizen, *qui præsentem reipublicæ statum mutari non vult, that doth not disturb the present state of the commonwealth*; and who, as *Alcibiades* saith in *Thucydides*, *ὅπως ἰδεῖσθαι σχῆμα τῆς πολιτείας, τούτο σωζει, endeavours to preserve that form of government he was born under.*<sup>2</sup> And the reason of it is, that in contracts and covenants made for government, men look not only at themselves, but

<sup>1</sup> Paulus l. i. D. de furtis. Ulpian. lib. Post. D. de verb sig.

<sup>2</sup> V. Grot. de jure belli, &c. lib. 2, cap. 4. sect. 8.

at the benefit of posterity; if then one party be bound to maintain the rights of the other's posterity, as well as of his person, the other party must be supposed to oblige his posterity in his covenant to perform obedience, which every man hath power to do, because children are at their parents' disposal; and equity requires, that the covenant entered should be of equal extent to both parties: and if a man doth expect protection for his posterity, he must engage for the obedience of his posterity too, to the governors who do legally protect them. But the further consideration of these things belongs to another place; my purpose being to treat of government in the church, and not in the state. The sum of this is, that the obligation to the performance of what things are determined, (which are of the permissive law of nature,) by positive laws, doth arise from the obligatory law of nature. As the demonstration of the particular problems in the mathematics, doth depend upon the principles of the theorems themselves; and so whoever denies the truth of the problem, deduced by just consequence from the theorem, must consequently deny the truth of the theorem itself; so those who violate the particular determination of the permissive law of nature, do violate the obligation of the preceptive part of that law: obedience to the other being grounded on the principles of this.

4. *God hath power by his positive laws to take in and determine as much of the permissive law of nature as he please, which being once so determined by an universal law, is so far from being lawful to be done, that the doing of them by those under an obligation to his positive laws, is an offence against the immutable law of nature.* That God may restrain man's natural liberty, I suppose none who own God's legislative power over the world can deny: especially considering that men have power to restrain themselves; much more then hath God, who is the rector and governor of the world. That a breach of his positive laws is an offence against the common law of nature, appears hence; because man being God's creature, is not only bound to do what is in general suitable to the principles of reason in fleeing from evil, and choosing good; but to submit to the determinations of God's will, as to the distinction of good from evil. For being bound universally to obey God, it is implied that man should obey him in all things which he discovers to be his will: whose determination must make a thing not only good, but necessary to be done, by virtue of his supreme authority over men. This then needs no further proof, being so clear in itself.



5. *Lastly, what things are left undetermined by divine positive laws, are in the church's power to use, and practise according as it judgeth them most agreeable to the rule of the word.* That things undetermined by the word are still lawful, evidently appears: because what was once lawful, must have some positive law to make it unlawful, which if there be none, it remains lawful still. And that the church of God should be debarred of any privilege of any other societies, I understand not; especially if it belong to it as a society considered in itself, and not as a particular society constituted upon such accounts as the church is. For I doubt not but to make it evident afterwards, that many parts of government in the church belong not to it as such in a restrained sense, but in the general notion of it, as a society of men embodied together by some laws proper to itself; although it subsist upon a higher foundation, viz. of divine institution, and upon higher grounds, reasons, principles, ends; and be directed by other laws immediately than any other societies in the world are.

§ 4. The third hypothesis is this; *Where the law of nature determines the thing, and the divine law determines the manner and circumstances of the thing, there we are bound to obey the divine law in its particular determinations, by virtue of the law of nature in its general obligation.* As for instance, the law of nature bindeth man to worship God; but for the way, manner, and circumstances of worship, we are to follow the positive laws of God: because as we are bound by nature to worship him, so we are bound by virtue of the same law to worship him in the manner best pleasing to himself. For the light of nature, though it determine the duty of worship, yet it doth not the way and manner, and though acts of pure obedience be in themselves acceptable unto God, yet as to the manner of those acts, and the positives of worship, they are no further acceptable unto God than commanded by him. Because in things not necessarily determined by the law of nature, the goodness or evil of them lying in reference to God's acceptance, it must depend upon his command, supposing positive laws to be at all given by God to direct men in their worship of him. For supposing God had not at all revealed himself in order to his worship; doubtless it had been lawful for men not only to pray to God, and express their sense of their dependence upon him, but to appoint ways, times and places for the doing it, as they should judge most convenient and agreeable to natural light. Which



is evident from the Scripture itself as to places: for as far as we can find, sacrificing in high places, (that is, such as were of men's own appointment,) was lawful, till the temple was built by *Solomon*; as appears by the several examples of *Gideon*, *Samuel*, *David*,<sup>1</sup> and others. Indeed after the place was settled by God's own law, it became wholly sinful: but if so before, we should not have read of God's accepting sacrifices in such places as he did *Gideon's*, nor of the prophets doing it, as *Samuel* and *David* did. It is a disputable case about sacrifices, whether the offering of them came only from natural light, or from some express command: the latter seems far more probable to me, because I cannot see how natural light should anywise dictate that God would accept of the blood of other creatures as a token of man's obedience to himself. And *Rivet*<sup>2</sup> gives this very good reason why the destruction of anything in sacrifice cannot belong to the law of nature, because it is only acceptable as a sign, and token of obedience, and not simply as an act of obedience; and this sign signifying *ex instituto*, (for man's destroying the life of a beast can never naturally signify man's obedience to God,) and therefore it must have some positive law; for those which signify only by institution, and not naturally, cannot be referred to a dictate of the law of nature. To which purpose it is further observable, that God doth so often in Scripture slight the offering of sacrifices, in respect of any inherent virtue or goodness in the action itself, or acceptableness to God upon the account of the thing done. In which sense God saith, *He that killeth a bullock, is as if he slew a man; and he that sacrificeth a sheep, as if he cut off a dog's neck, &c.*<sup>3</sup> For what is there more in the one than in the other, but only God's appointment, which makes one acceptable and not the other? So that it is no ways probable that God would have accepted *Abel's* sacrifice rather than *Cain's*, had there been no command for their sacrificing. For as to mere natural light, *Cain's* sacrifice seems more agreeable to that than *Abel's*;<sup>4</sup> *Cain's* being an eucharistical offering without hurt to other creatures, but *Abel's* was "*cruentum sacrificium*," a sacrifice of blood. But the chief ground of *Abel's* acceptance, was his offering in faith, as the apostle to the Hebrews tells us. Now faith is a higher principle than natural light,<sup>5</sup> and must suppose divine revelation, and so a divine command

<sup>1</sup> Judges vi. 18; 1 Sam. vii. 1, 4; xvi. 9; x. 3; 2 Sam. xv. 18, &c.

<sup>2</sup> Exercit. in Gen. xlii.

<sup>3</sup> Isaiah xlii. 3.

<sup>4</sup> Gen. iv. 3, 4.

<sup>5</sup> Heb. xi. 4.

as the principle and ground of his action. *Moses'* silence in reference to a command, is no argument there was none, it not being his design to write at large all the particular precepts of the *oral* law, but to deduce the genealogy of the patriarchs down from *Adam* and the creation. But, supposing a command given from God determining modes and circumstances of such things of which the substance depends on a natural law, men are as well bound to the observation of them after their revelation, as the other before. The one being a testimony of their obedience to God as clear and full as the other; yes, and so much the clearer evidence of obedience, in that there could be no argument for the performing of those things but a divine command. And even in doing things intrinsically good, the ground of purely religious obedience is, because God commands men to do those things more than that they are good in themselves. Doing a thing because most suitable to nature, speaks morality; but doing because God commands it, speaks true religion and the obedience of faith. For as the formal reason of the act of faith is a divine testimony discovered to our understandings, so the formal principle of an act of spiritual obedience is a divine command inclining the will, and aving it to performance. So far then as divine law determines things, we are bound to observe them from the dictates of the natural law.

§ 5. The fourth hypothesis: *In things which are determined both by the law of nature, and divine positive laws, as to the substance and morality of them, but not determined as to all circumstances belonging to them; it is in the power of lawful authority in the church of God to determine them, so far as they judge them tend to the promoting the performance of them in due manner.* So that not only matters wholly left at liberty as to the substance of them are subject to human laws and constitutions, but even things commanded in the divine law, in reference to the manner of performance, if undetermined by the same law, which enforce the duty. Thus the setting apart some time for God's worship, is a dictate of the natural law: that the first day of the week be that time, is determined under the gospel; but in what places, at what hours, in what order, decency and solemnity this worship shall be then performed, are circumstances not determined in Scripture, but only by general rules; as to these then, so they be done in conformity to those rules, they are subject to human positive determinations. But this is not an *hypothesis* in the age we live in to be taken for granted with-

out proving it: some denying the magistrate any power at all in matters of religion; others granting a defensive, protective power of that religion which is professed according to the laws of Christ, but denying any determining power in the magistrate concerning things left undetermined by the Scripture. This *hypothesis* then hath landed me into a field of controversy, wherein I shall not so much strive to make my way through any opposite party, as endeavour to beget a right understanding between the adverse parties, in order to a mutual compliance; which I shall the rather do, because if any controversy hath been an increaser and foment of heartburnings and divisions among us, it hath been about the determination of indifferent things. And, which seems strange, the things men can least bear with one another in, are matters of *liberty*: and those things men have divided most upon, have been matters of *uniformity*, and wherein they have differed most, have been pretended things of *indifference*. In order then, to laying a foundation for peace and union, I shall calmly debate what power the magistrate hath in matters of religion, and how far that power doth extend in determining things left undetermined by the word. For the clear understanding the first of these, we shall make our passage open to it by the laying down several necessary distinctions about it, the want of considering which hath been the ground of the great confusion in the handling of this controversy. First, then, we must distinguish between a power *respecting religion in itself*, and a power *concerning religion as it is the public, owned and professed religion of a nation*. For although the magistrate hath no proper power over religion, in itself, either taking it *abstractly* for the rule of worship, or *concretely* for the internal acts of worship; for he can neither add to that rule, nor dissolve the obligation of it; nor yet can he force the consciences of men, (the chief seat of religion,) it being both contrary to the nature of religion itself, which is a matter of the greatest freedom and internal liberty, and it being quite out of the reach of the magistrate's laws, which respect only external actions as their proper object; for the obligation of any law can extend no further than the jurisdiction and authority of the legislator, which among men is only to the outward actions. But then, if we consider religion as it is publicly owned and professed by a nation, the supreme magistrate is bound by virtue of his office and authority, not only to defend and protect it, but to restrain men from acting anything publicly tending to the subversion of it. So that the

plea for liberty of conscience, as it tends to restrain the magistrate's power, is both irrational and impertinent; because liberty of conscience is the liberty of men's judgments, which the magistrate cannot deprive them of. For men may hold what opinions they will in their minds, the law takes no cognizance of them: but it is the liberty of practice in venting and broaching those opinions which the magistrate's power extends to the restraint of. And he that hath the care of the public good, may give liberty to, and restrain liberty from men, as they act in order to the promoting of that good; and as a liberty of all opinions tends manifestly to the subverting a nation's peace, and to the embroiling it into continual confusions, a magistrate cannot discharge his office unless he hath power to restrain such a liberty. Therefore we find plainly in Scripture that God imputes the increase and impunity of idolatry as well as other vices, to the want of a lawful magistracy, *Judges* xvii. 5, 6, where the account given of *Micah's* idolatry was, because there was no king in Israel; which implies it to be the care and duty of magistrates to punish and restrain whatever tends to the opposing and subverting the true religion. Besides, I cannot find any reason pleaded against the magistrate's power now, which would not have held under *David*, *Solomon*, *Asa*, *Jehosophat*, *Hezekias*, *Josias*, or other kings of the Jews, who asserted the public profession, to the extirpation of what opposed it. For the plea of conscience (taken for men's judgments going contrary to what is publicly owned as religion) it is indifferently calculated for all meridians, and will serve for a religion of any elevation. Nay, stiff and contumacious infidels or idolaters may plead as highly (though not so truly) as any, that it goes against their judgments or their conscience to own that religion which is established by authority. If it be lawful then to restrain such notwithstanding this pretence, why not others, whose doctrine and principles the magistrate judgeth to tend in their degree (though not so highly) to the dishonouring God, and subverting the profession entertained in a nation? For, a man's own certainty and confidence that he is in the right, can have no influence upon the magistrate judging otherwise; only if it be true, it will afford him the greater comfort and patience under his restraint; which was the case of the primitive Christians under persecutions: the magistrate then is bound to defend, protect, and maintain the religion he owns as true, and that by virtue of his office, as he is *Custos utriusque tabulæ*, "the guardian of either table." The



maintainer of the honour of God's laws, which cannot be if he suffer those of the first table to be broken without any notice taken of them. Were it not for this power of magistrates under the gospel, how could that promise ever be made good, that *kings shall be nursing fathers to the church of God*,<sup>1</sup> unless they mean such nursing fathers as *Astyages* was to *Cyrus*, or *Amulius* to *Romulus* and *Remus*, who exposed their nurslings to the fury of wild beasts to be devoured by them. For so must a magistrate do the church, unless he secure it from the incursion of heretics, and the inundation of seducers. But so much for that which is more largely asserted and proved by others. The magistrate then hath power concerning religion, as owned in a nation.

Secondly, We must distinguish between an *external* and *objective* power, about matters of religion; and an *internal formal* power, which some<sup>2</sup> call an imperative and elicitive power, others a power of order, and a power of jurisdiction, others *potestas ecclesiastica*, and *potestas circa ecclesiastica*, "the ecclesiastic power, or power relative to ecclesiastical affairs," or in the old distinction of *Constantine*, τῶν ἐκτὸς καὶ τῶν ἐσω τῆς ἐκκλησίας, "a power of things within and without the church," the sense of all is the same, though the terms differ. The internal, formal, elicitive power of order, concerning things in the church, lies in authoritative exercise of the ministerial function, in preaching the word, and administration of sacraments; but the external, objective, imperative power of jurisdiction, concerning the matters of the church, lies in a due care and provision, for the defence, protection, and propagation of religion. The former is only proper to the ministry, the latter to the supreme magistracy; for, though the magistrate hath so much power about religion, yet he is not to usurp the ministerial function, nor to do any proper acts belonging to it. To which the instance of *Uzzias* is pertinently applied. But then this takes nothing off from the magistrate's power; for it belongs not to the magistrate *imperata facere*, but *imperare facienda*, as *Grotius*<sup>3</sup> truly observes, not to do the things commanded, but to command the things to be done. From this distinction we may easily understand, and resolve that so much vexed and intricate question, concerning the mutual subordination of the civil and ecclesiastical power. For, as *Peter Martyr*<sup>4</sup> well ob-

<sup>1</sup> Isa. xlix. 23.

<sup>2</sup> Euseb. vit. Constant. l. 4, c. 24.

<sup>3</sup> De Imp. sum. potest. cap. 2, l. 1.

<sup>4</sup> In Jud. c. 19.



serves, these two powers are some ways ἀντιστοιχαί, “reciprocal,” are conversant several ways about the same thing; but the functions of both of them must be distinguished. For the pastors of the church are not to administer justice, but it is their duty to declare how justice should be rightly administered, without partiality or oppression. So, on the other side, the magistrate must not preach the gospel, nor administer sacraments; but, however, must take care that these be duly done by those to whose function it belongs. But for a clearer making it appear, these things are to be considered, both in a magistrate, and minister of the gospel. In a magistrate the *power itself*, and the *person bearing that power*. The power itself of the magistrate is no ways subordinate to the power of the ministry. Indeed, if we consider both powers, in reference to their objects, and ends, there may be an *inferiority of dignity*, as *Chamier* calls it, in the civil power to the other, considered *abstractly*; but considering it *concretely*, as lodged in the persons, there is an *inferiority of subjection* in the ecclesiastical to the civil. But still the person of the magistrate, though he is not subject to the power of the ministers, yet both as a Christian, and as a magistrate, he is subject to the word of God, and is to be guided by that in the administration of his function. So on the other side, in a minister of the gospel, there are these things considerable; the object of his function, the function itself, the liberty of exercising it, and the person who doth exercise it. As for the *object of this function*, the word and sacraments, these are not subject to the civil power, being settled by a law of Christ; but then for the *function itself*, that may be considered, either in the *derivation* of it, or in the *administration* of it. As for the derivation of the power and authority of the function, that is from Christ, who hath settled and provided by law, that there shall be such a standing function to the end of the world, with such authority belonging to it. But for the administration of the function, two things belong to the magistrate. *First*, to provide and take care for *due administration* of it; and to see that the ministers preach the true doctrine, though he cannot lawfully forbid the true doctrine to be taught; and that they duly administer the sacraments, though he cannot command them to administer them otherwise than Christ hath delivered them down to us. This for due administration. *Secondly*, in case of *mal-administration* of his function, or scandal rendering him unfit for it, it is in the magistrate’s power, if not formally

to depose, yet to deprive them of the liberty of ever exercising their function within his dominions; as *Solomon* did *Abiathar*, and *Justinian Sylverius*, as *Constantius* did *Vigilus*. For the liberty to exercise the function is in the magistrate's power, though a right to exercise it be derived from the same power from which the authority belonging to the function was conveyed. And then lastly, as to *the persons exercising* this function, it is evident, as they are members of a civil society as well as others, so they are subject to the same civil laws as others are. Which as it is expressly affirmed by *Chrysostom*,<sup>1</sup> on Rom. xiii. 1. *Let every soul be subject to the higher powers*; that is, saith he, *καὶ ἀπόστολος ἢ καὶ εὐαγγελιστής, καὶ προφήτης, καὶ ὅπου, "Be he an apostle, evangelist, prophet, be he who he will."* So it is fully, largely, irrefragably proved by our writers against the papists; especially by the learned *Is. Casaubon* in his piece *de libertate Ecclesiasticâ*. So then we see what a fair, amicable, and mutual aspect these two powers have one upon another, when rightly understood, being far from clashing one with the other; either by a subjection of the civil power to the ecclesiastical, or the civil powers swallowing up and devouring the peculiarity of the ministerial function. And upon these grounds, I suppose, *Beza* and *Erastus* may, as to this, shake hands; so that the magistrate do not usurp the ministerial function, which *Videli*<sup>2</sup> calls *papatus politicus*, "the political papacy;" nor the ministers subject the civil power to them, which is *papatus ecclesiasticus*, "the ecclesiastical papacy."

§ 7. *Thirdly*, we distinguish between an *absolute architectonical* and *nomothetical power*, independent upon any other law, and a *legislative power*, *absolute* as to *persons*, but *regulated* by a *higher law*. The former we attribute to none but God; the latter belongs to a supreme magistrate, in reference to things belonging to his power, either in church or commonwealth. By an architectonical, nomothetical power, we mean that power which is distinguished from that which is properly called political.<sup>3</sup> The former lies in the making laws for the good of the commonwealth; the latter in a due execution and administration of those laws for the common good. This we have asserted as to the magistrate already: we now come to assert the other; where we shall first set down

<sup>1</sup> In loc. tom. 3. Ed. Æton. p. 189. Ed. 1607.

<sup>2</sup> De Episcop. Const. Magn.

<sup>3</sup> Aristot. Ethic. lib. 6, c. 6.

the bounds of this power, and then see to whom it belongs. *First*, then, we say not, that the magistrate hath a power to revoke, repeal, or alter any divine positive law; which we have already shown. *Secondly*, we say not, that the magistrate by his own will may constitute what new laws he please for the worship of God. This was the fault of *Jeroboam* who made *Israel* to sin, and therefore by the rule of reason must be supposed to sin more himself; so likewise *Ahab*, *Ahaz*, and others. Religion is a thing settled by a divine law; and as it is taken for the doctrine and worship of God, so it is contained in the word of God, and must be fetched wholly from thence. But then *thirdly*, the magistrate by his power, may make that which is a divine law already, become the law of the land. Thus religion may be incorporated among our laws, and the Bible become our *magna charta*. So the first law in the *codex Theod.* is about the believing the Trinity, and many others about religion are inserted into it. Now as to these things clearly revealed in the word of God, and withal commanded by the civil magistrate, although the *primary obligation* to the doing them, is from the former determination by a divine law; yet the sanction of them by the civil magistrate, may cause a *further obligation* upon conscience than was before, and may add punishments and rewards not expressed before. For although when two laws are contrary the one to the other, the obligation to the higher law takes away the obligation to the other; yet when they are of the same nature, or subordinate one to the other, there may a new obligation arise from the same law, enacted by a new authority. As the commands of the decalogue brought a new obligation upon the consciences of the Jews, though the things contained in them, were commanded before in the law of nature: And as a vow made by a man, adds a new tie to his conscience, when the matter of his vow is the same with what the word of God commands; and renewing our covenant with God after baptism, renews our obligation: so when the faith of the gospel becomes the law of a nation, men are bound by a double cord of duty to entertain and profess that faith. *Fourthly*, in matters undetermined by the word, concerning the external polity of the church of God, the magistrate hath the power of determining things, so they be agreeable to the word of God. This last clause is that which binds the magistrate's power, that it is not absolutely architectonical, because all his laws must be regulated by the general rules of the divine law. But though it be not as to

laws, yet I say it is as to persons; that is, that no other persons have any power to make laws, binding men to obedience, but only the civil magistrate. This is another part of the controversy between the civil and ecclesiastical power, about the power of determining matters belonging to the church's government: but there is here no such breach between those two, but what may be made up with a distinction or two. We distinguish then between a *power declarative*, of the obligation of former laws, and a *power authoritative*, determining a new obligation; between the *office of counselling and advising* what is *fit to be done*, and a *power determining what shall be done*; between the magistrate's *duty of consulting*, in order to the doing it, and his *deriving* his *authority* for the doing it. These things premised, I say: *First*, that the power of declaring the obligation of former laws, and of consulting and advising the magistrate for settling of new laws, for the policy of the church, belongs to the pastors and governors of the church of God. This belongs to them, *as they are commanded to teach what Christ hath commanded them*,<sup>1</sup> but no authority thereby given to make new laws to bind the church; but rather a tying them up to the commands of Christ already laid down in his word. For a power to bind men's consciences to their determinations, lodged in the officers of the church, must be derived either from a law of God giving them this right, or else only from the consent of parties. As to any law of God, there is none produced with any probability of reason, but that, *Obey those that are over you in the Lord*.<sup>2</sup> But that implies no more than submitting to the doctrine and discipline of the gospel, and to those whom Christ hath constituted as pastors of his church, wherein the law of Christ doth require obedience to them, that is, in looking upon them, and owning them in their relation to them as pastors. But that gives them no authority to make any new laws or constitutions, binding men's consciences any more than a command from the supreme authority that inferior magistrates should be obeyed, doth imply any power in them to make new laws to bind them. But thus far I acknowledge a binding power in ecclesiastical constitutions, though they neither bind by virtue of the matter, nor of the authority commanding, (there being no legislative power lodged in the church,) yet in respect of the circumstances and the end, they should be obeyed, unless I judge the thing unlawful that is com-

<sup>1</sup> Matth. xviii. 18.<sup>2</sup> Heb. xiii. 17.



manded, rather than manifest open contempt of the pastors of the church, or being a scandal to others by it.<sup>1</sup> But as to the other power, arising from mutual compact and consent of parties, I acknowledge a power to bind all included under that compact, not by virtue of any supreme binding power in them, but from the free consent of the parties submitting; which is most agreeable to the nature of church power, being not co-active but directive; and such was the confederate discipline of the primitive church, before they had any Christian magistrate: and thence the decrees of councils were called *canons*,<sup>2</sup> and not laws.

*Secondly*, Though it be the magistrate's duty to consult with the pastors of the church, to know what is most agreeable to the word of God, for the settlement of the church; yet the magistrate doth not derive his authority in commanding things from their sentence, decree, and judgment; but doth by virtue of his own power cause the obligation of men to what is so determined, by his own enacting what shall be done in the church. The great use of synods, and assemblies of pastors of churches, is to be as the council of the church unto the king, in matters belonging to the church, as the parliament is for matters of civil concernment. And as the king, for the settling of civil laws, doth take advice of such persons who are most versed in matters of law; so by proportion of reason, in matters concerning the church, they are the fittest council, who have been the most versed in matters immediately belonging to the church: in the management of which affairs, as much, if not more prudence, experience, judgment, moderation, is requisite, than in the greatest affairs of state. For we have found by doleful experience, that if a fire once catch the church, and Aaron's bells ring backward, what a combustion the whole state is suddenly put into, and how hardly the church's instruments for quenching such fires, *lachrymæ et preces Ecclesiæ*, "the tears and prayers of the church," do attain their end. The least peg screwed up too high in the church soon causeth a great deal of discord in the state, and quickly puts men's spirits out of tune. Whereas many irregularities may happen in the state, and men live in quietness and peace. But if phætons drive the chariot of the sun, the world will be soon on fire. I mean such in the church whose brains, like the unicorn's, run out into the length of the horn;

<sup>1</sup> V. Pety, Martyr. in 1 Sam. 14. Whitaker, cont. 4, q. 7. Cameron. de Eccles. p. 386, tom. 1 op.

<sup>2</sup> Rules.

such who have more fury than zeal, and yet more zeal than knowledge or moderation. Persons, therefore, whose calling, temper, office, and experience hath best acquainted them with the state actions, policy of the primitive church, and the incomparable prudence and moderation then used, are fittest to debate, consult, deliberate, and determine about the safest expedients for repairing breaches in a divided, broken, distracted church. But yet, I say, when such men thus assembled have gravely and maturely advised and deliberated what is best and most fit to be done, the force, strength, and obligation of the things so determined doth depend upon the power and authority of the civil magistrate: for taking the church as incorporated into the civil state, as *Ecclesia est in republicâ, non respublica in ecclesia*, "the church is in the commonwealth, not the commonwealth in the church," according to that known speech of *Optatus Milivitanus*;<sup>1</sup> so, though the object of these constitutions, and the persons determining them, and the matter of them be ecclesiastical, yet the force and ground of the obligation of them is wholly civil. So *Peter Martyr* expressly;<sup>2</sup> "For what pertains to the ecclesiastic power, efficiently belongs to the civil magistrate; for he ought to take care that all discharge their duty." (But for the judgment of the reformed Divines about this, see *Vedelius de Episcopatu Constant. M— and officium magistratus christiani*, "the duty of the Christian magistrate," annexed to *Grotius de Imper. &c.*) I therefore proceed to lay down the reason of it. *First*, That whereby we are bound either to obedience, or penalty upon disobedience, is the ground of the obligation; but it is upon the account of the magistrate's power that we are either bound to obedience, or to submit to penalties upon disobedience. For it is upon the account of our general obligation to the magistrate, that we are bound to obey any particular laws or constitutions. Because it is not the particular determinations made by the civil magistrate, which do immediately bind conscience, but the general law of scripture requires it as a duty from us, to obey the magistrate in all things lawful. Obedience to the magistrate is due immediately from conscience; but obedience to the laws of the magistrate comes not directly from conscience but by virtue of the general obligation. And therefore disobedience to the

<sup>1</sup> Lib. 2, c. Parmen.

<sup>2</sup> Nam, quod ad potestatem ecclesiasticam attinet, satis est civilis magistratus: is enim curare debet ut omnes officium faciant.—In 1 Sam. viii. Loc. Com. Class. 4, c. 5, sect. 11.

magistrate's laws is an immediate sin against conscience, because it is against the general obligation; but obedience to particular laws ariseth not immediately from the obligation of conscience to them in particular, but to the magistrate in general. So that in things left lawful and undetermined by the word, where there ariseth no obligation from the matter, it must arise from our subjection and relation to the magistrate; and what is the ground of obedience, is the cause of the obligation. *Secondly*, He hath only the power of obligations who hath the power of making sanctions to those laws. By sanctions, I mean here, in the sense of the civil law,<sup>1</sup> "those parts of the law which determine the punishments of the violaters of it." Now it is evident that he only hath power to oblige who hath power to punish upon disobedience. And it is as evident that none hath power to punish but the civil magistrate; I speak of legal penalties which are annexed to such laws as concern the church. Now there being no coercive or coercive power belonging to the church as such, all the force of such laws as respect the outward polity of the church, must be derived from the civil magistrate. *Thirdly*, He who can null and declare all other obligations void, done without his power, hath the only power to oblige. For whatsoever destroys a former obligation, must of necessity imply a power to oblige, because I am bound to obey him in the abstaining from that I was formerly obliged to: but this power belongs to the magistrate. For suppose, in some indifferent rites and ceremonies, the church representative, that is, the governors of it *pro tempore*, do prescribe them to be observed by all, the supreme power forbids the doing of those things, if this doth not null the former supposed obligation, I must inevitably run upon these absurdities. First, that there are two supreme powers in a nation at the same time. Secondly, that a man may lie under two different obligations as to the same thing; he is bound to do it by one power, and not to do it by the other. Thirdly, the same action may be a duty and a sin; a duty in obeying the one power, a sin in disobeying the other. Therefore there can be but one power to oblige, which is that of the supreme magistrate.

- § 8. Having thus far asserted the magistrate's due power and authority, as to matters of religion; we proceed to exam-

<sup>1</sup> *Eas legum partes, quibus pœnas constituimus adversus eos qui contra leges fecerint.*—Papin. l. 41, D. de pœnis Hottoman, Com. v. juris v. sanct. Cicero ad Artic. l. 3, ep. 23.

ine the extent of this power, in determining things left at liberty by the word of God, in order to the peace and government of the church. For our clear and distinct proceeding, I shall ascend by these three steps: First, to show that there are some things left undetermined by the word. Secondly, that these things are capable of positive determinations and restraint. Thirdly, that there are some bounds and limits to be observed in the stating and determining these things. *First*, that there are some things left undetermined by the word: by determining here, I do not mean determining whether things be *lawful* or not; for so there is no rite or ceremony whatsoever, but is determined by the Scripture in that sense, or may be gathered from the application of particular actions, to the general rules of Scripture: but by determining, I mean, whether all things concerning the church's polity and order be determined as *duties* or not: *viz.* that this we are bound to observe, and the other not. As for instance, what time, manner, method, gesture, habit, be used in preaching the word; whether baptism must be by dipping or sprinkling; at what day, time, place, the child shall be baptized, and other things of a like nature with these. Those who assert any of these as duties, must produce necessarily the command making them to be so: for duty and command have a necessary respect and relation to one another. If no command be brought, it necessarily follows, that they are left at liberty. So as to the Lord's supper *Calvin* saith, whether the communicants take the bread themselves, or receive it being given them; whether they should give the cup into the hands of the deacon, or to their next neighbour; whether the bread be leavened or not, the wine red or white, *nihil refert*, it matters not;<sup>1</sup> *Hæc indifferentiæ sunt et in ecclesia libertate posita*; "*they are matters of indifference and are left to the church's liberty.*" But this matter of indifference is not yet so clear as it is generally thought to be; we shall therefore bare the ground a little by some necessary distinctions to see where the root of indifference lies: which we shall the rather do, because it is strongly asserted by an honourable person, that there is no indifference in the things themselves, which are still either unlawful or necessary, (if lawful at this time, in these circumstances,) but all indifference lies in the darkness and shortness of our understandings, which may make some things seem so to us.<sup>2</sup> But that

<sup>1</sup> Institut. l. 4, cap. 17, s. 43, et cap. 15, s. 19.

<sup>2</sup> Nature of Episc. chap. 5.



honourable person clearly runs upon a double mistake. First, that indifferency is a *medium participationis* of both extremes, and not only *negationis*, viz. that, as intermediate colours partake both of black and white, and yet are neither; so in morality, between good and bad, there is an intermediate entity, which is neither, but indifferent to either: whereas the nature of indifferency lies not in anything intermediate between good and bad; but in something undetermined by divine laws, as to the necessity of it; so that if we speak as to the extremes of it, it is something lying between a necessary duty, and an intrinsical evil. The other mistake is, that throughout that discourse he takes indifferency as circumstantiated in individual actions, and as the morality of the action is determined by its circumstances; whereas the proper notion of indifferency lies in the nature of the action, considered in itself abstractly; and so these things are implied in an indifferent action. First, absolute undetermination, as to the general nature of the act by a divine law, that God hath left it free for men to do it or not. Secondly, that one part hath not more propension to the rule than the other; for if the doing of it comes nearer to the rule than the omission; or on the contrary, this action is not wholly indifferent. Thirdly, that neither part hath any repugnancy to the rule; for that which hath so, is so far from being indifferent, that it becomes unlawful: so that an indifferent action is therein like the iron accosted by two loadstones on either side of equal virtue, and so hovers *in medio*, inclining to neither; but, supposing any degree of virtue added to the one above the other, it then inclines towards it: or as the magnetical *needle* about the *Azores*, keeps itself directly parallel to the *axis* of the world without variation, because it is supposed then to be at an equal distance from the two great magnets, the continents of *Europe* and *America*: but no sooner is it removed from thence, but it hath its variations. So indifferency, taken *in specie*, as to the nature of the act, inclines neither way; but supposing it lie under positive determinations, either by laws or circumstances, it then necessarily inclines either to the nature of good or evil.

Neither yet are we come to a full understanding of the nature of indifferent actions; we must therefore distinguish between indifferency, as to goodness, *necessitating* an action *to be done*, and as to goodness, *necessary* to an action *to make it good*: For there is one kind of goodness *propter quam fit actio*, in order to which the action must necessarily be done,

and there is another kind of goodness *sine quâ non benè fit actio*, "without which the action is not done well," necessary to make an action good when it is done. As following after peace hath such a goodness in it, as necessitates the action, and makes it a necessary duty: but handling a particular controversy is such an action as a man may let alone without sin in his course of studies; yet when he doth it, there is a goodness necessary to make his doing it a good action, *viz.* his referring his study of it to a right end, for the obtaining of truth and peace. This latter goodness is twofold, either *bonitas directionis*, "the goodness or integrity of the intention," as some call it, which is, referring the action to its true end; in reference to which, the great controversy among the schoolmen, is about the indifferency of particular actions, *viz.* whether a particular direction of a man's intention to the ultimate end, be not so necessary to particular actions, as that, without which the action is of necessity evil, and with it good; or whether without that, an action may be indifferent to good or evil,<sup>1</sup> which is the state of the question between *Thomas* and *Scotus*, *Bonaventure* and *Durandus*; but we assert the necessity of at least an habitual direction, to make the action *in individuo*, "as a whole," good; and yet the act in itself may notwithstanding be indifferent, even *in individuo*, as there is no antecedent necessity lying upon men's consciences for the doing of it; because men may omit it, and break no law of God. Besides this, to make an action good, there is necessary a *bonitas originis*, or rather *principii*, "a good principle," out of which the action must flow; which must be that faith, which whatsoever is not of, is sin, as the apostle tells us.<sup>2</sup> Which we must not so understand, as though in every action a man goes about, he must have a full persuasion that it is a necessary duty he goes about; but in many actions that faith is sufficient, whereby he is persuaded upon good ground, that the thing he goes about is lawful; although he may as lawfully omit that action, and do either another, or the contrary to it. There may be then the necessity of some things in an action when it is done to make it good, and yet the action itself be no ways necessary, but indifferent, and a matter of liberty. This may be easily understood by what is usually said of God's particular actions, that God is free in himself either to do or not to do that action, (as suppose the creation of the world,) but when he doth it, he must necessarily do it with

<sup>1</sup> V. Forbes. Iren. lib. I. cap. 13.<sup>2</sup> Rom. xiv. 23.

that goodness, holiness, and wisdom, which is suitable to his nature: So may many actions of men be in themselves indifferent, and yet there must be a concomitant necessity of good intention and principle to make the action good. But this concomitant necessity doth not destroy the radical indifference of the action itself; it is only an antecedent necessity from the obligation of the law, that destroys indifference. So likewise it is as to evil; there is such an evil in an action, which not only spoils the action, but hinders the person from the liberty of doing it, that is, in all such actions as are intrinsically evil; and there is such a kind of evil in actions, which though it spoils the goodness of the action, yet keeps not from performance; which is such as ariseth from the manner of performance, as praying in hypocrisy, &c., doing a thing lawful with a scrupulous or erring conscience. We see then what good and evil is consistent with indifference in actions, and what is not. And that the nature of actions, even *in individuo*, "as a whole, or in its general character," may be indifferent, when as to their circumstances they may be necessarily determined to be either good or evil. As marrying, or not marrying, as to the law of God, is left at liberty, not making it in itself a necessary duty, one way or other; but, supposing particular circumstances make it necessary, *pro hâc et nunc*, "as to place and time," yet the nature of it remains indifferent still; and supposing marriage is necessary, it should be in the Lord, and yet it is not necessary to make choice of this person rather than of that, so that not only the absolute indifference of the action is consistent with this concomitant necessity, but the full liberty, both of *contradiction* and *contrariety*.<sup>1</sup> Again, we must distinguish between an *indifference*, as to its *nature* and *indifference*, as to its *use and end*; or between an indifference as to a *law*, and indifference as to *order and peace*: Here I say, that in things wholly indifferent in both respects, that is, in a thing neither commanded nor forbidden by God, nor that hath any apparent respect to the peace and order of the church of God, there can be no rational account given, why the nature of such indifferences should be altered by any human laws and constitutions. But matters that are only indifferent as to a command, but are much conducing to the peace and order of a church, such things as these, are the proper matter of human constitutions concerning the church's polity: Or rather, to keep to the words

<sup>1</sup> This is an allusion to the logical distinction of *contradictories* and *contraries*.

of the *hypothesis* itself, where any things are determined in general by the word of God, but left 'at liberty as to manner and circumstances, it is in the power of lawful authority in the church of God to determine such things, as far as they tend to the promoting the good of the church.

§ 9. And so I rise to the second step, which is, that matters of this nature may be determined and restrained. Or, that there is no necessity, that all matters of liberty should remain in their primary indifferency. This I know is asserted by some of great note and learning; that in things which God hath left to our Christian liberty, man may not restrain us of it, by subjecting those things to positive laws; but I come to examine, with what strength of reason this is said, that so we may see, whether men may not yield in some lawful things to a restraint of their Christian liberty, in order to the peace of the church of God: which I now prove by these arguments. *First*, what may be lawfully done when it is commanded, may be so far lawfully commanded, as it is a thing in itself lawful; but matters of Christian liberty may be lawfully done when they are commanded to be done, though it were lawful not to do them before that command. The truth of the proposition appears, because lawful authority may command anything that may be lawfully done. Because nothing can exempt from obedience to a lawful magistrate, but the unlawfulness of the thing commanded; and therefore nothing can debar the magistrate from commanding these things; for nothing can hinder him from commanding, but what may hinder the subject from obedience. I grant in many cases it may be lawful to obey, when it is very inconvenient for the magistrate to command: but inconvenience and unlawfulness are two things; nay, and in some cases a man may lawfully obey when he is unlawfully commanded; but then the matter of the command itself is unlawful. As in executing an unjust sentence, granting that a prince's servants may lawfully do it, especially when they know it not; yet in that case, the ground of their lawful obedience, is the ground of the magistrate's lawful command, which is the supposed justice of the execution. But that which makes the magistrate's command unlawful is the intrinsical evil of the thing itself. So for unlawful wars, though the subjects may lawfully obey, yet the prince sins in commanding, not but that he hath right to command so far as they are bound to obey, which is only in things lawful: but that which in this case alters the matter, is, the prince's knowing his cause to be unjust. So that the proposition holds in things not manifestly unjust. But



however this be, it is hereby granted, that the things may be lawfully done, when they are restrained by the magistrate's command: and by that it appears, that liberty may be restrained, else it could not be lawful to act under that restraint, not as it respects the things themselves, but under that formality, as they are the restraint of that which ought to be left free. The restraint however then is lawful, as to the persons acting under authority, who are the subjects of this liberty, though it were granted unlawful as to the authority doing it. Which former is sufficient for my purpose, *viz.* that Christian liberty, as to the subjects of it, may be lawfully restrained. *Secondly*, a less duty ceaseth to be a duty, when it hinders from the performance of greater; but the preserving Christian liberty is a less duty, which may hinder the peace of the church, which is a greater; therefore in that case it may be restrained. The *major* is granted by divines and casuists; when duties stand in competition, the less ceaseth to bind, as is evident, in that God will have mercy rather than sacrifice. Positives yield to morals and naturals. Thence the obligation of an oath ceaseth, when it hinders from a natural duty; as the *Corban* among the Jews from relief of parents. And therefore *Grotius*<sup>1</sup> saith, that an oath taken concerning a thing lawful, if it doth hinder *majus bonum morale*, "the greater moral good," the obligation of that oath ceaseth. Now that preserving liberty is a less duty than the looking after the peace of the church, is evident, because the one is only a matter of liberty, and left undetermined by the word; and the other a matter of necessity, and absolutely and expressly required of all, as a duty as much as possibly lies in them to endeavour after. *Thirdly*, if an occasional offence of weaker brethren may be a ground for restraining Christian liberty, then much more may commands from lawful authority do it; but the offence of weaker brethren may restrain Christian liberty as to the exercise of it, as appears by the apostle's discourse, *Rom. xiv. 21*. The reason of the consequence lies here, that a case of mere offence, which is here pleaded towards weak brethren, cannot have that obligation upon conscience, which a known duty of obeying lawful authority, in things in themselves lawful, hath. Nay further, insisting only on the law of scandal, I would fain know, whether it be a greater offence and scandal to Christians' consciences, to infringe the lawful authority of the magistrate, and to deny obedience to his commands, in things un-

<sup>1</sup> Grot. de jure belli & pacis. lib. 2, cap. 13, sect. 7.

determined by the law of God; or else to offend the consciences, that is, go against the judgments of the well-meaning, but less-knowing Christians. Or thus, whether in the matter of scandal, it be a greater offence to go against the judgments of the weaker and more ignorant, or the more knowing and able; when the one have only their own weak apprehension to bias them, the other are backed by and grounded upon an established law. And whether it be not a greater scandal to religion to disobey a Christian magistrate, than it is to offend some private Christians. Let these things be examined, and then let us see whether the argument will not hold *à majori*; if the law of scandal as to private Christians may restrain liberty, then may a command from the magistrate do it. *Fourthly*, I argue thus, if the nature of Christian liberty may be preserved under the restraint of the exercise of it, then it is not against the nature of Christian liberty to have the exercise restrained; but the former is true; and therefore the latter. Now that the nature of Christian liberty may be preserved under the restraint of its exercise, I prove by these arguments.

§ 10. *First*, Because the nature of Christian liberty is founded upon the freedom of judgment, and not the freedom of practice. The case is the same in moral and natural liberty as in Christian. Now we say truly, that the radical liberty of the soul is preserved, though it be determined to a particular action. For the liberty of the will lying in the *power* of determining itself either way, (as it is generally thought,) the actual determination of the will doth not take away the internal power in the soul; and in that respect there may be a *potentia faciendi* where there is not *possibilitas effectûs*, "a power of doing when there is no possibility the thing should be done;" when the event is otherwise determined by a divine decree, as in breaking the bones of Christ upon the cross. So it is in reference to Christian liberty; though the exercise of it be restrained, yet the liberty remains: because Christian liberty lies in the freedom of judgment; *that is*, in judging those things to be free which are so; so that if anything, in itself free, be done by a man with an opinion of the necessity of doing it antecedent to the law commanding it, or without any law prescribing it, thereby his Christian liberty is destroyed; but if it be done with an opinion of the freedom and indifferency of the thing itself, but only with a consequential necessity of doing it, supposing the magistrate's command, he retains the power of his Christian liberty still, though under the restraint

in the exercise of it. And therefore it would be well observed, that the opinion of the necessity of any one thing undetermined by Scripture, destroys Christian liberty more than a magistrate's command doth. And by this reason, they that hold any one posture at receiving the Lord's supper necessary, (as sitting, leaning, kneeling,) do all equally destroy their own Christian liberty as to these things which are undetermined by the word. So a magistrate when commanding matters of Christian liberty, if in the preface to the law he declares the thing necessary to be done in itself, and therefore he commands it, he takes away as much as in him lies our Christian liberty. And in that case we ought to hold to that excellent rule of the apostle, "*Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath set you free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage.*"<sup>1</sup> But if the magistrate declare the things to be in themselves indifferent, but only upon some prudent considerations for peace and order, he requires persons to observe them, though this brings a necessity of obedience to us, yet it takes not away our Christian liberty. For an antecedent necessity expressed in the law, (as a learned and excellent casuist<sup>2</sup> of our own observes,) doth not necessarily require the assent of the practical judgment to it; which takes away our liberty of judgment, or our judgment of the liberty of the things; but a consequential necessity upon a command supposed, doth only imply an act of the will, whereby the freedom of judgment and conscience remaining, it is inclined to obedience to the commands of a superior law. Now that liberty doth lie in the freedom of judgment, and not in the freedom of practice, and so is consistent with the restraint of the exercise of it, appears both in the former case of scandal, and in the actions of the apostles and primitive Christians complying with the Jews in matters of liberty; yea, which is a great deal more, in such ceremonies of which the apostle expressly saith, that if they observed them, Christ would profit them nothing;<sup>3</sup> and yet we find Paul himself circumcising Timothy,<sup>4</sup> because of the Jews. Certainly then however these ceremonies are supposed to be not only *mortuæ*, "dead," but *mortiferæ*, "death working," now the gospel was preached, and the law of Christian liberty promulged; yet *Paul* did not look upon it, as the taking away his liberty, at any time when it would prevent scandal among the Jews, and tend to the furtherance of the

<sup>1</sup> Gal. v. 1.<sup>3</sup> Gal. v. 2.<sup>2</sup> D. Sanderson, de oblig. cons. præl. 6, s. 5.<sup>4</sup> Acts xvi. 3.

gospel, to use any of them. It was therefore the opinion of the necessity of them which destroyed Christian liberty; and therefore it is observable, that where the opinion of the necessity of observing the Judaical rites and ceremonies was entertained, the apostle sets himself with his whole strength to oppose them, as he doth in his epistles to the *Galatians* and *Colossians*.<sup>1</sup> Whom yet we find in other places, and to other churches, not leavened with this doctrine of the necessity of Judaical rites, very ready to comply with weak brethren, as in his epistles to the *Romans* and *Corinthians*.<sup>2</sup> From which we plainly see, that it was not the bare doing of the things, but the doing them with an opinion of the necessity of them, is that which infringes on Christian liberty, and not the determination of one part above the other by the supreme magistrate, when it is declared not to be for any opinion of the things themselves as necessary, but to be only in order to the church's peace and unity. *Secondly*, It appears that liberty is consistent with the restraint of the exercise of it; because the very power of restraining the exercise of it, doth suppose it to be a matter of liberty, and that both antecedently and consequentially to that restraint. *Antecedently*, so it is apparent to be a matter of liberty, else it was not capable of being restrained. *Consequentially*, in that the ground of observance of those things when restrained, is not any necessity of the matter, or the things themselves; but only the necessity of obeying the magistrate in things lawful and undetermined by the word: which leads to another argument. *Thirdly*, men's obligation to these things, as to the ground of it, being only in point of contempt and scandal argues that the things are matter of liberty still. I grant the magistrate's authority is the ground of obedience, but the ground of the magistrate's command is only in point of contempt and scandal, and for preserving order in the church. For I have already shown it to be unlawful, either to command or obey, in reference to these things, from any opinion of the necessity of them, and therefore the only ground of observing them, is to show that we are not guilty of contempt of the power commanding them, nor of scandal to others that are offended at our not observing them. *Tota igitur religio est in fugiendo scandalo et vitando contemptu*, saith our learned *Whitaker*.<sup>3</sup> "All our ground of obedience is the

<sup>1</sup> Gal. iv. 9, 10, 11; Coloss. ii. 16, 18, 19.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. xiv. 3, 6, 21; 1 Cor. x. 24.

<sup>3</sup> Contrav. 4, quest. 7, cap. 2.



avoiding scandal and contempt of authority." To the same purpose *Peter Martyr*, speaking of the obligation of ecclesiastical laws:<sup>1</sup> *Non obstringunt si removeantur contemptus et scandalum*: "They involve not guilt, if contempt and scandal be removed." So that non-observance of indifferent things commanded, when there is no apparent contempt or scandal, do not involve a man in the guilt of sin: as suppose a law made that all public prayer be performed kneeling, if anything lies in a man's way to hinder him from that posture, in this case the man offends not; because there is no contempt or scandal. So if a law were made that all should receive the Lord's supper fasting, if a man's health calls for somewhat to refresh him before, he sins not in the breach of that law. And therefore it is observable, which Whitaker takes notice of in the canons of the councils of the primitive church, that though they did determine many things belonging to its external polity, yet they observed this difference in their censures or anathemas; that in matters of mere order and decency they never pronounced an *anathema*, but with the supposition of apparent contempt; and inserted, *Si quis contra præsumpserit, si quis contumaciter contra fecerit*: "If any shall presume to the contrary, if any shall contumaciously act to the contrary;" but in matters of doctrine or life, fully determined by the law of God, they pronounced a simple *anathema*, without any such clause inserted. Now from this, we may take notice of a difference between laws concerning indifferences in civil and ecclesiastical matters. That in civils, the laws bind to indifferences without the case of contempt or scandal, because in these the public good is aimed at, of which every private person is not fit to judge, and therefore it is our duty either to obey or suffer; but in ecclesiastical constitutions, only peace and order is that which is looked at, and therefore, *Si nihil contra iustitiam feceris, non teneris illis*, "If nothing contrary to good order be done, men are not bound by them," is the rule here. For the end and reason of a law is the measure of its obligation. *Fourthly*, men's being left free to do the things forbidden, either upon a repeal of the former laws, or when a man is from under obligation to that authority which commands them, argues them still to be matters of liberty, and not matters of necessity. That laws respecting indifferent things may be repealed, I cannot imagine that any have so little reason as to deny, upon a dif-

<sup>1</sup> Id. 1 Sam. 14.

ferent state of affairs from what it was when they were first enacted; or, when they cannot attain the ends they are designed for, the peace and order of the church, but rather tend to embroil it in trouble and confusion: and that when men are from under the authority imposing them, men are at their own liberty again, must necessarily be granted, because the ground of restraint of that liberty was the authority they were under; and therefore the cause being taken away, the effects follow. Therefore for men to do them when authority doth not impose them, must imply an opinion of the necessity of the things themselves, which destroys Christian liberty. Whence it was resolved by *Augustine*<sup>1</sup> in the case of rites, that every one should observe those of that church which he was in: which he saith he took from *Ambrose*. He tells us, "He knew no better course for a serious prudent Christian to take in matters of rites and customs, than to follow the church's example where he is; for whatsoever is observed neither against faith nor manners, is a matter in itself indifferent, and to be observed according to the custom of those he lives among."<sup>2</sup> And afterwards acquaints us that his mother coming to Milan after him, and finding the church there not to observe the Saturday fast as the church of Rome did, was much perplexed and troubled in her mind at it, (as tender, but weak consciences are apt to be troubled at anything contrary to their own practice); she for her own satisfaction, sends her son to *Ambrose*, then bishop of the church there, who told him he would give him no other answer but what he did himself, and if he knew anything better, he would do it. *Augustine* presently expects a command from him to leave off Saturday fasts: instead of that, *Ambrose* tells him, "When I am at Rome I fast on the sabbath, but at Milan I do not. So thou likewise, when thou comest to any church, observe its custom, if thou wouldst neither be an offence to them, nor have them be so to thee."<sup>3</sup> A rare and excellent example of the piety, prudence and moderation of the primitive church; far from rigidly imposing indifferent customs on the one side; or from contumacy in opposing mere

<sup>1</sup> Aug. eg. 118, ad Januar.

<sup>2</sup> Nec disciplina ulla in his melior gravi prudentique Christiano, quam ut eo modo agat, quo agere viderit ecclesiam, ad quameunque forte devenerit. Quod enim neque contra fidem, neque contra bonos mores injungitur, indifferenter est habendum, et pro eorum inter quos vivitur societate servandum est.

<sup>3</sup> Cum Romam venio, jejuno, sabbato; cum hic sum, non jejuno; sic etiam tu, ad quam forte ecclesiam veneris, ejus morem serva; si cuiquam non vis esse scandalo, nec quanquam tibi.

indifferences on the other. Which judgment of *Ambrose*, *Augustine* saith, he always looked on as often as he thought of it, *tanquam celeste oraculum*, "as an oracle come from heaven;" and concludes with this excellent speech, which if ever God intend peace to his church, he will make men understand: "I have often," saith he, "found it to my grief and sorrow, that the troubles of weaker Christians have been caused by the contentious obstinacy of some on the one hand, and the superstitious fearfulness of others on the other, in things which are neither determined by the authority of the Holy Scriptures, nor by the custom of the universal church, nor yet by any usefulness of the things themselves, in order to the making men's lives better; only for some petty reason in a man's own mind, or because it hath been the custom of their country, or because they have found in those churches, which they have thought to be the nearer to truth, the further they have been from home, they are continually raising such quarrels and contentions, that they think nothing is right and lawful, but what they do themselves."<sup>1</sup> Had that blessed saint lived in our age he could not have uttered anything more true, nor more pertinent to our present state: which methinks admirers of antiquity should embrace for its authority, and others for its great truth and reason. Did we but set up those three things as judges between us in our matters of ceremonies,—*The authority of the Scriptures, the practice of the primitive universal church, and the tendency of them to the reforming men's lives*; how soon might we shake hands, and our controversies be at an end! But as long as contentious obstinacy remains on one side, and a superstitious fearfulness on the other, (for superstition may as well lie in the imagined necessity of avoiding things indifferent, as in the necessary observing of things which are not,) we may find our storms increase, but we are not likely to see any land of peace. How happy might we be, did men but once understand that it was their duty to mind the things of peace! How little of that dust might calm and quiet our most contentious quarrels!

<sup>1</sup> Sensi enim sæpe dolens et gemens, multas infirmorum perturbationes fieri per quorundam fratrum contentiosam obstinationem, et superstitiosam timiditatem; qui in rebus hujusmodi, quæ neque Scripturæ sanetæ auctoritate, neque universalis ecclesiæ traditione, neque vitæ corrigendæ utilitate ad certum possunt terminum pervenire (perducere) tantum quia subest qualiscunque ratiocinatio cogitantis, aut quia in suâ patriâ sic ipse consuevit, aut quia ibi vidit ubi peregrinationem suam quo remotiorem a suis, eò doctiorem factam putat, tam litigiosas excitant quæstiones ut nisi quod ipsi faciunt, nihil rectum existiment.

These commotions of souls, and these contests so great,  
With the sprinkling of a little dust, are at rest.<sup>1</sup>

But in order to so happy and desirable a union and accommodation, I shall not need to plead much from the nature of the things we differ about; the lowness of them in comparison of the great things we are agreed in, the fewness of them in comparison of the multitude of those weighty things we ought most to look after, the benefits of union, the miseries of division, which if our lamentable experience doth not tell us of, yet our consciences may; I shall crave leave humbly to present to serious consideration some proposals for accommodation: which is an attempt that nothing but an earnest desire for peace can justify, and I hope that will: which here falls in as the third step of my designed discourse, about the bounds to be set in the restraint of Christian liberty.

§ 11. The *first* is, that nothing be imposed as necessary, but what is clearly revealed in the word of God. This there is the highest reason and equity for, since none can have command immediately over conscience, but God himself, and whatever is imposed as necessary, doth immediately bind conscience. And whatever binds men's consciences with an opinion of the necessity of it, doth immediately destroy that Christian liberty which men are necessarily bound to stand fast in, and not be entangled with any yoke of bondage.<sup>2</sup> Not only the yoke of Jewish ceremonies, but whatever yoke pinches and galls as that did, with an opinion of the necessity of doing the thing commanded by any but the word of God. Which the apostle calls *dogmatizing*.<sup>3</sup> "Let no man judge you in meat and drink;" these impositions he calls the commandments and doctrines of men.<sup>4</sup> And such he calls a snare, which was the making an indifferent thing, as celibacy, necessary.<sup>5</sup> "Any thing that ought to be free, commanded as necessary, becomes a snare."<sup>6</sup> So that though obedience be necessary to indifferent things when commanded; yet it must always be *liberâ conscientia, quoad res ipsas legum*, "with a conscience free, so far as concerns them as matters of law," no obligation to be laid upon conscience to look upon the things as necessary.

*Secondly*, That nothing be required, nor determined, but

<sup>1</sup> Hi motus animorum, atque hæc certamina tanta  
Pulveris exigui jactu compressa quiescunt.

<sup>2</sup> Gal. v. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Coloss. ii. 16, 20.

<sup>4</sup> Coloss. ii. 22.

<sup>5</sup> 1 Corinth. vii. 23.

<sup>6</sup> Laqus est quicquid præcipitur ut necessarium, quod liberum esse debet.



what is sufficiently known to be indifferent in its own nature. The former proposal was in reference to the manner of imposing, this respects the nature of the things themselves. The only difficulty here is, how a thing may be sufficiently known to be indifferent; because one man looks upon that as indifferent, which another doth not. The most equal way to decide this controversy, is to make choice of such judges as are not interested in the quarrel: and those are the *sense of the primitive church* in the first four centuries, who were best able to judge whether they looked upon themselves as bound by any command of scripture or not; and withal the judgment of the reformed churches: so that what shall be made appear to be left indifferent, by both the sense of the primitive church, and the churches of the reformation, may be a matter determinable by law, and to which all may be required to conform in obedience.

*Thirdly*, That whatever is thus determined be in order only to a due performance of what is in general required in the word of God, and not to be looked on as any part of divine worship or service. This is that which gives the greatest occasion of offence to men's consciences, when anything is either required; or if not, yet generally used and looked on as a necessary part or concomitant of God's worship, so that without it the worship is deemed imperfect. And there is great difference to be made between things indifferent in their own nature, and indifferent as to their use and practice. And when the generality of those who use them do not use them as indifferent, but as necessary things, it ought to be considered, whether in this case such a use be allowable till men be better informed of the nature of the things they do. As in the case of the papists about image-worship, their divines say, that the images are only as high teners of devotion, but the worship is fixed on God; but we find, it is quite otherwise in the general practice of people who look at nothing beyond the image. So it may be, abating the degrees of the offence, when matters of indifferency in themselves are by the generality of people not looked on as such, but used as a necessary part of divine service. And it would be considered whether such an abuse of matters supposed indifferent being known, it be not *scandalum datum* to continue their use without an effectual remedy for the abuse of them.

*Fourthly*, That no sanctions be made, nor mulcts nor penalties be inflicted on such who only dissent from the use of some things whose lawfulness they at present scruple, till

sufficient time and means be used for their information of the nature and indifferency of the things, that it may be seen whether it be out of wilful contempt and obstinacy of spirit, or only weakness of conscience and dissatisfaction concerning the things themselves that they disobey. And if it be made evident to be out of contempt, that only such penalties be inflicted as answers to the nature of the offence; I am sure it is contrary to the primitive practice, and the moderation then used, to suspend or deprive men of their ministerial function for not conforming in habits, gestures, or the like. Concerning habits, *Walafridus Strabo* expressly tells us, there was no distinction of habits used in the church in the primitive times.<sup>1</sup> "Clerical robes through all their gradations, were enriched to that habit, which is now worn. But in the earliest times the clergy clad in the common vestment celebrated the mass, as certain in the oriental churches to the present are reported to do."<sup>2</sup> And therefore the *Concilium Gangrense*, "the council at Gangra," condemned *Eustathius Sebastenus*<sup>3</sup> for making a necessity of diversity of habits among Christians for their profession, διὰ τὴν ἀσκησιν, "for their profession or order," it being acknowledged both by *Salmasius*<sup>4</sup> and his great adversary *Petavius*; that in primitive times the presbyters did not necessarily wear any distinct habit from the people, although the former endeavours to prove, that commonly they did in *Tertullian's* time; but yet that not all the presbyters, nor they only did use a distinct habit, viz. the *pallium philosophicum*, "the philosophic cloak," but all the Christians who did ἀκριβῶς χριστιανίζειν, "strictly christianize," as *Socrates* said of *Sylvanus Rhetor*,<sup>5</sup> all that were ἀσκηταί, "the ascetics, or stricter professors of Christianity," among them, stricter professors of Christianity; among which most of the presbyters were. And *Origen* in *Eusebius*<sup>6</sup> expressly speaks of *Heraclas* a presbyter of *Alexandria*, that for a long time κοινῇ ἐσθῇτι χρώμενος, "he used only the common garment," belonging to Christians, and put on the *pallium philosophicum* for the study of the Grecian learning, after that Christianity began to lose in height

<sup>1</sup> De rebus Eccles. cap. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Vestes sacerdotales per incrementa ad eum; qui nunc habetur, auctæ sunt ornatum. Nam primis temporibus communi vestimento induti, missas agebant, sicut et hactenus quidam orientalium facere perhibentur.

<sup>3</sup> Can. 14, in Cod. Can. in Vin. Eccles. can. 71.

<sup>4</sup> Salm. Nat. in Tertul. de Palteo. 76.

<sup>5</sup> Ant. Cereochthus in Salmas. p. 12.

<sup>6</sup> Euseb. lib. 6, cap. 20.

what it got in breadth: instead of the former simplicity of their garments as well as manners, and their *τεβωνια*, "the monk's robe," came in the use of the *byrri*, "the scarlet gowns," *penulæ Dalmaticæ*, "Dalmatian cloaks," and so daily increasing, as *Strabo* saith. I say not this in the least to condemn any distinction of habit for mere decency and order, but to show it was not the custom of the primitive times to impose any necessity of these things upon men, nor to censure them for bare disuse of them. He must be a great stranger in the primitive church that takes not notice of the great diversity of rites and customs used in particular churches, without any censuring those who differed from them; or if any by any inconsiderate zeal did proceed so far, how ill it was resented by other Christians. As *Victor's* excommunicating the *quarto-decimani*, "the advocates for the fourteenth day," for which he is so sharply reprov'd by *Irenæus*,<sup>1</sup> who tells him, that the primitive Christians who differed in such things, did not use to abstain from one another's communion for them; καὶ γὰρ οἱ τῆς αὐτῆς πιστεως ὄντες, διαφαινοῦσι περὶ ταῖς ἐξῆς πρὸς ἑαυτοὺς; as *Socrates* tells us, "those that agree in the same faith, may differ among themselves in their rites and customs," as he largely shows in a whole chapter to that purpose; as, in the observation of *Easter*, some on the fourteenth day of April, others only upon the Lord's day, but some of the more eastern churches differed from both. In their fasts, some observed Lent but for one day, some two, some three weeks, some six weeks, others seven: and in their fasts some abstained from all kinds of living creatures, others only from flesh, eating fish, and others fowl: others abstained from fruit and eggs: others eat only dry bread, others not that either. And so for their public assemblies; some communicating every Lord's day, others not. The church of *Alexandria* had its public meetings and sermons every fourth day of the week, as he tells us. The same church made the public readers and interpreters, either of the catechumens, or of the baptized, differing therein from all other churches. Several customs were used about digamy, "or marriage to a second wife after the death of the first," and the marriage of ministers in several churches. So about the time of baptism, some having only one set time in the year for it, as at *Easter* in *Thessaly*; others two, *Easter*, and *Dominica in Albis*, so called from the "white garments" of the baptized. Some churches in baptism

<sup>1</sup> Euseb. l. 5. Socrat. Hist. Eccles. l. 5, c. 23.

used three dippings; others only one. Great differences about the time of their being catechumens, in some places longer, in others a shorter time. So about the excommunicated, and degrees of penance, (as they are called,) their *Flentes, audientes, succumbentes, consistentes*, the *communio peregrinæ*, "weeping, listening, bending, standing, the communion of a stranger," the several chrisms *in vertice, in pectore*, "on the head, on the breast," in some places at baptism, in some after. So for placing the altar (as they metaphorically called the communion table), it was not constantly towards the east; for *Socrates*<sup>1</sup> affirms, that in the great church at *Antiochia*, it stood to the west end of the church; and therefore it had *ἀντιστοφον θέσιν*, "a different position" from other churches. And *Eusebuis*<sup>2</sup> saith out of the panegyrist, that in the new church built by *Paulinus* at *Tyre*, the altar stood *εν μέσῳ*, "in the middle." These things may suffice for a taste at present, of which more largely elsewhere (God willing) in due time. We see the primitive Christians did not make so much of any uniformity in rites and ceremonies; nay I scarce think any churches in the primitive times can be produced, that did exactly in all things observe the same customs: which might especially be an argument of moderation in all, as to these things, but especially in pretended admirers of the primitive church. I conclude with a known saying of *Austin*, "It is an unworthy thing for Christians to condemn and judge one another for those things which do not further us at all in our way to Heaven."<sup>3</sup>

Lastly, That religion be not clogged with ceremonies. They when multiplied too much, if lawful, yet strangely eat out the heart, heat, life, vigour of Christianity. Christian religion is a plain, simple, easy thing; Christ commends his yoke to us by the easiness of it, and his burden by the lightness of it. It was an excellent testimony which *Amm. Marcellinus* a heathen gave to Christianity, when speaking of *Constantius*, "That he spoiled the beauty of Christianity, by muffling it up in old womanish superstition."<sup>4</sup> And it is as true which *Erasmus* said in answer to the Sorbonists, "We turn back to Judaism by so much as we cleave to external ceremonies;"<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cap. 23, l. 5.

<sup>2</sup> Eccles. Hist. l. 10, cap. 4.

<sup>3</sup> Indignum est ut propter ea quæ nos Deo neque digniores, neque indigniores possunt facere, alii alios vel condemnemus, vel judicemus.

<sup>4</sup> Religionein Christianam rem absolutam et simplicem anili superstitione confudit.

<sup>5</sup> Quò magis in corporalibus ceremoniis hæremus, hoc magis vergimus ad Judaismum.—Eras. in declar. ad Cens. Paris. art. 14.



which is fully proved as to the Papists, by our learned *Rainolds* and *Mr. De Croy*:<sup>1</sup> but we need no further evidence than a bare perusal of *Durandus Mimatensis* his *Rationale Divinorum officiorum*. By ceremonies, I mean not here matters of mere decency and order, for order's sake; which doubtless are lawful, (if the measure of that order be not the pomp and glory of the world, but the gravity, composure, sobriety, which becomes Christianity,) for when the Jews were the most strictly tied up by a ceremonial law, they did introduce many things upon the account of order and decency: as the building synagogues, their hours of prayer, their *Parashoth* and *Haphtaroth*, "*the sections of the law and prophets*;" the continuation of the passover fourteen days by *Hezekiah*, when the law required but seven: the feast of *Purim*, or "of lots" by *Esther* and *Mordecai*: the fasts of the fourth, fifth, and tenth month under the captivity; the feast of dedication by the *Maccabees*. The use of baptism in proselyting, washing the feet before the passover, imitated and practised by our Saviour: so that matters of order and decency are allowable and fitting; but ceremonies properly taken for actions significative, and therefore appointed because significative, their lawfulness may with better ground be scrupled. Or, taking ceremony, in *Bellarmino's* description of it, to be "an external act, which is not otherwise good and commendable, except it refers to the worship of God;"<sup>2</sup> in this sense it will be hard to manifest any thing to be lawful, but what is founded upon a divine precept; if it be not a matter of order, and so no ceremony. And as for significative ceremonies, concerning matter of doctrine or fact, a learned doctor<sup>3</sup> puts us in mind of the old rule, that they be *paucæ et salubres*, "few and wholesome:" for as he observes from *Aristotle* in insectile animals, the want of blood was the cause they run out into so many legs. I shall conclude this whole discourse with another speech of *St. Austin*, very pertinent to our present purpose.<sup>4</sup> "All such things which are neither founded on the authority of the Scriptures,

<sup>1</sup> Cons. with Hart. chap. viii, Div. 8. De Croy 3, Conformity, part 2.

<sup>2</sup> Actio externa, quæ non aliunde est bona and laudabilis, nisi quia fit ad Deum colendum.—De Sacram. lib. 2, c. 29.

<sup>3</sup> Dr. Ham, of Superstition, sect. 39.

<sup>4</sup> Omnia itaque talia quæ neque sanctorum scripturarum autoritatibus continentur, nec in conciliis episcoporum statuta inveniuntur, nec consuetudine universæ ecclesiæ roborata sunt, sed, diversorum locorum diversis moribus innumerabiliter variantur, ita ut vix aut omnino nunquam, inveniri possint causæ, quas in eis instituendis secuti sunt homines, ubi facultas tribuitur, sine ulla dubitatione resecanda existimo.—Ep. 119, ad Jan. cap. 19.

nor determined by general councils, (for so he must be understood,) nor practised by the catholic church, but vary according to the customs of places, of which no rational account can be given; as soon as men have power to do it, I judge them to be cut off without any scruple:" for which definitive sentence of his, he gives this most sufficient reason; "For although we cannot positively say, how such things as these do manifestly impugn our faith, yet in that they load our religion with such servile burdens, (which the mercy of God hath left free for all other observations, but the celebration of some few and most clear sacraments,) that they make our condition worse than that of the Jews; for they, although strangers to gospel liberty, had no burdens charged upon them by the constitutions of men, but only by the law and commands of God:"<sup>1</sup> which sentence and reason of his, I leave to the most impartial judgment of every true sober-minded Christian. And thus I am at last come through this field of thorns and thistles; I hope now to find my way more plain and easy. So much for the fourth hypothesis. The two next will be discharged with less trouble.

§ 12. Hypoth. 5. *What is left undetermined both by divine positive laws, and by principles deduced from the natural law, if it be determined by lawful authority in the church of God, doth bind the consciences of those who are subject to that authority, to obedience to those determinations.* I here suppose, that the matter of the law be something not predetermined, either by the law of nature, or divine positive laws, for against either of these no human law can bind the conscience: for if there be any moral evil in the thing commanded, we are bound to obey God rather than men; in which case, we do not formally and directly disobey the magistrate, but we choose to obey God before him. And, as we have already observed, a former obligation from God or nature destroys a latter; because God hath a greater power and authority over men's consciences, than any human authority can have: and my obedience to the magistrate being founded upon a divine law, it must be supposed my duty to obey him first, by virtue of whose authority I obey another; then, the other whom I obey, because the former hath commanded me. If I am

<sup>1</sup> Quamvis enim neque hoc inveniri possit, quomodo contra fidem sint; ipsam tamen religionem (quam paucissimis et manifestissimis celebrationem sacramentis misericordia Dei liberam esse voluit) servilibus oneribus premunt, ut tolerabilior sit conditio Judæorum, qui etiamsi tempus libertatis non agnoverint, legalibus tamen sarcinis, non humanis præsumptionibus subjiuntur.

bound to obey an inferior magistrate, because the supreme requires it: if the inferior command me anything contrary to the will and law of the supreme, I am not bound to obey him in it, because both he derives his power of commanding, and I my obligation to obedience, from the authority of the supreme, which must be supposed to do nothing against itself. So it is between God and the supreme magistrate; *by him kings reign*; God, when he gives them a legislative power, doth it *cumulativè non privativè*, “abundantly not privatively,” not so as to deprive himself of it, nor his own laws of a binding force against his; so that no law of a magistrate can in reason bind against a positive law of God. But what is enacted by a lawful magistrate, in things left undetermined by God’s laws, doth even by virtue of them bind men to obedience, which require subjection to the higher powers *for conscience sake*.<sup>1</sup> So that whatsoever is left indifferent, obedience to the magistrate in things indifferent is not: and if we are not bound to obey in things undetermined by the word, I would fain know wherein we are bound to obey them; or what distinct power of obligation belongs to the authority the magistrate hath over men? For all other things we are bound to already by former laws; therefore either there must be a distinct authority without power to oblige, or else we are effectually bound to whatsoever the magistrate doth determine in lawful things. And if it be so in general, it must be so as to all particulars contained in that general, and so in reference to matters of the church, unless we suppose all things concerning it to be already determined in Scripture: which is the thing in question, and shall be largely discussed in its due place.

§ 13. *Sixthly.* Hypoth 6. *Things undetermined by the divine law, natural and positive, and actually determined by lawful authority, are not thereby made unalterable, but may be revoked, limited, and changed, according to the different ages, tempers, inclinations of men, by the same power which did determine them.* All human constitutions are reversible by the same power which made them: for the obligation of them, not arising from the matter of them, but from the authority of the person binding, is consequently alterable, as shall be judged by that power most suitable to the ends of its first promulgation. Things may so much alter, and times change, that what was a likely way to keep men in unity and

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xiii. 5.

obedience at one time may only enrage them at another. The same physic which may at one time cure, may at another only aggravate the distemper. As therefore the skill of a physician lies most in the application of physic to the several tempers of his patients: so a wise magistrate, who is, as *Nicias* said in *Thucydides*, *πολεως κακως βουλευομενης ιατρος*, “the physician to cure the distempers of the body politic,”<sup>1</sup> and considers (as *Spartian* tells us *Adrian* used to say in the senate, “that he would so conduct the commonwealth, that it should know that the state was the people’s, not his own),”<sup>2</sup> will see a necessity of altering, reforming, varying many human constitutions, according as they shall tend most to the ends of government, either in church or state. Thence it is said of the several laws of nature, divine and human, that “the law of nature may be laid down, (as in case of marriage with sisters in the beginning of the world,) but not laid aside; the law of God can neither be laid down, nor laid aside; but human laws, both may be laid down, and laid aside.”<sup>3</sup> Indeed, the laws of the *Medes* and *Persians*, are said to be unalterable,<sup>4</sup> but (if it be meant in the sense commonly understood,) yet that very law which made them unalterable (for they were not so of their own nature), was an alterable law, and so was whatever did depend upon it. I conclude then, whatever is the subject of human determination, may lawfully be altered and changed, according to the wisdom and prudence of those in whose hands the care of the public is. Thus then, as those things which are either of natural or christian liberty, are subjected to human laws and restraints, so those laws are not irreversible; but if the fences be thrown down by the same authority which set them up, whatever was thereby inclosed, returns to the community of natural right. So much for these *hypotheses*, which I have been the longer in explaining and establishing, because of the great influence they may have upon our present peace, and the near concernment they have to this whole discourse, the whole fabric of which is erected upon these foundations.

<sup>1</sup> Hist. lib. 6. *Spartian*. in *Adriano*.

<sup>2</sup> Ita se rempub. gesturum, ut sciret populi rem esse, non propriam.

<sup>3</sup> Lex naturæ potest poni, sed non deponi, lex divinæ nec poni nec deponi, lex humana et poni et deponi.

<sup>4</sup> Dan. vi. 8.



## CHAPTER III.

How far Church Government is founded upon the Law of Nature. Two things in it founded thereon. 1. That there must be a society of men for the worship of God. 2. That this society be governed in the most convenient manner. A society for worship manifested, *Gen. iv. 26*, considered. The sons of God, and the sons of men, who? Societies for worship among Heathens evidenced by three things. 1. Solemnity of Sacrifices; Sacrificing, how far natural; the antiquity of the Feast of first fruits, largely discovered. 2. The original of festivals for the honour of their Deities. 3. The secrecy and solemnity of their mysteries. This further proved from man's sociable nature, the improvement of it by Religion, the honour redounding to God by such a society for his worship.

§ 1. HAVING now laid our foundation, we proceed to raise a superstructure upon it. And we now come closely to inquire how far government in the church is founded upon an unalterable divine right? That we have found to be built upon a double foundation, *the dictates of the law of nature, and divine positive laws*. We shall impartially inquire into both of them, and see how far church government is settled upon either of these two. I begin then with the law of nature. Two general things, I conceive, are of an unalterable divine right, in reference to this: First, *that there be a society and joining together of men for the worship of God*: Secondly, *that this society be governed, preserved, and maintained in the most convenient manner*. First, that there must be a society of men joining together for the worship of God. For the dictate of nature being common to all, that God must be served, nature requires some kind of mutual society for the joint performance of their common duties. An evidence of which dictate of nature appears in the first mention we find of any public society; so that a society for religious worship was as ancient as the first civil societies we have any records of. Nay, the very first public society we read of, was gathered upon this account. For we read in the early days of the

world that the charter for this society was soon made use of, *Gen.* iv. 26. *In the days of Enos men began to call upon the name of the Lord.* Now *Enos* was *Seth's* son, whom *Adam* had given in the place of *Abel*, and as soon as the number of men did increase, that men grew into societies, they then had their public societies for God's worship. For we cannot understand that passage absolutely, as though God had not been called on before; but now he was called on more signally and solemnly; when men were increased that they began to embody themselves into societies, *Cæpit congregare populum ad tractandum simul Dei cultum*, "they began to collect the people to exercise together the worship of God," saith *Pererius*. *Tunc ceptum est populariter coli Deus*, "then it was commenced that God was publicly worshipped," *Mariana*. *Invocare*, to invoke, i. e. *palam colere*, openly to worship, *Emanuel Sa.* relating to all the public societies being then gathered for the worship of the true God. From which time in all probability did commence that title of those who joined in those societies that they were called *האֱלֹהִים בְּנֵי* "the sons of God," which we read of soon after; *Gen.* vi. 2, as they are distinguished from the *הָאָדָם בְּנֵי* "sons of men:" which titles I am far from understanding in the sense of the fathers, taking them for the angels, (which, probably, they took from the piece going under the name of *Enoch's* prophesy); so I cannot understand them as commonly they are taken, for mere discrete titles of the posterity of *Seth* and *Cain*; as though all that came of *Seth* were sons of God, and all of *Cain* were the sons of men. For as there certainly were many bad of *Seth's* posterity, because the flood destroyed all of them, *Noah* only and his family excepted: so there might be some good of the other, vice being no more entailed than virtue is; and jewels may sometimes lie in a dunghill: and so this name of the sons of God might be appropriated to those who joined themselves to those societies for God's worship. In which sense some understand the very words of the text *הָיָה לָקְרָא בְּשֵׁם יְהוָה* then men began to be called by the name of the Lord: which I suppose is the sense of *Aquila*,<sup>1</sup> who thus renders the place, *τοτε ηρχθη του καλεισαι εν ονοματι Κυριου*, "then it," (the custom,) "began to be called by the name of the Lord," although it be brought by *Dionys. Vossius* to justify the former interpretation of the words. This sense, if the construction of the words will bear it (which

<sup>1</sup> Not. in Maim. de Idol. c. i. sect. 1.

*Drusius*<sup>1</sup> questions, but others are much for it, and *Theodoret*, the *French*, and *Piscator* so render it) seems most genuine and natural; and not at all impugning what I have formerly gathered from the words, but implying it; for this distinction of names and tiles did argue a distinction of societies among them. I am not ignorant that the generality of Jewish expositors and many of their followers, do carry the sense of the words quite another way, from the ambiguity of the signification of הוה which may be interpreted as well “to profane as begin,” and so they read it *tunc prophanatum est ad invocandum nomen Domini*, “then men profaned the name of the Lord:” and accordingly *Maimonides*<sup>2</sup> begins idolatry אנוש בִּיס from the days of Enos. But the words will scarce bear this construction, as *Vossius* observes; and besides there is no mention at all of the name of any false gods, but only of the true one. So much then for the first original of this society for religion, which we see began as soon as there was matter to compose a society. Some indeed derive this society a great deal higher; and because we read<sup>3</sup> that *Abel* and *Cain* brought their sacrifices, they thence infer, that it was to *Adam*, who was the public priest then, and performed all public duties of worship in his own person, and so was indeed oecumenical bishop of the whole world, and yet had but four persons or but few more for his charge. Such a diocess we might be content to allow him that pleads for the same office, and derives his title somewhat higher than *Adam*; for Pope *Boniface* the eighth proved there must be but one chief priest, and so one pope, because it is said, *Gen. i. 1*, that God created the world *in principio*, not *in principiis*,<sup>4</sup> mark the number; therefore there must be but “one beginning,” and so one bishop, and not many. What excellent disputants an infallible chair makes men! Much good may his argument do him.

§ 2. As a further evidence, how much nature dictates that such a society there should be for Divine worship, we shall inquire into the practice of men in their dispersion after the flood. And what we find unanimously continued among them, under such gross idolatry as they were given to, and which did arise not from their idolatry as such, but from the general nature of it as a kind of worship, we have reason to

<sup>1</sup> V. Chamier: Panstrat. Cath. tom. 2, l. 9, c. 9, s. 9. Amam. An. tib. Bibl. l. 2, p. 228.

<sup>2</sup> V. Selden. de Diis Syris Proleg. p. 28, & 44. Abodazara, cap. i.

<sup>3</sup> Birtram. de Polit. Jud. cap. 2, p. 12. Franz. Sch. Sacrif. disp. 2. Coppenb. Sch. Sacrif. p. 14.

<sup>4</sup> In the beginning, not in beginnings.

look upon as one of those planks which hath escaped the common shipwreck of human nature by the fall of man. And so though that argument from the general consent of nations owning a way of worship though a false one, in order to the proving the existence of God be slighted by some,<sup>1</sup> yet there is this double evidence to prove it, more than is generally taken notice of, and beyond the bare testimony itself given by that consent. *First*, From men's being so easily imposed upon by false religions, in that they are so soon gulled into idolatry; it argues there are some jewels in the world, or else men would never be deceived with counterfeits; it argues that a child who hath a father, is ready to call every one that comes to him, father; so it argues there is some natural instinct in men towards the worship of God, when men are so easily brought to worship other things instead of God. We see no other creatures can be so imposed upon; we read of no idolatry among the brutes, nor that the bees though they have a king and honour him, did ever bow their knees to *Baal*, or worship the hive instead of him. If men had no journeys to go, others need not be sworn as the *Athenians* were, not to put them out of their way. If there were no inclinableness to religion, all cautions against idolatry were superfluous, there is then from men's proneness to error, as to the person and object of worship, an evidence of natural ὁρμή, "*instinct*" within towards the act of worship; and as when I see sheep flock together, even in their wanderings, I may easily gather that though they are out of their proper pastures, yet they are of a tame and sociable nature; so when we see societies for worship were preserved among men after they were degenerated into idolatry; it is an evident argument that such associating together for the general nature of the act, doth flow from the nature of man. *Secondly*, All men's agreeing in some kind of worship, though differing as to the object and manner of it, is an evidence it comes from nature, because it plainly evinces it could not be taken up out of design, received by custom, nor conveyed by tradition, because even among those whose interests and designs have been contrary to one another, and could have no mutual compacts to deceive, have all agreed in this thing, though almost in all other things they have strangely differed. All other customs and traditions, are either changed, or lost among several nations; as the rude barbarous northern nations, that in their inroads and incur-

<sup>1</sup> Socinus præl. cap. 2.



sions upon other places, have left in process of time, almost all other customs but their religion. This sticks closer than *Saladin's* black shirt, or the old *Monks'* clothes, which they put not off till they died. Nay, even those nations, who openly, and as by a law, violate the other received dictates of nature, do yet maintain and hold up this. Those that have had the least of commerce and converse with civilized people, have yet had their societies for worship: and when they could find no gods to worship, they would rather make than want them. The Egyptians would rather spoil their sallets than be without gods; and they that whipt their gods, yet had them still. They who had no sense of another life, yet would pray to their gods for the good things of this: and they that would not pray that the gods would do them good, yet would that they might do them no hurt: so that in the most prodigious idolatry, we have an argument for religion; and in the strange diversities of the ways of worship, we have an evidence how natural a society for worship is. This is to show the validity and force of the argument drawn from the consent of nations, even in their idolatry.

§ 3. Three things in these societies for worship among the heathens I shall cite as evidence; the solemnity of their sacrifices, their public festivals, and their secret mysteries, all which were instituted peculiarly in honour of their gods: it being necessary in such societies for worship to have some particular rites, whereby to testify the end of such societies to be for the honour of their deity; and to distinguish those solemnities from all other. *First* then for sacrifices; *Paulus Burgensis* observing how this custom spread all the world over, concludes from thence that it was natural to men.<sup>1</sup> "There ever was, in every age, and amongst all nations, some offering of sacrifice; and what exists amongst all is the dictate of nature." Thus far I confess sacrificing natural, as it was a solemn and sensible rite of worship; but if he meant by that, the destroying of some living creatures to be offered up to God, I both deny the universal practice of it, and its being from the dictate of nature: and I rather believe with *Fortunius Licetus*,<sup>2</sup> that it was continued down by tradition, from the sacrifices of Cain and Abel before the flood, or rather from Noah's after; which might the easier be, because nature dictating there must be

<sup>1</sup> In qualibet ætate, et apud quaslibet hominum nationes, semper fuit aliqua sacrificiorum oblatio. Quod autem est apud omnes, naturale est.—Scrutin. Scrip. part 2, dist. 3, cap. 11.

<sup>2</sup> V. Porphy. περι αποχης. Encyclop. ad aram No rarii Terrig. c. 9, p. 96

some way of worship, and it being very agreeable to nature it should be by sensible signs, all nations having no other rule to direct them, were willing to observe that rite and custom in it, which was conveyed down to them from their progenitors: but let us see what reason *Burgensis* gives: "The reason of men, according to natural inclination, expressing their homage to Him, who is above all, according to a mode convenient to them, is called natural. Which mode is, that they should use sensible signs to intimate their internal impressions, as they received their knowledge of things invisible from sensible qualities. Hence from this natural reason, men offer external symbols to God in token of honour and subjection, according to the analogy of those who present something to their master, in acknowledgement that he is their lord."<sup>1</sup> And I withal acknowledge, that as to oblations without blood, they seem indeed very natural; whence we shall somewhat largely discover the antiquity of the feasts of first fruits, which were the clearest acknowledgement of their dependence upon God, and receiving these things from him. *Aristotle* tells us, "That the most ancient sacrifices and assemblies appear to have been upon the ingathering of fruits, such as the sacrifices of first fruits to the gods were."<sup>2</sup> To the same purpose *Porphyrus*, ἀπ' ἀρχῆς μὲν γὰρ αἱ τῶν καρπῶν ἐγίνοντο τοῖς θεοῖς θυσίαι. "The first sacrifices were of first fruits." And *Horace*,<sup>3</sup> "Our ancient husbandmen, strong and happy with a little, their grain being stored up, and regaling, in a festive hour, their bodies, and even their minds enduring hardships through the hope of the termination of their toil, with their companions, sons and faithful spouse, sacrificed to Tellus with a hog, and to Silvanus with milk."<sup>4</sup> Although he be not so express for offering the very fruits of the earth; yet it is evident from him,

<sup>1</sup> Ratio naturalis dictat, secundum naturalem inclinationem, homines ei quod est supra omnes, subjectionem exhibeant, secundum modum homini convenientem. Qui quidem modus est, ut sensibilibus signis utatur, ad exprimendum interiorem conceptum, sicut ex sensibilibus cognitionem accipit invisibilem. Unde ex naturali ratione procedit, quod homo sensibilibus signis utatur, offerens eas Deo in signum subjectionis et honoris ad similitudinem eorum qui Dominis suis aliquid offerunt in recognitionem Domini.

<sup>2</sup> Αἱ ἀρχαῖαι θυσίαι ἔτι συνοδοὶ φαίνονται γίνεσθαι μετὰ τὰς τῶν καρπῶν συγκομιδὰς ἰδιὸν ἀπαρχαί.—Nieomach. l. 3.

<sup>3</sup> De Abstin. lib. 2, s. 27.

<sup>4</sup> Agricolaë prisci fortes, parvoque beati  
Condita post frumenta, levantes tempore festo  
Corpus, et ipsum animum spe finis dura ferentes,  
Cum sociis operum et pueris et conjugæ fidâ,  
Tellurem porco, Sylvanum lacte piabant.—Ep. ad. Aug.

that their great festivals in honour of their gods, were immediately after harvest, and that they had great assemblies for that purpose, and did then solemnly sacrifice. And from these solemnities came the original of tragedies and comedies, as *Horace* intimates, and is largely showed by *Isaac Cusanbon* in his Treatise *de Satyricâ Poesi*.<sup>1</sup> But to fetch this yet a little higher, and so bring it downwards; the first sacrifice we read of in scripture, was this of the fruits of the earth, (unless the skins which *Adam* clothed himself with, were of the beasts sacrificed, as some conjecture:)<sup>2</sup> *Cain's* sacrifice was מנחה “an oblation of the fruits of the earth:” in all probability the first fruits, as *Abel* offered the first born of the cattle to the Lord: this seems to have been at some solemn time of sacrificing, which is implied in טקף ימים “At the end of days.” In process of time we render it; but the Jews understood it at the end of the year:<sup>3</sup> days in scripture being often put for years; which interpretation if we follow, we find a very early observation of the anniversary festival of first fruits; but however this be, we have by unquestionable tradition, that no festival was more anciently, nor more universally observed, than this of offering the first fruits to God of their increase. The Jews were bound up so strictly to it by their law, *Leviticus* xxiii. 14, that they were to eat nothing of their crop till the offering of first fruits was made. And *Porphyrus* tells us out of *Hermippus*,<sup>4</sup> that one of the laws made for the *Athenians* by *Triptolemus*, was, θεοις καρποις αγαλλειν, “To feast the gods with their fruits:” of which *Xenocrates* there gives a twofold reason; sense of gratitude to the gods, and the easiness at all times to offer up these; by which he supposed the custom would continue longer. *Draco*<sup>5</sup> afterwards puts this among his θεσμοι αιωνιοι, “his unalterable laws,” θεοις τιμαν απαρχαις καρπων, “to worship their gods with their first fruits.” Besides which, for other Greeks we have the testimony of *Plutarch*,<sup>6</sup> “Most of the Grecians,” saith he, “in their most ancient sacrifices did use barley, the first fruits being offered by the citizens:” and therefore the *Opuntii*<sup>7</sup> called their chief priest κριθολογος, because he gathered in the first fruits. The manner of offering the first fruits among them, was much of the same nature with the *Mincha* among the Jews, which

<sup>1</sup> Lib. 1, c. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. iv. 2.

<sup>3</sup> V. Ainsworth, in loc.

<sup>4</sup> De abstinent. l. 4, s. 22.

<sup>5</sup> V. petit. ad Log. Act. p. 3.

<sup>6</sup> Οι πλείοι των Ελλήνων προς τας πανυ παλαιας θυσιας εχραντο ταις κριθαις, απαρχομενων των πολιτων.—Quest. Græc. q. 6.

<sup>7</sup> The inhabitants of Opus.

was of "fine flour mingled with oil and frankincense, for a burnt-offering to the Lord:"<sup>1</sup> the word there used implies the bruising the ears of corn in a mortar, because they were as yet moist, and could not be ground hard as corn was. Whence, because it was not all brought to flour, the cake was called *σωα* and *ξεμνα*, or cakes of coarsely ground barley, maize, or wheat. It is called by the *Septuagint* *χειθη πεφρυγμενη*, "barley parched." So I suppose it should be read, which in our great bibles is *πεφρυγμενα χιδρα*, "toasted groats or porridge," and it is called by the Greeks *ελοχνται*,<sup>2</sup> which word is frequently used by *Homer* and *Apollonius Rhodius*, whom I forbear to transcribe, it being so obvious; which is expounded both by the excellent scholiast on *Apollonius*, and by *Eustathius* and the short scholiast on *Homer*, to be *κριθαι μεθ αλων μεμιγμενα*, "barley and salt mixed together."<sup>3</sup> To which among the Romans the *Mola salsa*, "salted meal," answered, of which *Festus*: *Est far tostum et sale conspersum*, "he eats parched meal sprinkled with salt," as the *Mincha* under the law, was always salted with salt, *Levit.* ii. 13. This *Mola salsa* among the Romans, had originally relation to the first fruits: for the custom of offering up first fruits among them, was as ancient as their institution of religious rites, as *Pliny* fully informs us, "Numa ordained to worship the gods with fruits, and to make an oblation with salted meal; and that it might be increased to parch it in the half sextary,"<sup>4</sup> which likewise answers to the Jewish *Mincha*, which was to be *כאש קלי* *tosta in igne*, "parched in the fire:"<sup>5</sup> for which purpose *Numa* instituted the *Fornacalia*, which were *farris torrendi feriæ*, "the feasts of first fruits," the parching the corn being in order thereto: see *Pliny*<sup>6</sup> whose words may be exactly rendered in those of the law, *Leviticus* xxiii. 14. But though the *Mola salsa*<sup>7</sup> came originally from hence, it afterwards came to be used in most sacrifices, thence the word *immolare* to sacrifice, again parallel to the *Mincha accessorium*, "the *Mincha* accessory," as some call it among the Jews, which was used in other sacrifices; and was distinct from the *Mincha per se*, which of itself was an oblation to the Lord. From this offer-

<sup>1</sup> *Levit.* xxiii. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Bruised grain, parched and salted.

<sup>3</sup> *Iliad*, a. 449, Arg. 1, v. 409; &c.

<sup>4</sup> *Numa instituit Deos fruge colere, et molâ salsâ supplicare; atque ut aucta sit hemina, far torrere.*—*Hist. Natur.* lib. 13, c. 2.

<sup>5</sup> *Levit.* ii. 14.

<sup>6</sup> *An ne degustabant novas fruges, aut vina antequam sacerdotes primitias libassent.*

<sup>7</sup> *V. Saubertum de sacrif.* c. 19.



ing up bruised corn, some derive the name of *Ceres*<sup>1</sup> from שֶׁרֶשׁ which signifies as much, and was required, *Leviticus* ii. 14, thence *Ovid* l. 8 *Met. Primitias frugum Cereri, sua vina Lyæo*, “offer the first fruits of corn to Ceres, his own wine to Bacchus.” But besides *Ceres*, they offered their first fruits among the Greeks to *Horæ, Diana, Apollo, Vesta*,<sup>2</sup> as may be seen in *Meursius* in Ὠραία, “the season of ripe fruit;” Θαγγηλία, “a festival in honour of Diana;” Ἑστιαία, “to Vesta.” Thus we see how these three nations did agree not only in the observation of the feast of first fruits, but very much in the ceremonies of their offering too. Only this difference may be observed between them, the Romans did mix their *Mola salsa* with water, the Jews their *Mincha* with oil only; the Greeks did not bruise the corn in their ελοχυνται, “porridge of parched grain,” but only mixed salt with the grains of corn. But the Jews and Romans both bruised and parched it, before they offered it up for the first fruits. Thus much to show the antiquity and observance of the offering up of the first fruits among the most ancient and civilized nations. Which though it may seem a digression, yet I hope not wholly unacceptable, it being likewise the offering of my first fruits, and therefore the more seasonable.

§ 4. Proceed we now to other festival solemnities, to see what evidences of a society for worship we find in them. And for this it is apparent that the first original of festivals among the heathen was for the honour of the gods. Upon which account a grave and prudent author accounts the observation of some festivals natural; because nature doth dictate the necessity of some society for the worship of God. For thus *Strabo*,<sup>3</sup> “This is a common observance, as well of the Greeks as of foreign nations, to sacrifice on festival days, and the propriety of this nature itself dictates.”<sup>4</sup> Hence the Greeks, as *Athenæus*<sup>5</sup> observes, πάσης ευωχίας τὴν αἰτίαν εἰς τὸν θεὸν ἀνεφερον, used to say, “that their gods begged them all their play days.” After telling us of the mirth and jollity used at their sacrifices, which was always the second course at these festivals, thence the Jews called their high festival days ימים מועדים “good days, or days of mirth.” We read of few nations but had these festival solemnities for the honour

<sup>1</sup> Vossius de 1 loc. l. 2, cap. 59.

<sup>2</sup> Græc. Fer. 2.

<sup>3</sup> Geogr. l. 10.

<sup>4</sup> Κεῖνον τοῦτο καὶ τῶν Ἑλλήνων καὶ τῶν Βαρβάρων ἐστὶ, τὸ τὰς ἱεραποιῶν μετὰ ἀνεσέως ἑορταστικῆς ποιεῖσθαι καὶ τοῦθ' ἡ φύσις οὕτως ὑπαγορεύει.

<sup>5</sup> Deipnosoph. lib. 9.

of their gods. The *Persians* had theirs for their god *Mithras*. The *Babylonians*, saith *Athenæus* out of *Berosus*,<sup>1</sup> had their feast *Sacæa*, which *Casaubon* would have called *Sesacæa*, because *Babylon* in Scripture is called *ששן Sesac*, as the *Ludi Romani* were from *Rome*. It is to no purpose to mention the festivals observed by the *Greeks* and *Romans* in honour of their gods, being so many, that whole books have been composed of them. That which I observe from hence, is, that societies for the worship of God are natural; because of their solemn resting from their ordinary labour upon days appointed for the honour of their gods; thereby showing, they looked upon those as peculiar days, and themselves as peculiar societies upon those days, from what they were at other times. One thing more evidences this among them; their solemn and secret mysteries, which were societies on purpose, as pretended, for this very end, in honour of their gods. Their σεμνα, μεγαλα, φριχτα μυσηρια, "their solemn, great, and terrible mysteries," as they were wont to call them, preserved with the greatest secrecy by the εποπται, "initiated inspectors." Their great and lesser *Eleusinian*, *Samothracian*, *Cotyttian*, *Mithriacal* mysteries, to which none were admitted without passing through many degrees, καθαρισς, μυησις, συσασις, "purification, initiation, and confirmation," before they came to be εποπται, "perfectly initiated." Wherein they were much imitated by the Christians in the celebration of the Lord's supper, about the fourth or fifth century, as is largely shown by *Casaubon* in a most learned *diatriba*, "disquisition," on this subject in his exercitations, to which I refer the reader. We see what strict rules they had for admission into these most impious societies. In those of *Mithras*, as *Suidas* and *Nonnus*<sup>2</sup> tell us, they passed through eighty degrees, before they were thoroughly initiated, and seldom escaped with life. However we may gain from them this general notion, that they looked on a peculiar distinct society, as necessary for the worship and honour of the deity they served. Thus we see *à posteriori* how a distinct society for God's worship appears to be a dictate of nature.

We shall now see if we can evidence *à priori*, that it is a dictate of nature, that there must be some society for the

<sup>1</sup> Deipnos. l. 14, cap. 10. V. Meursii Græc. Arist. Castellon. εορτολογον. Hospin. de Festis. Mich. Benth. de Fastis.

<sup>2</sup> Exercit. in Bas. 16, s. 42, sed vide Gothofred. in Tim. iii. 16. Salmas. in Hist. Aug. p. 31, 33. Suidas inv. Mithras. Nonnus in Naz. Stetit. p. 132. Meursium in Eleusiais.

worship of God. Three things will make that appear. *First*, the sociableness of man's nature. Man is ἀγελαιον τι, "something gregarious," a creature that loves to herd itself with those of his own kind. Α'νευ γαρ φιλου, ουδεις αν ελοιτο ζην εχων τα λοιπα αγαθα παντα. "If a man had all other comforts of life, and wanted society, he would not think his life worth leading," as *Aristotle*<sup>1</sup> observes, who further takes notice of the sociableness of man's nature: "Οθεν τους φιλανθρωπους επαινουμεν, "whence we commend courteous and affable men." I deny not, but in the entering into a civil state or society, either fear, or profit, might be a main inducement to it; but though it be an inducement, yet there must be supposed an inclinableness to a society; or a commonwealth might be as soon set up among tigers as men. So that they have very little ground of reason, who from the external inducements of fear, or profit, in entering into civil societies, do conclude against the sociableness of man's nature. If then man's nature be sociable in all other things, then nature will tell men, they ought to be so in things of common concernment to them all, and which is every one's work or duty, as religion is; if in other things men are sociable, much more in this. For *secondly*, religion gives a great improvement to man's sociable nature; and therefore *Plutarch*<sup>2</sup> well calls religion συνεκτικον απασης κοινωνιας και νομοθεσιας εξεισμα. "A foundation that knits and joints societies together." And thence wisely observes, that in the constitution of laws, πρωτον εστιν η περι θεων δοξα και μεγαλον: "the first and greatest thing to be looked at, is, the religion established," or the opinions men entertain of the gods. To which he subjoins this excellent reason, "That it is more impossible for a commonwealth either to be formed or subsist without religion, than a city to stand without foundations."<sup>3</sup> Thence, a prudent statesman<sup>4</sup> called *religion*, the best *reason of state*. It appears then evidently from reason and experience, that religion hath a great influence upon the modelling and ordering civil societies, whence, as the same *moralist* observes, *Lycurgus* did, as it were, consecrate the *Lacedæmonians* with religious rites, as *Numa* the *Romans*, *Jon* the *Athenians*, and *Deucalion* the *Hellens*. Whence some half-witted men, (but I know not whether more defective in wit, or grace), have, (observing the great influence

<sup>1</sup> Aristot. Nicom. l. 8, c. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Moral. adverse. Colotem.

<sup>3</sup> Πολις αν μοι δοκει μαλλον εδαφους χωρις, η πολιτεια της περι θεων δοξης αναιρεθειας, πανταπασι συσασιν λαβειν η λαβουσα τερυσαι.

<sup>4</sup> Lord Bacon, Essay of a King.

religion hath to keep men in order), been ready to look upon it as only a politic device, to awe men with greater ease. It is not here a place largely to examine and refute this unworthy pretence. Only I adjure them by their only goddess, reason, to tell me, whence come men to be ἐμπαθείς πρὸς τὰ θεῖα δι' ἐλπίδων ἅμα καὶ φόβων, as *Plutarch* expresses it, "To be so easily awed by the hopes and fears of another life more than other creatures are? Why are they at all affected with the discourse of them? Why cannot they shake off the thoughts of these things when they please? Are not men hereby made the most miserable of creatures? For no other creature can be persuaded that it shall ever quench its thirst in those rivers of pleasures, nor make its bed in everlasting flames. The beasts of *Sardinia* that have their only refreshment by the dew of heaven, yet have never any hopes to come there. The lion never keeps from his prey by the thoughts and fears of a great tribunal. But suppose only mankind of all creatures should be liable to be thus imposed on, as is pretended; how comes it to pass that in no age of the world this imposture hath not been discovered, confuted, and shaken off by some people as wise as themselves? Or have there never been any such in the world? But whence come some men then to be wiser than others? Whence come some to know things which all the reason in the world could never find out, without revelation? Whence comes a power to do anything above the course of nature, if there be nothing but nature? Or are all men deceived that believe such things? If so, then there must be somewhat that must deceive men; they would not deceive themselves, and could not be so long imposed upon by others; there must be then some evil spirit to do it; and whence should that come? from nature too? but then whence comes nature? from itself too, or from something else? Did it make itself, or was it made by a greater power than it? If it made itself, it must be and not be at the same time; it must be as producing, and not be as produced by that act. And what has become of our reason now? There must be then a supreme, eternal, infinite Being, who made the world and all in it; which hath given nature such a *touch* of its own immortality and dependence upon God, that reason capable of religion is the most proper distinctive character of man from all inferior beings. And this *touch* and sense being common to the whole nature, they therefore incline more to one another's society in the joint performance of the common duties, due from them to their Maker. And so



religion not only makes all other bonds firm, (which without it are nothing, as oaths, covenants, promises, and the like, without which no civil society can be upheld,) but must of itself be supposed especially to tie men in a nearer society to one another, in reference to the proper acts belonging to itself. *Thirdly*, it appears from the greater honour which redounds to God by a sociable way of worship. Nature that dictates that God should be worshipped, doth likewise dictate that worship should be performed in a way most for the honour and glory of God. Now this tends more to promote God's honour, when his service is owned as a public thing, and men do openly declare and profess themselves his subjects. If the honour of a king lies in the publicly professed and avowed obedience of a multitude of subjects; it must proportionably promote and advance God's honour more to have a fixed, stated worship, whereby men may in a community and public society declare and manifest their homage and fealty to the Supreme governor of the world. Thus then we see the light of nature dictates there should be a society and joining together of men for and in the worship of God.

## CHAPTER IV.

The second thing the law of nature dictates, that this society be maintained and governed in the most convenient manner. A further inquiry, what particular orders for government in the Church come from the law of nature. Six laid down, and evidenced to be from thence. First, a distinction of some persons, and their superiority over others, both in power and order, cleared to be from the law of nature. The power and application of the power distinguished; this latter not from any law of nature binding, but permissive: therefore may be restrained. People's right of choosing Pastors considered. Order distinguished from the form and manner of government: the former natural, the other not. The second is, that the persons employed in the service of God, should have respect answerable to their employment, which appears from their relation to God as his servants; from the persons employed in this work before positive laws. Masters of families the first Priests. The priesthood of the first born before the Lord discussed: the arguments for it answered. The conjunction of civil and sacred authority largely showed, among Egyptians, Grecians, Romans, and others. The ground of separation of them afterwards, from *Plutarch* and others.

§ 1. THE *second* thing which the light of nature dictates, in reference to church government, is, that the society in which men join for the worship of God, be preserved, maintained, and governed in the most convenient manner. Nature, which requires society, doth require government in that society, or else it is no society. Now we shall inquire what particular orders for government of this society established for the worship of God, do flow from the light of nature, which I conceive are these following.

First, *To the maintaining of a society, there is requisite a distinction of persons, and a superiority of power and order, in some over the other.* If all be rulers, every man is *sui juris*, and so there can be no society, or each man must have power over the other, and that brings confusion. There must be some then invested with power and authority over others, to rule them in such things wherein they are to be subordinate to them; that is, in all things concerning that society they

are entered into. Two things are implied in this: first, power; secondly, order. By power, I mean a right to govern; by order, the superiority of some as rulers, the subordination of others as ruled. These two are so necessary, that no civil society in the world can be without them: for if there be no power, how can men rule? If no order, how can men be ruled, or be subject to others as their governors? Here several things must be heedfully distinguished. *The power* from the *application* of that *power*, which we call the title to government. *The order itself* from the *form or manner of government*. Some of these I assert as absolutely necessary to all government of a society, and consequently of the church, considered without positive laws; but others to be accidental, and therefore variable. I say then that there be a governing power in the church of God, is immutable, not only by virtue of God's own constitution, but as a necessary result from the dictate of nature, supposing a society; but whether this power must be derived by succession, or by a free choice, is not at all determined by the light of nature; because it may be a lawful power, and derived either way: and the law of nature as binding, only determines of necessities. Now in civil government, we see that a lawful title is by succession in some places, as by election in other. So in the church under the law, the power went by lineal descent, and yet a lawful power: and on the other side, none deny, (setting aside positive laws,) but it might be as lawful by choice and free election. The main reason of this is, that the title or manner of conveying authority to particular persons, is no part of the preceptive obligatory law of nature, but only of the permissive; and consequently is not immutable, but is subject to divine or human positive determinations, and thereby made alterable: and supposing a determination, either by scripture or lawful authority, the exercise of that natural right is so far restrained as to become sinful, according to the third proposition under the 2d hypoth. and the 5th hypoth. So that granting at present, that people have the right of choosing their own pastors; this right being only a part of the permissive law of nature, may be lawfully restrained and otherwise determined, by those that have lawful authority over the people, as a civil society, according to the 5th hypoth. If it be pleaded that they have a right by divine positive law, that law must be produced, it being already proved, that no bare example, without a declaration by God that such an example binds, doth constitute a divine right which is unalterable. We say then, that the

manner of investing church governors in their authority, is not determined by the law of nature; but that there should be a power governing, is, (supposing a society,) of the immutable law of nature, because it is that without which no society can be maintained. And this is one of those things which are of the law of nature, not in an absolute state of liberty; but supposing some acts of men, which, (once supposed,) become immutable, and indispensable. As supposing propriety, every man is bound to abstain from what is another's, without his consent, by an immutable law of nature; which yet supposes some act of man, *viz.* the voluntary introducing of propriety by consent. So supposing a society in being, it is an immutable dictate of the law of nature, that a power of government should be maintained and preserved in it.

§ 2. So I say for the second thing, order. This, as it implies the subordination of some in a society to others as their rulers, is immutable and indispensable; but as to the form whereby that order should be preserved, that is, whether the government should be in the hands of one or more, is no wise determined by the obligatory law of nature; because either of them may be lawful and useful for the ends of government, and so neither necessary by that law: for as to the law of nature, the case is the same in civil and religious societies; now who will say, that according to the law of nature, any form of government, monarchy, aristocracy, democracy, is unlawful. These things are then matters of natural liberty, and not of natural necessity, and therefore must be examined according to positive determinations of divine and human laws. This then is clear as to our purpose, that a power in the church must be constantly upheld and preserved, fitly qualified for the ends of government, is an immutable law; so that this power be lodged in some particular persons to act as governors, and so distinct from others as subordinate to them; but whether the power of government come from people by election, or from pastors by ordination, or from magistrates by commission and delegation; whether one, two, or all these ways, is not determined by natural law, but must be looked for in God's positive laws; if not there to be found, we must acquiesce in what is determined by lawful authority. The same I say again, as to forms of government, whether the power of sole jurisdiction, and ordination, be invested in one person above the rank of presbyters, or be lodged in a college acting in a parity of power, is a plea that must be removed from the court of common law of nature, to the king's bench;



I mean to the positive laws of God, or the supreme power in a commonwealth: there being no statutes in the law of nature to determine it: it must be therefore *placitum regis*, "the pleasure of the king," some positive law must end the controversy. We therefore traverse the suit here, and shall enter it at the other court.

The second thing dictated by the law of nature is, "that the persons employed in the immediate service of God, and entrusted with the power of governing the society appointed for that end, should have respect paid them answerable to the nature of their employment. This appears to have foundation in the law of nature, being easily deducible from one of the first principles of that law, that God is to be worshipped; if so, then those whose employment is chiefly to attend upon himself, ought to have greater reverence than others. By the same reason in nature, that if we do honour the king himself, the nearer any are to the king's person in attendance and employment, the greater honour is to be showed them. The ground of which is, that the honour given to servants as such, is not given to their persons, but to their relation, or to the one only upon the account of the other; and so it doth not fix and terminate upon themselves, but rebounds back, and reflects upon the original and fountain of that honour, the prince himself: so if any be honoured upon the account of their immediate employment in the service of God, it is God who is chiefly honoured, and not they; it being the way men have to express their honour to God, by showing it proportionably and respectively to those who either represent him, or are employed by him. Εἰς τον των ὄλων δεσποτην ἡ τιμη διαβαινει as *Chrysostom*<sup>1</sup> speaks in this very case. *The honour passeth through them to God himself.* Where he largely proves this very thing from the Egyptians sparing the lands of their priests; and argues at least for an equality of honour, from reason, to be given to those who serve the true God. Nay, he is so far from looking upon it as part of their superstition, that he mounts his argument *à pari*, "from an equal," to one *à minori ad majus*, "from a less to a greater," that is, "as much as truth exceeds error, and the servants of God do the idol priests; so much let the honour we give to them exceed that which was given by the heathen to theirs."<sup>2</sup> But

<sup>1</sup> Homil. 65, in Gen. xlvii. 26, tom. i. p. 506. Ed. Savil.

<sup>2</sup> ΑΛΛ ὅση ἡ διαφορα της πλανης προς την αληθειαν, & των εκεινων ιερων προς τους του Θεου ιερεις, τοσαυτην διαφορον & περι την τιμην επιδειξωμεθα.

we have a further evidence of the honourableness of this employment, by the light of nature, from the persons employed in this work, before any positive laws did restrain it: for I say not, that the law of nature doth dictate, that the function of those employed in this work should be differenced from all others; that is done by divine positive laws; but the honour of those in that function is from the law of nature: which appears hence, that in the oldest times, those who had the greatest authority civil, had likewise the sacred conjoined with it. For as *Aristotle*<sup>1</sup> rightly observes, that the original of civil government was from private families: so in those families, before they came to associate for more public worship, the master of the family was the priest of it.<sup>2</sup> Thence we read of *Noah's* sacrificing, *Abraham's* duty to instruct his family, and his own command for offering up his son: we read of *Jacob's* sacrificing, and *Job's*<sup>3</sup>, and so of others. Every master of the family then was the high priest too, and governed his family, not only as such, but as a religious society.

§ 3. Afterwards, (from what institution we know not; but certainly the reason of it, if it were so, was to put the greater honour upon the eldest son,) it is generally conceived, that the first-born had the priesthood of the family in their possession, till the time of the Levitical law.<sup>4</sup> The Jewish doctors think that was the birthright which *Jacob* procured from his father, and which *Abraham* gave to *Isaac*, when it is said, that he gave him כל "all" that he had: for, saith *Postellus*,<sup>5</sup> if it be meant in a literal sense, how could he give these gifts to his other sons which are mentioned before? Wherefore he conjectures, by that "all," is meant the spiritual knowledge of Christ, which he calls *intellectus generalis*; which might be more proper to him as priest of the family. But the plain meaning is no more, than, when *Abraham* had bestowed legacies on his other children, he left *Isaac hæredem ex asse*, "the heir to his whole estate." I am unwilling to deny a tradition so generally received, among both Jewish and Christian writers, as the priesthood of the first-born before the law; but this I say, I cannot yet find any other ground for it but tradition: no place of scripture giving us sufficient evidence for it, and many against it. That which serves sufficiently for the confutation of it, is that observation of *Theodoret*,<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Politic. lib. i. cap. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. viii. 20; xviii. 19; xxii. 2; xxxi. 54.

<sup>4</sup> V. Selden. de success. ad loc. Heb. cap. 5.

<sup>5</sup> Origin, cap. 15, p. 69.

<sup>3</sup> Job xlii. 8.

<sup>6</sup> Qu. 108, in Gen.

ἐπισημαντίον οὐ ὅτι πανταχού των πρώτοτόκων οἱ μετ' αὐτοὺς προτιμούνται. "It is to be observed, that the younger are always preferred before the first-born."<sup>1</sup> Which he takes notice of from the case he there speaks to, of *Ephraim* and *Manasses*; and so runs it up to *Abel* preferred before *Cain*, *Seth* before *Japheth*, *Abraham* before his elder brethren, *Isaac* before *Ismael*, *Jacob* before *Esau*, *Judas* and *Joseph* before *Reuben*, *Moses* before *Aaron*, and *David* before the rest of his brethren; (although that was after the law.) That place which gives the greatest countenance to the opinion is, "and thou shalt take the Levites for me instead of the first-born:"<sup>2</sup> where it seems, that the first-born were formerly the priests, in whose room the Levites were taken. But with submission to better judgments, I can see nothing implied in this place, but only that God having delivered their first-born in *Egypt*,<sup>3</sup> and calling for them to be sanctified to him,<sup>4</sup> upon the account of the propriety he had in them, in a peculiar manner, by that deliverance, (and not on the account of any special service, for many were very unfit for that by reason of age, and which is observable, God requires as well the first-born of beasts, both to be sanctified and redeemed, *Numbers*, iii. 41;) therefore God now settling a way of worship, he gave the Israelites liberty to redeem them, and, instead of them, pitched on the tribe of *Levi* for his own service. Another place is, *Exodus* xxiv. 5, where the young men are mentioned that offered burnt-offering. It is confessed that the Chaldee paraphrast and Arabic version understand here the first-born; but however the place implies no more than that they were employed to bring the sacrifices, for so the Septuagint render it.<sup>5</sup> καὶ ἐξαπέστειλε τοὺς νεανίσκους τοὺς υἱοὺν Ἰσραὴλ καὶ ἀνηγέχεν ὀλοκαυτώματα, "and he sent young men of the children of Israel, and they brought back burnt-offerings," or else that they were employed as the *popæ*, "sacrificing priests," only to kill the sacrifices; for we see the sprinkling of the blood, which was the main thing intended here as a federal rite, was done by *Moses* himself, who was the high priest of the people as well as prince, till *Aaron* and his sons were set apart, which was not till *Exodus* xxviii. 1, 2, and yet *Aaron* was three years older than *Moses*, *Exodus* vii. 7, which is an evidence that

<sup>1</sup> V. Isidor. Pel. lib. 2, ep. 47, et 48 ad fin.

<sup>2</sup> *Numbers*, iii. 41.

<sup>3</sup> *Exodus*, xii. 23.

<sup>4</sup> *Exodus*, xiii. 2.

<sup>5</sup> V. Selden. de success. ad Pontif. ebr. cap. 1, sed et V. eum de Syned. lib. 1, cap. 16.

*Aaron* as first-born was not the priest; for till his consecration, *Moses*, and not *Aaron*, performed the offices of priesthood. Thence we read, *Psalms* xcix. 6, "*Moses* and *Aaron* among his priests." For although the word כהן, "a priest," be sometimes attributed to those in civil authority, as 2 *Samuel* viii. 18, compared with 1 *Chron.* xviii. 17, and 2 *Sam.* xxvi. 26; *Gen.* xli. 50; *Exodus* ii. 16; *Job* xii. 19, yet there is no reason so to understand it of *Moses*: and further, the ground why כהן was attributed to both prince and priest before the law, was, because the same person might be both; as the priests of *Egypt* were princes too, *Gen.* xli. 50. But for *Moses*, we read not only of the title, but the proper offices of priests attributed to him, as sacrificing, *Exodus* xxiv. 5, consecrating *Aaron* and his sons, *Exodus* xxix. 35, and therefore *Aben Ezra* upon that psalm forecited, calls him כהן הגדול, "the high priest."<sup>1</sup>

§ 4. This priesthood of *Moses* leads us to another evidence of the honour of those who were employed in the service of God, which is that when families increased, and many associated into a commonwealth, though the private service might belong to the master of the family, yet the public, before positive laws restraining it, was most commonly joined with the civil power. That *Melchizedek* was both king and priest in *Salem*; if with the Jews we conclude he was *Sem*, (which we have little reason for,) it will be a greater evidence, *Sem* being then the greatest potentate living. But we pass from him to other nations after the dispersion, to see where the power over religious societies was generally held. In *Egypt* we find that their priests were often made kings, as *Plutarch*<sup>2</sup> observes out of *Hecateus*, and is confessed by *Strabo*, *Diodorus*, and others. Of the Greeks the same *Plutarch* gives us a large testimony, that among them αντιρροπον ην το της ιεροσυνης αξιωμα προς το της βασιλειας "the priesthood was accounted of equal dignity with the kingdom." The same doth *Aristotle* in several places of his politics: and particularly of the *Spartans*, of whom *Herodotus*<sup>3</sup> adds, that the priesthood of *Jupiter Cælestis* and *Lacedæmonius* did always belong to the king's own person. For the old Latins, *Virgil's Anius* is sufficient: and among the Romans after the powers were separated, the *Pontifex Max.* had royal state, his *cella curulis*, chair of state,

<sup>1</sup> V. Selden. de Syned. l. 2, cap. 2, s. 3.

<sup>2</sup> Plut. de Is. & Osiad. Str. Geog. l. 17. Quest. Rom. 110. Politic. l. 3, cap. 10, 11, l. 6, cap. 8, lib. 3, c. 4.

<sup>3</sup> Herod. l. 6, V. Crag. de rep. Laced. lib. 2, c. 2.



or chief magistrate, and *Lictores*, the marshals, as the consuls had, only their priests meddled not in civil affairs, of which *Plutarch* gives a double reason, the impossibility of minding both employments as they should<sup>1</sup> do, and so must either *ασεβειν τους θεους*, “neglect the worship of the gods,”<sup>1</sup> or else *θλαπειν τους πολιτας*, “wrong the people,” with the neglect of the administration of justice. The other reason is, because those that were employed in civil affairs, were put upon execution of justice; and it was no ways fit a man should come reeking from the blood of citizens, to go and sacrifice to the gods. This conjunction of civil and sacred power is attested by *Clemens Alexandrinus*<sup>2</sup> of the most civilized heathens; so likewise by *Synesius* of the most ancient nations, by *Strabo* of the *Ephesians*, by the Roman historians of the Roman emperors, who from *Augustus* to *Gratian*, and some say after, continued the title of *Pontifex Maximus* among the rest of the imperial honours. Thus much then may serve to manifest how the honour of those persons who are employed in the service of God, and the government of religious societies is a dictate of the law of nature.

<sup>1</sup> Qu. Rom. 110.

<sup>2</sup> Strom. l. 7, ep. 121, Geog. l. 14, Sueton. in Aug. c. 31, V. Casaub. in l. & Seld. de Syned. l. 1, c. 10.

## CHAPTER V.

The third thing dictated by the Law of Nature, is the solemnity of all things to be performed in this society; which lies in the gravity of all rites and ceremonies; in the composed temper of mind. God's worship rational. His spirit destroys not the use of reason. The enthusiastic spirit discovered. The circumstantiating of fit time and place for worship. The seventh day, on what account so much spoken of by Heathens. The Romans' holy days. Cessation of labour upon them. The solemnity of ceremonies used. *Χεῖνιψ, περιπατηγια*, "Silence in devotions." Exclusion of unfit persons. Solemnity of discipline: excommunication among the Jews by the sound of a trumpet; amongst Christians by a bell.

§ 1. THE next thing in reference to religious societies which nature dictates, is, *That all things, either pertaining to the immediate worship of God, or belonging to the government of that society, be performed with the greatest solemnity and decency that may be.* Which dictate ariseth from the nature of the things themselves; which being most grave and serious, do require the greatest gravity and seriousness in the doing of them. And therefore any ceremonies, actions, or gestures, which tend to the discomposing men's spirits, are upon that account to be exploded out of any religious societies, as being so directly repugnant to the nature, design, and performance of religious duties. Wherefore that is the standing rule of all instituted ceremonies, by the law of nature in the worship of God, that they be such as tend immediately to the advancing the serenity, tranquillity, and composure of their minds who observe them; and not such which in their own nature, or by continual custom of the users of them, do either rarefy men's spirits too much into a superficial lightness and vanity of spirit; or else sink them too much below the command of reason, into the power of unruly passions. A clear and composed spirit, is only fit for converse with things of so high a nature. That region which is nearest Heaven, is the freest from clouds and vapours, as well as those dancing meteors, which hover about in a light uncertain motion. It

strangely unbecomes the majesty of religious worship to have anything vulgar, trivial, much more ridiculous in it. The worship of God is *λατρεία λογική*, a "rational worship,"<sup>1</sup> as well in regard of that reason which should moderate and govern the manner of service, as in regard of those faculties which should be most employed in it; or the foundation which the service hath upon the dictates of men's natural reason.

§ 2. And as nature tells us, there should be nothing too light or superficial, so neither anything whereby men are carried beyond the bounds of their own reason: for what men do at such a time, is not their own proper act, but is more properly to be ascribed to the power, strength, and excess of a melancholy fancy, or else to a higher enthusiastical spirit, which then actuates and informs their fancies: and therefore it hath been well observed, as a *characteristic* difference between the true *prophetic* spirit, and the false and counterfeit; that the one leaves men in the free use of their reason and faculties; the other alienates them by panic, fears, tremblings, and consternations both of body and mind. To which purpose many evidences are brought by a late learned writer, in his *Discourse of Prophecy* out of the heathen and christian authors.<sup>2</sup> These latter discovering the vanity of the *Montanistical spirit* by this one observation: which besides the authors there cited,<sup>3</sup> (viz. *Clemens Alexandrinus*, *Miltiades* in *Eusebius*, *Jerom* and *Chrysostom*,) may appear from *Epiphanius*, who largely and excellently discourseth on this subject when he discovers the folly of *Montanus* and his followers: and gives this reason why they could be no true prophets; for those that were so, had *ερῶμεν την διανοίαν, και την διδασκαλίαν και την διαλογην*," "a great consistency of sense, reason, and discourse," and instanceth in *Isaiah* and *Ezekiel*: for saith he, "A true prophet had always the free use of his reason and faculties, and spake from the spirit of God with consistency and coherency of discourse."<sup>4</sup> But it was quite otherwise with the *Montanists*. "They were always trembling, used no consequence of reason in discourse; their words had no proper sense, but were all dark, intricate and obscure."<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Rom. xiii. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Mr. Smith's dis. 6, of Prophecy, chap. 4.

<sup>3</sup> Strom. 1, Eccl. hist. l. 5, 17; præs. in Is. Nahum. Habak. Chrys. in 1 Cor. Hom. 29. Epiph. hæres. 48. Ezek. iv. 14.

<sup>4</sup> 'Ο προφητης μετα καταστάσεως λογισμεν, και παρακολουθησεως ελαλει και εφθεγγετο εν πνευματος αγιου τα παντα ερῶμενως λεγων.

<sup>5</sup> Ουδε ευθαδουντες λαλουνται ουτε παρακολουθησιν λογου εχοντες λοζα, γαρ τα παρ αυτα ρηματα εσκαλιννα εσ ουδεμιας ορθοτητος εχομενα.

An exact description of a late prevailing sect among us, who have their names from those consternations they were wont to fall into, and whose language carried as much obscurity with it, as any of the followers of *Montanus* could wrap up theirs into. One of the great errors of *Montanus* was, the adhering to *enthusiasm* and revelations beyond and beside the written word; which is the *Helena* of our late opinionists, because it gives a liberty for venting any conceptions of their own brains, under the pretence and disguise of a *light within*. But we see hence, how far such tremblings and consternations of body and mind are from a true, sober, prophetic spirit; and how those Christians who lived in the time when the spirit of prophecy had not yet left the church of Christ, (as appears by *Origen*, *Tertullian*, and others:)<sup>1</sup> yet they always looked upon any violent ecstasy or fury, as an evidence of a false prophet. And therefore *Tertullian*, when grown a *Proselyte of Montanus*, endeavours strongly to remove that apprehension of the ecstatical fury of *Montanus*, and *Prisca*, and *Maximilla*, granting if it were true, that it was a mark of a false and counterfeit prophetic spirit. The true prophets I grant of old, were by the strength of the impression of their visions upon their spirits, sometimes thrown into a fit of trembling; but then it was not continually so, and when it was, it might be rather a present astonishment from so strange and unwonted a sight, (as is common in such cases,) or else from the strong apprehension they had of the awful judgments God threatened to the people;<sup>2</sup> but however, it never took from them the free use of their reason and faculties, which were always conversant about the matters revealed unto them. But as *Procopius Gazaru* observes of the false prophets, τοῖς μαινᾶσι εἰσέχσαν, "they were similar to mad men." Which he takes notice of upon occasion of *Saul's* prophecy-ing when the evil spirit came upon him; and interprets with the Jewish writers, of a madness, rather than true prophecy. Such as that of *Cassandra* when she is brought in by *Lycophron*,

Utt'ring a strange, confused noise,  
Much like unto black Sphinx's voice.<sup>3</sup>

Ἀσπετον, saith *Tzotzes*, inexpressible, that is πολλὴν ἀπαξακολουθετον,

<sup>1</sup> Orig. c. Celsum. lib. 2, p. 62. l. 3, p. 124. Tertull. de an. c. 9.

<sup>2</sup> Dan. x. 11. Habak. iii. 16. Procop. Gaz. in 1 Reg. 18. Ed. Meursii.

<sup>3</sup> Ἀσπετον χεῖρα παμμιγῇ βονν,

Σφιγγος κελαινης γηρον οκμιμου μενι νη.—*Lycophr. Alex. p. 2.*



“much incomprehensible,” which is fully described by *Lucan*, of one pretending *enthusiasm*: “From a tranquil breast she utters feigned words, attesting without the murmur of a confused voice, that the mind was moved by a sacred fervour.<sup>1</sup> And soon after, “neither were her words broken by a tremulous sound, nor her voice sufficient to fill the space of the capacious cave.”<sup>2</sup> Whereby he discovers her, not to be a true *enthusiast*, because she used not such a strange confused voice and tremblings as they did who were their proper *enthusiasts*, as the *sybils* and the *Pythian prophetess*. By this we see, that these earthquakes of violent passions are caused by the prince of the air, and not by the gentle breathings of the Divine Spirit: that these convulsions of men’s spirits, are not the consequents of the inhabitation of the good Spirit, but of the violent intrusion of the evil one: that that temper of mind is most suitable to religion, which is as well free from the *bleakness* and *turbulency* of passion, as the faint *gleams* of lightness and vanity.

§ 3. But a further solemnity than this is required by the dictates of nature too, which lies in the circumstantiating of time and place, and a dedication of both to the end of worship. That these are very consonant to natural reason, appears by the universal consent of all nations agreeing in any form of the worship of a deity: who have all had their set times and fixed places to perform this worship in. I shall not insist as some have done, that the seventh day hath been particularly and solemnly observed for the worship of God by the consent of nations: although there be many probable arguments and plausible testimonies brought for a peculiarity of honour to, if not service on, the seventh day, out of *Josephus*,<sup>3</sup> *Aristobulus*, *Judæus*, (and by him from *Linus*, *Hesiod*, *Homer*,) *Clemens Alexandrinus*, *Tertullian*, *Lampridius*, *Seneca*, *Tibullus*, and many others. From which testimonies, it appears that some kind of reverence and honour was given to the seventh day; but whether that day was the seventh of the

<sup>1</sup> ————— sub pectore ficta quieto  
Verba refert, nullo confusæ murmure vocis,  
Instinctam sacro mentem testata furore.

<sup>2</sup> ————— non rupta trementi  
Verba sono, nec vox antri complere capacis  
Sufficiens spatium—————

<sup>3</sup> Joseph. c. App. l. 2. Euseb. Præp. l. 13, cap. 12, Tertul. Apol. c. 16, c. Notion. l. 1, c. 13, Lamprid. vit. Alex. Sever. ep. 95. Tibullus, eleg. 3, l. 1, Lucian. Pseudol. p. 893, ed. Paris.

week, or the seventh of the month; (which was consecrated among the Greeks to *Apollo*, upon which also the *Θαγγηλια* festivals celebrated alike to Diana and Apollo, and *Πανεψια*, feasts chiefly in October, when pulse was dedicated to the Cynthian god, and the seventh of every month was observed in honour of him;) whether the title of *ἱερον ἡμας* "sacred day," did belong to the seventh as one of the *εορτασμοι* *οἱ* *αποφευγες* "festival or inauspicious days," (for it was common to both); whether observed by any public religious custom, or by some private superstition, are things too large to inquire into, and not necessary for my present purpose; it being sufficient in order to that, if they had any set times at all for worship, which shows how solemn the worship of God ought to be. And this is not denied by any, it being so necessary a consequence of the duty of worship that there must be a time for performance of it. And not only in general that there must be some time, but a sufficient proportion of time to be consecrated to the public exercise of piety, both from the consideration of man's obligation to divine service from his nature, from the weight and concernment of the things that time is employed in, and the inward sense of immortality upon the soul of man. But then what this proportion of time must exactly be, I see not how mere natural light could determine it, but it would rather suggest it to be highly reasonable to wait for and expect such a determination from the Supreme Rector and Governor of the world. It being far more fit for the master to prescribe unto the servant what proportion of service he expects from him, than that the servant should both divide and choose his own time, and the proportion of service which he owes to his master. Nay, it being so much more reasonable for us to wait for God's ear, than for a servant for his master's, as God's power and dominion over the creature is greater than that of a master over his servant; as it is the voice and sense of nature that God's commands cannot otherwise be but just, holy, reasonable and good: which may be otherwise from men; as the acceptance of our persons with God, lies not barely in the work done, but in the doing it out of obedience to the commands of God, which is otherwise with men; as God can give strength to perform what he commands, which man cannot: which things considered make it evident to be highly reasonable that God himself should prescribe the proportion of time, and not man's nature. But when God hath thus determined it, nature cannot but assent to that particular determination, that in consideration of the works of

God, it is most reasonable that rather one day in a week, than one in a month, should be dedicated to God's service; that the seventh day of the week upon God's resting on that day and sanctifying it, should be the precise day, unless some reason equivalent to that of the first institution, and approved by God for that end, be the ground of its alteration to another of the seven, which is the reason of the change under the gospel.

§ 4. As an evidence of the solemnity of times of worship, the *Romans* as well as other nations had their several *feriæ*; their days set apart for the honour of their gods. In which *Macrobius* tells us the priests held them polluted.<sup>1</sup> "If any work were done upon those days of rest, the day was polluted, and the person punished," unless it were as *Umbro* there affirms, in order to the honour of their gods, or for necessities of life. To which purpose *Scævola* answered him that asked, what work must be done upon the *feriæ*: *Quod prætermisum noceret*; "What would be spoiled by letting alone;" as taking an ox out of a ditch, strengthening a beam likely to fall and ruin men; and thence *Maro* allowed it lawful to wash sheep, if it were to cure, and not merely to cleanse them.

In the healthy stream to plunge the bleating flock."<sup>2</sup>

*Servius*<sup>3</sup> informs us likewise that the priests, when they went to sacrifice, sent their servants before to bid all tradesmen to leave working, "Lest by following their work they both offend them and the gods too. For these holy-days are devoted to the service of the gods."<sup>4</sup> *Festus*<sup>5</sup> saith that upon their *dies religiosi*, *nisi quod necesse est, nefas habetur facere*, "nothing but works of pure necessity were to be done." But by *dies religiosi* probably he means the *dies atri et nefasti*; their "ominous, unlucky days," as they accounted them. But, however, *Macrobius* distinguisheth the days among the *Romans* into *dies festi profesti et intercesi*. The *Festi* were dedicated to the gods, the *Profesti* to their own

<sup>1</sup> Si indictis conceptisque opus aliquod fieret; prætereâ regem sacrorum flaminesque non licebat videre feriis opus fieri, et idcò per præconem denuntiabatur nè quid tale ageretur, et præcepti negligens multabatur.—*Macrob. Saturnal.* l. 1, c. 16.

<sup>2</sup> Balantumque gregem fluvio mersare salubri.

<sup>3</sup> *Servius Honor.* in *Vigil. Georgic.* l.

<sup>4</sup> Ne pro negotio suo et ipsorum oculos et Deorum ceremonias contaminent; *Feriæ* enim operæ Deorum creditæ sunt.

<sup>5</sup> *Festus V. religios.*

works, the *Intercisi* were divided between both, at some hours of which it was lawful to follow their employments, at others not. "While the victim was killing no courts of judicature were opened,"<sup>1</sup> (in which the prætor might *fari tria verba solemnia*, "pronounce the three solemn words," *Do, dico, addico*; or *do*, "I give the state of the action and appoint the judges;" *dico*, "pronounce the sentence;" *addico*, "I adjudge;" thence called *dies fasti* "pleading days,") but between the killing the sacrifice and offering up the entrails (called *porrecta* from *porricere, exta*, "to stretch or lay out the entrails," which was *verbum sacrificiale pervetustum*, "a very old sacrificial word," saith *Turnebus*,<sup>2</sup> *exta diis cum dabant, porricere dicebantur*, "when they offered the entrails to the gods they were said to stretch them out," Varro,) then it was lawful to open the courts; but again when the sacrifice was offered, it was not. By which we see as from the light of nature, that what days and times, whether weekly, monthly, or anniversary, were designed and appointed, as *dies festi*,<sup>3</sup> for the service of God, were to be spent wholly in order to that end, and not to give some part to God, and take others to themselves: as they were wont to do in their sacrifices, to offer up some part to the gods, and feast upon the rest themselves; as *Athenæus*<sup>4</sup> tells us that *Conon* and *Alcibiades* offered such *hecatombs* to the gods, that they entertained the people upon the remainders of them. And from hence we may see how far short of natural light their religion falls, who make no scruple of spending a great part of the days devoted to God's worship in following either their employments or recreations. Which latter seem more directly to impugn the end of such time appointed than the other, inasmuch as recreations tend more to the rarefying men's spirits, and evaporating them into lightness and vanity, and so discomposing them for the duties of spiritual worship, than men's serious and lawful callings do. But further, we observe, among the *Romans* several days appointed for public worship. *Macrobius*<sup>5</sup> reckons up four sorts of them, *Stativæ, Conceptivæ, Imperativæ, et Nundinæ*. *Stativæ*, were the set festival days observed every year by the whole people, and marked for that end in their *Fasti*. Such were the *Agonalia*, "in honour of Janus," *Carmentalia*, "to Carmenta,

<sup>1</sup> Nam cum hostia cæditur, fari nefas est; inter cæsa et porrecta, fari licet; rursus cum adoletur, non licet.

<sup>2</sup> Advers. l. 24, c. 13.

<sup>4</sup> Deipnos. l. 1.

<sup>3</sup> De Rust. l. 1, c. 29.

<sup>5</sup> Saturn. l. 1, c. 16.



mother of Evander," *Lupercalia*, "to Lycean Pan," which are marked with red letters in the *fasti consulares*, or the *Calendarium Romanum*, "consular holy-days, in the Roman calendar;" by *Jos. Scaliger*<sup>1</sup> called *Calendarium Colotisnum*, which may be seen at large in *Mr. Selden*: besides which, their other anniversary festivals are there set down: which *Tertullian* saith, being all put together, *pentecostem implere non poterunt*, "could not make up the number of fifty;" and so not so many as our Lord's days in a year are. *Conceptivæ*, were such festivals as were annually observed, but the days of the keeping them were every year determined by the magistrates or priests, as *Latinæ*, "the Latin holy-days," *Sementivæ*, "festivals in seed time," *Paganalia*, "celebrated in villages to their tutelary gods, to the Lares, in places where several ways meet; hence, *Compitalia*, feasts in honour of their rural gods, from *compitum*, place where several ways meet." *Imperativæ*, were such as the *consuls* or *prætors* did command at their own pleasure. Such were their solemn *supplications* in times of trouble, and their days of triumph and thanksgiving for victories. The *Nundinæ* were those which returned every "ninth day," and therefore the letter by which they observed the return of the ninth day, was H, as among us Christians G, which because it notes the return of the Lord's day, we call the *Dominical* letter. These *Nundinæ* were the days when the country people brought in their wares into the city to be sold, which were anciently observed as festival days, sacred to *Jupiter*; but by the *Lex Hortensia* were made *dies fasti*, for determining the controversies that might arise among the people in their dealings; as the *court of pyepowder* was instituted among us upon the same account. So much for the solemnity of time used in the service of God.

§ 5. Another evidence of the solemnity of worship, was the extraordinary care of the heathens in preparing themselves for it, by cleansing and purifying themselves with water, for which purpose they had their *χερὺς*, "lustral or concentrated water," for cleansing their hands, and their *λουτήριον*, "a bath," and *περιεργαστήρια*, "instruments for sprinkling water around," standing at the porch of their temples for their whole bodies, which custom was generally observed by the heathens, as is very obvious in the several writers of their customs in sacrificing; besides which they observed likewise this washing

<sup>1</sup> De jure Nat. apud Heb. l. 3, cap. 15. De Idolol. c. 14.

with water, by way of lustration and expiation of their faults, as *Triclinius* the scholiast on *Sophocles* tells us, it was an ancient custom when men had murdered others, ὕδατι ἀπονιπτεῖν τὰς χεῖρας εἰς κάθαρσιν τοῦ μiasματος, “to wash their hands in expiation of their guilt;” as *Orestes* did in *Pausanias* after the killing his mother, and some think *Pilate* in the gospel did so for the same end; but his was only to declare his innocency, and not to expiate his sin, as is observed by many upon that place.<sup>1</sup> But, however, from hence we may take notice of the spring and fountain of the pope’s holy water: which was consecrated by *Numa* long before *Alexander I.* to whom *Polydore*, *Virgil* and others attribute the first use of it in the Christian church: and as the use of it, and the manner of sprinkling it is the same among the papists, as it was among the heathen; so likewise the end of it: witness the old rhyme:

May this consecrated water wash out my sins.<sup>2</sup>

Which may be sufficiently answered with the censure of a heathen;

Too easy souls who think the spots of blood  
Can be wash’d out with every wat’ry flood.<sup>3</sup>

But from this I pass to the solemnity in their worship itself, evidenced by the general silence commanded in it; which appears by *Horace’s Favete linguis*, “favour with your tongues.” *Ovid’s Ore favent populi nunc cum venit aurea pompa*,<sup>4</sup> “now, when comes the splendid pomp, the people applaud with their acclamations.” *Virgil’s fida silentia sacris*, “silence favourable to sacred rites.” *Festus’s Linguam pascite*, i. e. *coerceto*, “restrain the tongue.” The *Egyptians* setting *Harpocrates’* image in the entrance to their temples, and the *Romans* placing the statue of *Angerona* on the altar of *Volupia*. The Greeks had their κήρυκες, “heralds,” which did ἡσυχίαν κατακχευτεῖν ἐν ἱεροῖς, “proclaim silence to be kept in their worship,” as *Julius Pollux*<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Hom. Iliad. Apoli. Argon. l. 1. Casaub. ad Theophr. περὶ δεισιδαιμ. i. Saub. de sacri. cap. 12. Paus. l. 2. Matth. xxvii. 24. Casaub. ad Bar. exer. 16, s. 75. Baron. ad An. Christi, 34. Montacutius Orig. Eccles. tom. 1, l. 2, p. 388. Vossius Harm. Evang. l. 2, cap. 5. V. Mayorum de Papa, Rom. l. 1, c. 32. De Croy. Conf. 1, c. 33. Ov. d. Fast. lib. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Hæc aqua benedicta, deleat mihi mea delicta.

<sup>3</sup> Ah nimium faciles qui tristia crimina cædis  
Tolli fluminè posse putatis aqua.

<sup>4</sup> V. Brisson. de formulas, lib. 1, p. 8.

<sup>5</sup> Onom. lib. 1, c. 12.

tells us, which *Plautus* calls *facere audientiam*, “to command silence;” much as the deacons afterwards did in the primitive church, who were wont to command silence by their *Orarium*, “a handkerchief kept to wave before the people,” and were thence called *κηρυκες* among the Christians, (for although *κηρύττειν*, as applied to the bishop and presbyters, did signify *δμιλεῖν*, “to discourse,” and *επαγγελλεσθαι* to *preach*; yet as it was applied to the deacons, it implied only their commanding silence in order to the prayers of the *catechumens*, called *παράθεσεις*, “a precept or its sign,” as *Aristenus*<sup>1</sup> observes on *Concil. Carthag. can.* 106; but this by the way.) The *formula* used by the *Greeks* in commanding silence, was, *ἀκουετε λαοι*, to which *Aristonicus* the fiddler alluded when in the market-place of *Mylossa*, a town in *Caria*, he saw many temples, and but few citizens, he cried out *ἀκουετε ναοι* instead of *ἀκουετε λαοι*, “hear ye temples, instead of hear ye people.”<sup>2</sup> But I pass these things over, as being commonly known, only observing from them the solemnity of their public devotions; which is further seen in their solemnly excluding unfit persons from partaking with them in their sacrifices. Of which *Virgil*, *Ovid*, *Statius*, *Silius Italicus*, and others among the *Romans*<sup>3</sup> speak; and the lictor in some sacrifices stood up, saith *Festus*, and cried aloud, “*Hostis, mulier vinctus exesto*, i. e. *extra esto*, “an enemy, a woman, a criminal, stand without;” and to keep unfit persons the better off, the *Flamines*, “high priest,” had a *commentaculum*, “a kind of rod,” in their hands. Among the *Greeks* the old form continued from *Orpheus* or *Onomacritus* his *Orphaica*, *ἔκας, ἐκασεζε βεβηλοι*, “far, far off, ye profane,” and those that sacrifice, asked *τις τηδε*, “who is here?” the other answered, *πολλοι καγαθοι*, “many, and the good.”<sup>4</sup> From all these things laid together, we see the great solemnity used by them in their worship, which considered in itself, was not the product of superstition, but a dictate of the law of nature. And it seems most natural to the acts of discipline, that they should be performed in the most public solemn manner, and not in any private clandestine way; which being so done, oft times lose the designed effect of them, in making men sensible and ashamed of those miscarriages which made them deserve so sharp and severe a censure. Thence among the *Jews*, their

<sup>1</sup> V. Bau. 5. Alldison de Marthece, vet. Eccles. p. 45, et c. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Anthenius, Deipnos. 8, c. 8.

<sup>3</sup> V. Apud. Briss. de formula, l. 1, et apud Seld. de Syned. lib. 2, cap. 10.

<sup>4</sup> Suidas in *τις τηδε*.

solemn sentence of the greater excommunication was pronounced by the sound of a trumpet; and so they say *Meroz* was excommunicated with four hundred trumpets;<sup>1</sup> and the same number they report were used in excommunicating *Jesus of Nazareth*, which was usually done by the magistrate, or the rector of the university: as they tell us a story of a man coming to buy flesh at *Pombeditha*, (which was one of the three universities of the remaining *Jews* in *Chaldea*, after the return from captivity, the others were *Sora* and *Ne-harda*,) but offering some opprobrious language to *R. Jehuda*, then governor of the university, he makes no more to do, but *prolatus tubis hominen excommunicavit*, “brings out his trumpets and excommunicates him.” And as the use of bells, since their invention, did supply the former use of trumpets in calling the congregation together, (which I suppose was the account of using trumpets in excommunicating from the congregation,) so it seems the bells were sometimes used to ring men out of, as well as into the church; thence the solemn monkish curse, cursing men with *bell*, *book* and *candle*, which can have no other sense but from this practice. So much shall suffice to show the foundation which the solemnity of worship, and the acts belonging to it, have in the dictates of nature manifested by the voice and consent of nations.

<sup>1</sup> Job. Coch. Excerpt. Gen. Sandhed. cap. 1, p. 146. Vostius in Pirke Eliecest. p. 216. Selden de Syned. l. 1, cap. 7.



## CHAPTER VI.

The fourth thing dictated by the Law of Nature, that there must be a way to end controversies arising, which tend to break the peace of the society. The nature of schism considered; liberty of judgment and authority distinguished; the latter must be parted with in religious societies as to private persons. What way the light of nature directs to, for ending controversies, in an equality of power, that the less number yield to the greater: on what Law of Nature that is founded. In a subordination of power that there must be a liberty of appeals defined. Independency of particular congregations considered. Elective Synods. The original of church government as to congregations. The case paralleled between civil and church government. Where appeals finally lodge. The power of calling synods, and confirming their acts in the magistrate.

§ 1. THE *fourth* thing which nature dictates in reference to a church society, is, *That there must be a way agreed upon to determine and decide all those controversies arising in this society, which immediately tend to the breaking the peace and unity of it.* We have seen already that natural reason requires a disparity between persons in a society: to form and constitute a society, there must be order and power in some, there must be inferiority and subjection in others answering to the former; and by these we suppose a society to be now modelled. But nature must either be supposed defective in its designs and contrivances as to the necessities required for the management of them; or else there must likewise be implied a sufficient provision for the maintenance and preservation of the societies thus entered into. It is no wise agreeable to the wisdom of nature to erect a fabric with such materials, which though they may lie one upon the other, yet if not fitly compacted together, will fall in pieces again as soon as it is set up: nor yet to frame a body with mere flesh and bones, and the superiority of some members above the others; for unless there be joints and sinews and ligatures to hold the parts together, the dissolution will immediately follow the formation of it. The end and design of nature is, preservation and continuance, and therefore things necessary

in order to that, must be implied in the first design of the being of the thing; so that at least, as to itself, there be no defect in order to that. This must in reason be supposed in all societies, that when they are first entered, it must be upon such terms as may be sufficient to maintain and keep up those societies in that peace and order which is requisite in order to the continuance of them. For what diseases are to bodies, age and fire are to buildings, that divisions and animosities are to societies, all equally tending to the ruin and destruction of the things they seize upon. And as bodies are furnished by nature, not only with a receptive and concoctive faculty, of what tends to their nourishment, but with an expulsive faculty of what would tend to the ruin of it; so all civil bodies must not only have ways to strengthen them, but must have likewise a power to expel and disperse those noxious humours and qualities which tend to dissolve the frame, and constitution of them. A power then to prevent mischiefs is as necessary in a society, as a power to settle things in order to the advancement of the common good of society. This, therefore, the church as a religious society must likewise be endowed with, *viz.* a power to maintain itself, and keep up its peace and unity: which cannot otherwise be supposed, (considering the *bilious* humour in men's natures, not wholly purged out by Christianity,) without some way to decide controversies which will arise, disturbing the peace of it. For the clearing of this, which much concerns the power and government of the church, we shall consider what the controversies are which tend to break the church's peace; and what way the law of nature finds out for the ending of them, which we are the more necessitated to speak of, because nothing hath begotten controversies more than the power of determining them hath done.

§ 2. The controversies then which tend to break the peace of a religious society, are either matter of different practice, or matter of different opinion. The former, if it comes from no just and necessary cause, and ends in a total separation from that society the person guilty of it was joined with, is justly called *schism*; which, (as one defines it,) is an ecclesiastical sedition, as sedition is a lay-schism; both being directly contrary to that communion and friendliness which should be preserved in all societies. The latter, if impugning somewhat fundamentally, in order to the end of constituting religious societies, or being a less matter, if wilfully taken up, and obstinately maintained, is called *heresy*; which two are sel-

dom seen out of each other's company, and when they are together, are like the blind and lame man in the fable, the one lent the other eyes, and the other lent him feet: one to find out what they desired, the other to run away with it when they had it. The heretic useth his eyes to spy out some cause or pretence of deserting communion; the schismatic helps him with his legs to run away from it; but between them both, they rob the church of its peace and unity. But in order to the making clear what the church's power is in reference to these, we are to take notice of these things. *First*, that the church hath no direct immediate power over men's opinions: so that a matter of mere different opinion lies not properly within the cognizance of any church power; the reason of it is this, because the end of power lodged in the church, is to preserve the peace and unity of itself; now a mere different opinion doth not violate the bonds of society; *Opiniorum diversitas et opinantium unitas non sunt adversaria*, "The diversity of opinions, and the union of those that opine are not inconsistencies." Men may preserve communion under different apprehensions. So long then as diversity of opinion tends not to the breaking the quiet and tranquillity of the church of God, a man may safely enjoy his own private apprehensions, as to any danger of molestation from church governors; that is, so long as a man keeps his opinion to himself, and hath the power of being his own counsellor. It is not the difference of opinion formally considered when it is divulged abroad that is punishable, but the tendency to schism, which lies in the divulging of it, and drawing others away from the received truths: for the opinion itself is an internal act of the mind, and therefore is punishable by no external power, as that of the magistrate or church is; as no internal action is under the jurisdiction or authority of a magistrate, any further than as necessarily conjoined with the outward action, or as it hath a direct influence upon it. The case of blasphemy, which is a thing of the highest nature in this kind, is not punishable by men, as blasphemy implies low and undervaluing thoughts of God; but as being a thing divulged, (else no formal blasphemy,) it tends apparently to the dishonour of God, and consequently to the breaking in pieces all such societies, whose great foundation is the belief of the majesty and glory of God. So idolatry under the law was punished, as it was immediately destructive of that obedience which men did owe to the true God. And under the Gospel, it is not mere difference of opinion, judgment, and

apprehension, which lays men open to the censures of that power which moderates and rules a religious society; but the endeavour by difference of opinion to alienate men's spirits one from another, and thereby to break the society into factions and divisions, is that which makes men liable to restraint and punishment. From whence it follows, that where the peace and unity of the church may be preserved, and yet men keep up different apprehensions of things, there is nothing deserving any severe animadversion from the rulers of that society: for a power corrective, and vindictive, must suppose something acted contrary to the laws and rules of the society, and the end of committing that power into the hands of governors; now here is nothing of that nature; for the laws of mutual society are observed; and the end of church government is to see *nè quid Ecclesia detrimenti capiat*, "lest the church" as a society "be any ways prejudiced;" which cannot be while men maintain that love, affection, and communion which becomes the members of such a society. The unity then required in the church, is not an unity of judgment and apprehension among the members of it, which though it be their duty to endeavour after, yet it is no further attainable by men's endeavours than Adamic perfection is; and *Unio<sup>1</sup> Christianorum* in this sense, is one of the jewels belonging to the crown of Heaven. There is no necessity then of inquiring after an infallible judge of controversies, unless we had some promise and assurance from Christ, that the members of his church should never differ in their judgments from one another, and then what need of an infallible judge? and if Christ had appointed an infallible judge, he would have infallibly discovered it to the minds of all sober men; or else his infallibility could never attain its end: for while I question whether my judge be infallible or not, I cannot infallibly assent to any of his determinations. And where there is no ground for an infallible judge, for any to pretend to it, is the worst of supposable errors, because it renders all others incurable by that apprehension, and takes away all possibility of repentance while men are under that persuasion. The unity then of the church, is that of communion, and not that of apprehension; and different opinions are no further liable to censures, than

<sup>1</sup> This seems designedly to have been a play upon the words, for *Unitas Christianorum*, is the unity of Christians, but *Unio Christianorum*, the pearl of Christians; and the unity of Christians will certainly be the pearl of Christians at last.—*Am. Ed.*



as men by the broaching of them, do endeavour to disturb the peace of the church of God.

§ 3. That then which seems most liable to censures in a church, is schism, as being immediately destructive of that communion which should be maintained in a religious society. But as to this too, we must observe something further, and not to think and judge everything to deserve the name, which is by many called *schism*; it being well observed by a very learned and judicious divine;<sup>1</sup> “that heresy and schism, as they are commonly used, are two theological scarecrows, with which, they who use to uphold a party in religion, use to fright away such, as making inquiry into it, are ready to relinquish and oppose it; if it appear either erroneous or suspicious. For as *Plutarch* reports of a painter, who having unskilfully painted a cock, chased away all cocks and hens, that so the imperfection of his art might not appear by comparison with nature; so men willing for ends, to admit of no fancy but their own, endeavour to hinder an inquiry into it, by way of comparison of somewhat with it, peradventure truer, that so the deformity of their own might not appear.” Thus he. Schism then, as it imports a separation from communion with a church society, is not a thing intrinsically and formally evil in itself, but is capable of the differences of good and evil according to the grounds, reasons, ends, and circumstances inducing to such a separation. The withdrawing from society, is but the materiality of schism; the formality of it must be fetched from the grounds on which that is built. It is therefore a subject which deserves a strict inquiry, what things those are which may make a withdrawing from a religious society, to which a man is joined, to be lawful: for as it is a great sin on the one hand, unnecessarily to divide and separate from church society; so it is an offence on the other side, to continue communion when it is a duty to withdraw. For the resolving of this knotty and intricate question, I shall lay down some things by way of premisal, and come closely to the resolution of it.

First, *Every Christian is under an obligation to join in church society with others*, because it is his duty to profess himself a Christian, and to own his religion publicly, and to partake of the ordinances and sacraments of the gospel, which cannot be without society with some church or other. Every Christian as such, is bound to look upon himself as the

<sup>1</sup> Tract of schism, 1642.

member of a body, viz. the visible church of Christ; and how can he be known to be a member, who is not united with other parts of the body? There is then an obligation upon all Christians, to engage in a religious society with others, for partaking of the ordinances of the gospel. It hath been a case disputed by some, (particularly by *Grotius* the supposed author of a little tract, *An semper sit communicandum per symbola?* "Whether we should always communicate by signs?" when he designed the Syncretism with the church of Rome,) whether in a time when churches are divided, it be a Christian's duty to communicate with any of those parties which divide the church, and not rather to suspend communion from all of them. A case not hard to be decided; for either the person questioning it, doth suppose the churches divided to remain true churches, but some to be more pure than others, in which case, by virtue of his general obligation to communion, he is bound to adhere to that church which appears most to retain its evangelical purity; or else he must suppose one to be a true church, and the other not, in which the case is clearer, that he is bound to communicate with the true church: or he must judge them alike impure, which is a case hard to be found; but supposing it is so, either he hath joined formerly with one of them, or he is now to choose which to join with; if he be joined already with that church, and sees no other but as impure as that, he is bound to declare against the impurity of the church, and to continue his communion with it; if he be to choose communion, he may so long suspend till he be satisfied which church comes nearest to the primitive constitution, and no longer. And therefore I know not whether *Chrysostom's* act were to be commended, who after being made a deacon in the church of *Antioch* by *Meletius*,<sup>1</sup> upon his death, because *Flavianus* came in irregularly as bishop of the church, would neither communicate with him, nor with *Paulinus*, another bishop at that time in the city, nor with the *Meletians*, but for three years time withdrew himself from communion with any of them. Much less were the *Διαχριστομενοι*, "the separatists," or *Hæsitantes* as the *Latins* called them, to be commended, who after the determination of the *Council of Chalcedon* against *Eutyches*,<sup>2</sup> because of great differences remaining in *Egypt* and the eastern churches, followed *Zeno's Henoti-*

<sup>1</sup> Socrat. Hist. Eccles. lib. 5, cap. 3.

<sup>2</sup> V. Petlavii. Diotrib. de Potest. consa. et com. usurp. cap. 4.

*cum*, and would communicate neither with the orthodox churches, nor *Eutychians*. But I see not what censure *Jerome* could incur, who going into the diocese of *Antioch*, and finding the churches there under great divisions, there being besides the *Arian* bishop, three others in the church of *Antioch*, *Meletius*, *Paulinus*, and *Vitalis*, did so long suspend communion with any of them, till he had satisfied himself about the occasion of the schism, and the innocency of the persons and churches engaged in it. But if he had withdrawn longer, he had offended against his obligation to join in church society with others, for participation of gospel ordinances; which is the necessary duty of every Christian.

§ 4. Secondly, *Every Christian actually joined in church society with others, is so long bound to maintain society with them till his communion with them becomes sin.* For nothing else can justify withdrawing from such a society, but the unlawfulness of continuing any longer in it. Supposing a church then to remain true, as to its constitution and essentials, but there be many corruptions crept into that church; whether is it the duty of a Christian to withdraw from that church because of those corruptions, and to gather new churches only for purer administration, or to join with them only for that end? This, as far as I understand it, is the state of the controversy between our parochial churches and the congregational. The resolution of this great question must depend on this: Whether is it a sin to communicate with churches true as to essentials, but supposed corrupt in the exercise of discipline? For parochial churches are not denied to have the essentials of true churches by any sober congregational men. For there is in them the true word of God preached, the true sacraments administered, and an implicit covenant between pastor and people, in their joining together. All that is pleaded, then, is corruption, and defect in the exercise and administration of church order and discipline. Now that it is lawful for Christians to join with churches so defective, is not only acknowledged by the Reverend Mr. *Norton* in his answer to *Apollius*,<sup>1</sup> but largely and fully proved. For which he lays down five propositions which deserve to be seriously considered, by all which make that a plea for withdrawing from society with other churches. *First*, A believer may lawfully join himself in communion with such a church, where he cannot enjoy all the ordinances

<sup>1</sup> Respons. ad Syllog. Quest. cap. 16.

of God; as in the Jewish church, in our Saviour's time, which refused the gospel of Christ, and the baptism of *John*; and yet our Saviour bids us hear the Scribes and Pharisees sitting in *Moses'* chair, which hearing, saith he, doth imply *conjunctionem ecclesiæ Judaicæ*, "a joining with the *Jewish* church:" and so with churches rejecting an article of faith; in the church of *Corinth* the doctrine of the resurrection, in the churches of *Galatia* the doctrine of justification by faith; but the apostle nowhere requires separation on that account from them. *Secondly*, A believer may lawfully join in communion with such a church, in which some corruption in the worship of God is tolerated without reformation. As the offering on high places from *Solomon* to *Hezekiah* in the church of *Judah*, observation of circumcision, and the necessity of keeping the ceremonial law in the churches of *Galatia*. *Thirdly*, A believer may lawfully join himself in communion with such a church in which such are admitted to sacraments who give no evident signs of grace, but seem to be lovers of this world; which he proves, because it is every one's main duty to examine himself; and because another's sin is no hurt to him, and therefore cannot keep him from his duty; and then by men's coming unworthily, *non polluitur communio, licet minuitur consolatio*, "the communion is not defiled, though the comfort of it be diminished." He brings an instance from the church of *Corinth*,<sup>1</sup> among whom were many scandalous persons that had not repented, 2 Cor. xii. 20, 21. So in the Jewish church which lay under great corruptions, when our Saviour and his apostles communicated with it. *Fourthly*, Although a believer join with such a church, he is not therefore bound with the guilt, nor defiled with the pollutions of others; which he proves, because it is lawful to do it, and so he contracts no guilt by it. *Fifthly*, a believer that hath joined himself to such a church, is not bound to withdraw, and separate from such a church under pain of guilt if he doth it not, because it implies a contradiction to be lawful to join to such a church, and yet unlawful to continue in its communion; for that speaks it to be a church, and this latter to be no church; and by that he doth imply it to be unlawful to separate from any society which is acknowledged to be a true church. Thus for that *learned* and *reverend man*, by whom we see that the received principles of the sober and moderate part of those of that per-

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xiv. 34; 1 Cor. vi. 4—15.



suasion, are not at such a distance from others, as many imagine. We see then that communicating with a church not so pure as we desire, is no sin by the arguments by him produced. And how it should be then lawful to withdraw from such a church, merely for purer communion, I understand not. This I am sure was not the case of our churches in their separation from the church of Rome: the main ground of which was the sin of communicating with that church in her idolatry and superstition, and the impossibility of communicating with her, and not partaking of her sins, because she required a profession of her errors, and the practice of her idolatry, as the necessary conditions of her communion, in which case it is a sin to communicate with her.

§ 5. And this leads me now to a closer resolution of the case of withdrawing from churches in which men have formerly been associated, and the grounds which may make such a withdrawing lawful. In order to that we must distinguish between these things. *First*, between *corruptions in the doctrine* of a church, and *corruptions in the practice* of a church. *Secondly*, between *corruptions* whether in doctrine, or practice, *professed and avowed by a church, and required as conditions of communion* in all members of it, and *corruptions crept in, and only tolerated in a church*. *Thirdly*, between *non-communication* as to the *abuses of a church*, and a *positive and total separation from a church*, as it is such. From these things I lay down these following *propositions*.

First, *where any church is guilty of corruptions, both in doctrine and practice, which it avoweth and professeth, and requireth the owning them as necessary conditions of communion with her, there a non-communication with that church is necessary, and a total and positive separation is lawful and convenient*. I have said already that the necessity and lawfulness of this departing from communion with any church is wholly to be resolved by an inquiry into the grounds and reasons of the action itself. So that the matter of fact must of necessity be discussed, before the matter of law as to separation from the church be brought into debate. If there be a just and necessary cause for separation, it must needs be just and necessary; therefore the cause must be the ground of resolving the nature of the action. Schism then is a separation from any church upon any slight, trivial, unnecessary cause; but if the cause be great and important, a departure it may be, schism it cannot be. They who define schism to be a

voluntary separation from the church of God; if by *voluntary*, they mean that where the will is the cause of it, the definition stands good and true; for that must needs be groundless and unnecessary as to the church itself: but if by *voluntary* be meant a spontaneous departing from communion with a church, which was caused by the corruptions of that church, then a separation may be so voluntary, and yet no schism: for though it be voluntary, as to the act of departing, yet that is only consequentially, supposing a cause sufficient to take such a resolution; but what is voluntary antecedently, that it hath no other motive but faction and humour, that is properly schism, and ought so to be looked upon. But in our present case, three things are supposed as the causes and motives to such forsaking a communion. *First, corruption in doctrine;* the main ligature of a religious society is the consent of it in doctrine with the rule of religion, the word of God. Therefore anything which tends to subvert and overthrow the foundation of the gathering such a society, (which is the possession and practice of the true religion,) yields sufficient ground to withdraw from communion with those who profess and maintain it. Not that every small error is a just ground of separation, for then there would be no end of separation, and men must separate from one another, till knowledge comes to its perfection, which will only be in glory; but anything which either directly or consequentially destroys any fundamental article of Christian faith; which may be as well done by adding to fundamental articles, as by plainly denying them. And my reason is this: because the very *ratio* of a fundamental article doth imply, not only its necessity to be believed and practised, (and the former in reference to the latter, for things are therefore necessary to be known, because necessary to be done, and not *à contrà*;) but likewise its sufficiency as to the end for which it is called fundamental. So that the articles of faith called fundamental are not only such as are necessary to be believed, but if they be, are sufficient for salvation to all that do believe them. Now he that adds anything to be believed or done as fundamental, that is necessary to salvation, doth thereby destroy the sufficiency of those former articles in order to salvation; for if they were sufficient, how can new ones be necessary. The case will be clear by an instance. Who assert the satisfaction of Christ for sinners to be a fundamental article, and thereby do imply the sufficiency of the belief of that in order to salvation; now if a pope or any other command me to believe the meritoriousness of good

works with the satisfaction of Christ as necessary to salvation, by adding this he destroys the former as a fundamental article: for if Christ's satisfaction be sufficient, how can good works be meritorious? and if this latter be necessary, the other was not; for if it were, what need this be added? Which is a thing the papists with their new creed of *Pius* the *fourth* would do well to consider: and others too, who so confidently assert that none of their errors touch the foundation of faith. Where there is now such corruption in doctrine supposed in a church; withdrawing and separation from such a church, is as necessary as the avoiding of her errors, and not partaking of her sins is. Thence we read in Scripture, of *rejecting such as are heretics*, and *withdrawing from their society*, which will as well hold to churches as to persons, and so much the more, as the corruption is more dangerous, and the relation nearer of a member to a church, than of one man to another: and from the reason of that command, we read in ecclesiastical history, that when *Eulalius*, *Euphronius*, and *Placentius* were constituted bishops of *Antioch*, being Arians, many both of the clergy and people,<sup>1</sup> who resolved to adhere to the true faith, withdrew from the public meetings, and had private assemblies of their own. And after, when *Leontius* was made bishop of *Antioch*, who favoured the Arians, *Flavianus* and *Diodorus*,<sup>2</sup> not only publicly reprov'd him for deserting the orthodox faith, but withdrew the people from communion with him, and undertook the charge of them themselves.<sup>3</sup> So when *Felix* was made bishop of *Rome*, none of the church of *Rome* would enter into the church while he was there. And *Vincentius Lyrinensis*<sup>4</sup> tells us a remarkable story of *Photinus* bishop of *Syrminum* in *Pannonia*, a man of great abilities and fame, who suddenly turned from the true faith, and though his people both loved and admired him, yet when they discerned his errors, "whom they followed before as the leader of the flock, they then ran away from as a devouring wolf."<sup>5</sup> This is the first thing which makes separation, and withdrawal of communion, lawful and necessary, *viz.* corruption of doctrine. The *second* is *corruption of practice*: I speak not of practice, as relating to the civil conversation of men, but as it takes in the *Agenda*<sup>6</sup> of religion. When idola-

<sup>1</sup> Theodoret. lib. 1, c. 22.

<sup>2</sup> Id. l. 2, cap. 24.

<sup>3</sup> Lib. 2, c. 17, Advers.

<sup>4</sup> Hæres. cap. 16.

<sup>5</sup> Quem antea quasi arietem gregis sequebantur, eundem deinceps veluti lupum fugere cœperunt.

<sup>6</sup> Things that ought to be done.

trous customs, and superstitious practices are not only crept into a church, but are the prescribed devotion of it: such as the adoration of the eucharist, (chiefly insisted on by Mr. *Daillé* in his apology, as a cause of separation from the church of *Rome*,) invocation of saints and angels, worshipping images, and others of a like nature, used among the papists, which are of themselves sufficient to make our separation from them necessary. But then *thirdly*, as an accession to these two, is the public owning and professing them, and requiring them, as necessary conditions of communion, from all the members of their church, which makes our withdrawing from them unavoidably necessary, as long as we judge them to be such corruptions as indeed they are. For men not to forsake the belief of errors, supposing them to be such, is impossible: and not to forsake the practice and profession of them upon such belief, were the highest hypocrisy: and to do so, and not to forsake the communion of that church where these are owned, is apparently contradictory, (as Mr. *Chillingworth*<sup>1</sup> well observes,) seeing the condition of communion with it is, that we must profess to believe all the doctrines of that church, not only not to be errors, but to be certain and necessary truths: so that on this account, to believe there are any errors in the church of *Rome* is actually, and *ipso facto*, to forsake the communion of that church; because the condition of its communion is the belief that there are none: and so that learned and rational author there fully proves, that those who require unlawful and unnecessary conditions of communion, must take the imputation of schism upon themselves, by making separation from them just and necessary. In this case, when corruptions in opinion or practice are thus required, as conditions of communion, it is impossible for one to communicate with such a church without sin; both materially, as the things are unlawful which he joins with them in; and formally, as he judgeth them so. This is the first proposition.

§ 6. The *second* is, *where a church retains the purity of doctrine in its public profession, but hath a mixture of some corruptions, as to practice, which are only tolerated and not imposed, it is not lawful to withdraw communion from such a church, much less to run into total separation from it.* For here is no just and lawful cause given of withdrawing; here is no owned corruption of doctrine or practice, nor any thing required as a condition of communion, but what is

<sup>1</sup> Answ. to the Pref. p. 26, s. 22.



in itself necessary; and therefore there can be no plea, but only pollution from such a communion, which cannot be to any who do not own any such supposed corruptions in the church. Men may communicate with a church, and not communicate with the abuses of a church; for the ground of his communicating is, its being a church, and not a corrupt or defective church. And that men are not themselves guilty, by partaking with those who are guilty of corruptions in a church, might be easily and largely proved, both from the church of the *Jews* in the case of *Eli's* sons, and the Christian churches of *Asia*, and *Corinth*, where we read of many corruptions reprov'd, yet nothing spoken of the duty of the members of those churches to separate from them, which would have been, had it been a sin to communicate with those churches when such corruptions were in them. Besides, what reason is there that one man's sins should defile another, more than another's graces sanctify another? and why corruption in another should defile him more than in himself, and so keep him from communicating with himself? and what security any one can have in the most refined churches, but that there is some scandalous, or at least unworthy person among them? and whether then it is not his duty to try and examine all himself particularly, with whom he communicates? and why his presence at one ordinance should defile it more than at another? and why at any more than in worldly converse, and so turn at last to make men *Anchorets*,<sup>1</sup> as it hath done some? Many other reasons might be produced against this, which I forbear, it being fully spoken to by others. And so I come to my *third* proposition, which is,

*Where any church, retaining the purity of doctrine, doth require the owning of, and conforming to, any lawful or suspected practice, men may lawfully deny conformity to, and communion with that church in such things, without incurring the guilt of schism.* I say not, men may proceed to positive schism as it is called, that is, erecting of new churches, which from *Cyprian* is called *erigere altare contra altare*, "to erect an altar against an altar;" but only that withdrawing communion from a church in unlawful or suspected things, doth not lay men under the guilt of schism: which, because I know it may meet with some opposition from those men, who will sooner call men schismatics than prove them so, I shall offer this reason of it to consideration.

<sup>1</sup> See Mr. Durham's Tract of Scandal, part 2, chap. 12.

If our separation from the church of *Rome* was therefore lawful, because she required unlawful things, as conditions of her communion; then wherever such things are required by any church, non-communion with that church in those things will be lawful too; and where non-communion is lawful, there can be no schism in it. Whatever difference will be thought of, as to the things imposed by the church of *Rome* and others, will be soon answered by the proportionable difference between bare non-conformity, and total and positive separation. What was in itself lawful and necessary then, how comes it to be unlawful and unnecessary now? Did that justify our withdrawing from them, because they required things unlawful, as conditions of communion; and will not the same justify other men's non-conformity, in things supposed by them unlawful? If it be said here, that the pope's power was an usurpation, which is not in lawful governors of churches; it is soon replied, that the pope's usurpation mainly lies in imposing things upon men's consciences as necessary, which are doubtful or unlawful; and wherever the same thing is done, there is an usurpation of the same nature, though not in so high a degree; and it may be as lawful to withdraw communion from one as well as the other. If it be said, that men are bound to be ruled by their governors, in determining what things are lawful, and what not? To this it is answered: first, no true protestant can swear blind obedience to church governors in all things. It is the highest usurpation to rob men of the liberty of their judgments. That which we plead for against the papists, is, that all men have eyes in their heads as well as the pope, that every one hath a *judicium privatæ discretionis*, "a judgment of private discretion," which is the rule of practice, as to himself; and though we freely allow a ministerial power, under Christ, in the government of the church, yet that extends not to an obligation upon men, to go against the dictates of their own reason and conscience. Their power is only directive and declarative, and in matters of duty can bind no more than reason and evidence brought from Scripture by them doth. A man hath not the power over his own understanding, much less can others have it. "No one believes anything to be true, because he desires to believe it is true; for it is not in the power of man to cause anything to appear to his understanding to be true, whenever he will."<sup>1</sup> Either therefore men are bound to obey church

<sup>1</sup> Nullus credit aliquid esse verum, quia vult credere id esse verum; non est

governors in all things absolutely, without any restriction or limitation; (which, if it be not usurpation and dominion over others' faith in them, and the worst of implicit faith in others, it is hard to define what either of them is,) or else if they be bound to obey only in lawful things; I then inquire who must be judge of what things are lawful in this case, what not? if the governors still, then the power will be absolute again; for to be sure, whatever they command, they will say is lawful, either in itself, or as they command it: if every private person must judge what is lawful, and what is not, which is commanded, (as when all is said, every man will be his own judge in this case, in things concerning his own welfare,) then he is no further bound to obey than he judgeth the thing to be lawful, which is commanded. The plea of an erroneous conscience, takes not off the obligation to follow the dictates of it; for as he is bound to lay it down, supposing it erroneous, so he is bound not to go against it, while it is not laid down. But then again, if men are bound to submit to governors in the determination of lawful things, what plea could our reformers have to withdraw themselves from the pope's yoke; it might have still held true, *boves arabant et asinæ pascebantur simul*,<sup>1</sup> "the oxen were ploughing, and the asses were feeding together," which is *Aquinas's* argument for the submission of inferiors in the church to their superiors; for did not the pope plead to be a lawful governor, and if men are bound to submit to the determination of church governors, as to the lawfulness of things, they were bound to believe him in that as well as other things, and so separation from that church was unlawful then. So that let men turn and wind themselves which way they will, by the very same arguments that any will prove separation from the church of *Rome* lawful, because she required unlawful things, as conditions of her communion, it will be proved lawful, not to conform to any suspected or unlawful practice, required by any church governors upon the same terms; if the thing so required, be, after serious and sober inquiry, judged unwarrantable by a man's own conscience. And withal it would be further considered, whether when our best writers against the papists, do lay the imputation of schism, not on those who withdraw communion, but on them for requiring such conditions of communion,

enim in potestate hominis facere aliquid apparere intellectui suo verum quando voluerit.—Picus, *Mirand. Apoll.* p. 225, 226.

<sup>1</sup> Job i. 14. Summ. ii. 2, q. 2, art. 6.

(whereby they did rather eject men out of their communion, than the others separate from them,) they do not by the same arguments, lay the imputation of schism on all who require such conditions of communion, and take it wholly off from those who refuse to conform for conscience' sake. To this I shall subjoin the judgment of as learned and judicious a divine, as most our nation has bred, in his excellent (though little) tract concerning schism.<sup>1</sup> "In those schisms," saith he, "which concern fact, nothing can be a just cause of refusing communion, but only to require the execution of some unlawful or suspected act; for not only in reason, but, in religion too, that maxim admits of no release, *Cautissimi cujusque præceptum; quod dubitas, nè feceris*, 'the rule of every most cautious character is, not to do, what you doubt is right.' And after instanceth in the schism about image-worship, determined by the second council of *Nice*, in which he pronounceth the schismatical party to be the synod itself, and that on these grounds: First, because it is acknowledged by all, that it is a thing unnecessary. Secondly, it is by most suspected. Thirdly, it is by many held utterly unlawful. Can then, (saith he,) the enjoining of such a thing be ought else but abuse? Or can the refusal of communion here, be thought any other thing than duty? Here, or upon the like occasion, to separate, may peradventure bring personal trouble or danger, (against which it concerns every honest man to have *pectus præparatum*, 'a mind prepared;') further harm it cannot do, so that in these cases you cannot be to seek what to think, or what you have to do. And afterwards propounds it as a remedy to prevent schism, to have all liturgies and public forms of service so framed, so that they admit not of particular and private fancies, but contain only such things, in which all Christians do agree. For, (saith he,) consider of all the liturgies that are, and ever have been, and remove from them whatever is scandalous to any party, and leave nothing but what all agree on; and the consequence shall be, that the public service and honour of God shall no ways suffer: whereas, to load our public forms, with the private fancies upon which we differ, is the most sovereign way to perpetuate schism unto the world's end. Prayer, confession, thanksgiving, reading of Scriptures in the plainest and simplest manner, were matter enough to furnish out a sufficient liturgy, though nothing either of private opinions, or of church pomp, of gar-

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Hale's Tract of Schism, p. 8.



ments, or prescribed gestures, of imagery, of music, of matter concerning the dead, of many superfluities, which creep into the church, under the name of order and decency, did interpose itself. To charge churches and liturgies with things unnecessary, was the first beginning of all superstition; and when scruple of conscience began to be made or pretended, then schism began to break in; if the special guides and fathers of the church would be a little sparing of encumbering churches with superfluities, or not over rigid, either in reviving obsolete customs, or imposing new, there would be far less cause of schism or superstition; and all the inconvenience likely to ensue, would be but this, they should in so doing yield a little to the imbecility of their inferiors, a thing which *Saint Paul* would never have refused to do; meanwhile, wheresoever false or suspected opinions are made a piece of church liturgy, he that separates is not the schismatic; for it is alike unlawful, to make profession of known or suspected falsehood, as to put in practice unlawful or suspected actions."

Thus far that excellent person, whose words I have taken the pains to transcribe, because of that great wisdom, judgment, and moderation, contained in them, and the seasonableness of his counsel and advice, to the present posture of affairs among us. Were we so happy but to take off things granted unnecessary by all, and suspected by many, and judged unlawful by some; and to make nothing the bonds of our communion but what Christ hath done, viz. one faith, one baptism, &c.—allowing a liberty for matters of indifferency, and bearing with the weakness of those who cannot bear things which others account lawful; we might indeed be restored to a true primitive lustre far sooner, than by furbishing up some antiquated ceremonies, which can derive their pedigree no higher, than from some ancient custom and tradition. God will one day convince men, that the union of the church lies more in the unity of faith and affection, than in uniformity of doubtful rites and ceremonies. The bond of church communion should be something common to strong and weak Christians, as *St. Austin* saith of the rule of faith, that it is *pusillis magnisq, communis*;<sup>1</sup> "common to both weak and strong;" and certainly the primitive church, that did not charge men's faith with such a load of articles, as now in these latter ages men are charged with, would much less burden men with imposing doubtful practices upon them, as the ground of church

<sup>1</sup> Ep. 57.

communion. And for public forms of divine service, such of all things certainly should be so composed, as to be the least subject to any scruple from any persons whatsoever; being on purpose composed for the declaring men's unity and consent in their public worship: and those who are the most addicted to any one form, can never plead it unlawful to amend it; whereas others may, that it is not lawful or convenient at least, to use it without such alterations. And therefore, were there that spirit of mutual condescension, which was most certainly in *Eccelesiâ primo-primitivâ*, as *Gratian* somewhere speaks, "in the first and truly primitive church" in the apostles' time; our breaches as to this thing too, might soon be closed up, and the voice of schism be heard among us no more. It argued very much the prudence and temper of the French churches, in composing their public forms of prayer, that they were so far from inserting anything controversial into them, that *Amyraldus* tells us, the papists themselves would use them. "And that which men would scarce believe unless they saw it, they inserted them into their own prayer-books, in which they had crowded various forms of prayer."<sup>1</sup> The same temper was used by our reformers in composing our liturgy, in reference to the papists, to whom they had then an especial eye, as being the only party then appearing, whom they desired to draw into their communion, by coming as near them as they well and safely could: and certainly those holy men, who did seek by any means to draw in others, at such a distance from their principles as the papists were, did never intend by what they did for that end, to exclude any truly tender consciences from their communion. That which they laid as a bait for them, was never intended by them as a hook from those of their own profession. But the same or greater reason which made them seek so much at that time (before the rent between the papists and us was grown to that height it is now at; they being then in hopes by a fair compliance to have brought the whole kingdom to join with them); I say the same reason which at that time made them yield so far to them then, would now have persuaded them to alter and lay aside those things which yield matter of offence, to any of the same profession with themselves now. For surely none will be so uncharitable toward those of his

<sup>1</sup> Et quod vix credibile esset nisi publicè viseretur, eas inseruerunt in eos libros in quos congesserunt varias precationum formulas.—De secess. ab Eccl. Rom. et pace inter Evang. const. p. 225.

own profession, as not to think there is as much reason to yield in compliance with them, as with the papists. And it cannot but be looked upon as a token of God's severe displeasure against us, if any, though unreasonable proposals of peace between us and the papists should meet with such entertainment among many, and yet any fair offers of union and accommodation among ourselves, be so coldly embraced and entertained.

§ 7. Having thus far shown how far the obligation to keep in a church society doth reach to the several members of it, I now proceed to show what way the light of nature directs men to, for the quieting and composing any differences which may arise in such a society tending to break the peace of it. But before I come to the particular ways directed to by the law of nature for ending controversies in the church, I shall lay down some things by way of caution, for the right understanding of what is already spoken, lest I should be thought, instead of pleading for peace, to leave a door open for an universal liberty, and so pave a new causeway towards *Babel*. *First*, That though it be lawful not to conform to unlawful or suspected practices in a church, yet it is not therefore lawful to erect new churches. For all other essentials supposed in a church, a mere requiring conformity in some suspected rites, doth not make it to be no true or sound church, as to other things, from which it is lawful to make a total divorce and separation. A total separation is, when a new and distinct society for worship is entered into, under distinct and peculiar officers governing by laws and church rules different from that form which they separate from. This I do not assert to be therefore lawful, because some things are required, which men's consciences are unsatisfied in: unless others proceed to eject and cast them wholly out of communion on that account, in which case their separation is necessary, and their schism unavoidable. *Secondly*, therefore I assert, that as to things in the judgment of the primitive and reformed churches left undetermined by the law of God, and in matters of mere order and decency, and wholly as to the form of government, every one notwithstanding what his private judgment may be of them, is bound for the peace of the church of God to submit to the determination of the lawful governors of the church. And this is that power of ending controversies, which I suppose to be lodged in a church society; not such a one as whereto every man is bound to conform his private judgment; but whereto every private per-

son is bound to submit in order to the church's peace. That is, in any controversies arising in a church, there is such a power supposed, that may give such an authoritative decision of the controversy in which both parties are bound to acquiesce, so as to act nothing contrary to that decision. For as it is supposed that in all contracts and agreements for mutual society, men are content to part with their own liberties for the good of the whole: so likewise to part with the authority of their own judgments, and to submit to the determination of things by the rulers of the society constituted by them. For there must be a difference made between the *liberty and freedom* of a man's own judgment, and the *authority* of it: for supposing men out of all society, every man hath both; but societies being entered, and contracts made, though men can never part with the freedom of their judgments, (men not having a *despotical power* over their own understandings,) yet they must part with the authority of their judgments; *i. e.* in matters concerning the government of the society, they must be ruled by persons in authority over them. Else there can be nothing imagined but confusion and disorder, instead of peace and unity in every civil state and society. The case is the same in a religious society too, in which men must be supposed to part with the authority of their own judgments in matters concerning the government of the church, and to submit to what is constituted and appointed by those who are entrusted with the care and welfare of it. Else it is impossible there should be unity and peace in a church considered as a society; which is as much as to say, there neither is, nor can be such a society; and that God hath commanded that which is naturally impossible; I mean, freedom from divisions, and the unity and peace of his church. Which will appear from hence, because it can never be expected that all men should be exactly of one mind. Either then men retaining their private apprehensions, are bound to acquiesce in what is publicly determined, or there is a necessity of perpetual confusions in the church of God. For the main inlet of all disturbances and divisions in the church, is from hence that men consider themselves absolutely, and not as members of a governed society, and so that they may follow their own private judgments, and are bound so to do in matters belonging to the government of the church, and not to acquiesce for the church's peace in what is established in order to the ruling of this so constituted society, by lawful authority.

These things premised, the way is now fully cleared for the



discovering what ways are prescribed by the light of nature for ending controversies in the church; which will appear to be these two.

1. *In societies wherein persons act with an equality of power, for the ending differences arising, the less number must always acquiesce in the determination of the greater.* And therefore it is a generally received axiom, that in all societies *pars major jus habet universitatis*, "the greater part hath the power of the whole." And it is a standing rule in the civil law, *Refertur ad universos quod publice sit per majorem partem*, "What is in a public concern, done by the majority, is enacted for the whole," which is determined by the lawyers to hold, not of the persons in power, but of the persons present at the determination; as when *Alexander Severus* made fourteen of the *virī consulares*, "consular men," to be *curatores urbis*, "bailiffs," joined with the *præfectis urbis*,<sup>1</sup> "governors of the city," to determine cases brought before them, what was determined by the greater part of those present, was looked upon as binding, as if the whole number had been there. And this *Aristotle* lays down as one of the fundamental laws of a democratical government, "That must be looked on as a just and final decision, which the major part determines."<sup>2</sup> And therefore rationally infers, that in a democracy the poorer sort, (and so likewise the worse,) must always bear the greatest sway, because they are the most. Which is an unavoidable inconvenience in that form of government, whether in church or state. The same he elsewhere applies to other forms of government which have a multitude of rulers, as *aristocracy* and *oligarchy*. That which seems good to the most obtains as a law amongst all, which *Appian*<sup>3</sup> thus briefly expresses, το πλειον δικαιότερον, "the majority the more just," and *Dionys. Halicarnassus*, ὅ τι αὐτῷ δοξῇ τοῖς πλείοσι, τούτο νικᾶν, "what seems right to the majority prevails," the one speaking of matter of fact, that it doth obtain, the other of matter of law that it should do so. It appears then from the law and light of nature, that wherever any multitude acts in an equality of power, the greater part have the power of the whole; not from any right which the major part hath as superior over the less; but from the

<sup>1</sup> C. de decurion. lib. 10, l. nomin utonem Pet. Fabri. Comment. ad tit. de diversis Reg. Juris Lampridius in Alex. Severo.

<sup>2</sup> "Ὁ τι ἂν δοξῇ τοῖς πλείοσι, τούτο εἶναι το τίλος καὶ τούτο το δίκαιον.—Politie. l. 6, cap. 2.

<sup>3</sup> V. Grotius de jure bel. &c. lib. 2, cap. 5, sect. 17.

law of nature, which will have every part ordered for the good of the whole; which good cannot oftentimes be obtained without a special determination on one side or the other; nor can that determination have its effect, if the act of the major part may be rescinded by the less. So that in every thing requiring special determination, this is to be esteemed the most just and final decision which is done by the major part. For it would be manifestly unjust for the less part to determine the greater, and therefore by the law of nature, the greater part hath the right of the whole.

2. *In a society consisting of many particular companies or congregations, there must be a subordination of powers by the law of nature, which grants a right of appeal to an injured person from the lower and subordinate power to the higher and superior.* Appealing is defined by the lawyers to be *Provocatio iniquæ sententiæ querelam continens*. "An address with complaint of wrong:"<sup>1</sup> and so in general it is defined by *Ulpian* to be *ab inferioris judicis sententiâ ad superiorem provocatio*: "an appeal from the sentence of an inferior to a superior judge;" but as *Hottoman* observes, appeals may sometimes be made to a co-ordinate power upon complaint of injustice done. As one prætor, consul, tribune might be appealed to, from the sentence of another. The original of appeals then is, that injuries may be redressed, and in order to that, nature dictates that there ought to be a subordination of powers one to another, lest any injury done through corruption or ignorance of the immediate judges, prove irremediable. To which purpose our learned *Whitaker* saith, that appeals are "of divine and natural right, on account of either the want of skill or equity in many judges, and in every community indispensable: otherwise the cause of an innocent character may be ruined, if it be not lawful to appeal from an unjust decision."<sup>2</sup> So that appeals are founded upon natural right, lest men should be injured in any determination of a case by those that have the cognizance of it. And in order to a redress of wrongs, and ending controversies, nature tells us that appeals must not be infinite, but there must be some power, from whence appeals must not be made: what that should be, must be determined in the same manner that it is in civils;

<sup>1</sup> V. Jac. Omphalium de usurp. Leg. l. 7, c. 3. Ulp. l. 1. D. de Appel. Hottom. com. V. Juris.

<sup>2</sup> Juris divini et naturalis, et in omni societate admodum necessariæ; propter multorum judicium vel iniquitatem, vel ignorantiam; alioqui actum esset de innocente, si non liceret ab iniqua sententia appellare.—Controv. 4, q. l. 4, c. 2.

not that every controversy in the church be determined by an oecumenical council, but that it is in the power of the supreme magistrate, as supreme head in causes ecclesiastical, to limit and fix this subordination, and determine how far it shall go, and no further. The determination being in order to the peace of the church, which Christian magistrates are bound to look after, and see that causes hang not perpetually without decision: and so we find the Christian emperors constituting to whom appeals should be made, and where they should be fixed, as *Justinian* and *Theodosius* did.<sup>1</sup> For when the church is incorporated into the commonwealth, the chief authority in a commonwealth as Christian, belongs to the same to which it doth as a commonwealth: but of that already. It is then against the law and light of nature, and the natural right of every man, for any particular company of men, calling themselves a church, to engross all ecclesiastical power so into their hands, that no liberty of appeals for redress can be made from it. Which, (to speak within compass,) is a very high usurpation made upon the civil and religious rights of Christians; because it leaves men under a causeless censure, without any authoritative vindication of them from it. As for that way of *elective synods*, substituted in the place of authoritative power to determine controversies, it is a σοφον φαρμακον, “an artful antidote,” which will never be sovereign enough to cure the distemper it is brought for: for elective synods are but like that which the lawyers call *arbitrium boni viri*, “the arbitration of an honest man;” which they distinguish from *arbitrium ex compromisso*, “an arbitration from compromise,”<sup>2</sup> and binds no further than the party concerned doth judge the sentence equal and just. So that this helps us with no way to end controversies in the church, any further than the persons engaged are willing to account that just which shall be judged in their case. Taking then a coercive power, only for such a one as may authoritatively decide a controversy, we see what great reason there is for what the historian observes: “Those who cannot restrain the parent-power, ought to take their stand between the awards:”<sup>3</sup> that all power of arbitration should have some judicial power going along with it, to make a final end of quarrels. But that which seems yet more strange to me, is this, that by those

<sup>1</sup> Just. auth. diss. epis. collat. 9. Theod. cod. de S. S. Eccl. c. omni.

<sup>2</sup> Grot. de jure belli ac pacis, l. 3, cap. 20, sect. 46.

<sup>3</sup> Arbitriis ii se debent interponere, qui non parentem coercere possunt.—Vellei. Patere. hist. lib. 2.

who assert the independency of particular congregations, it is so hotly pleaded, that Christ hath given every particular congregation a power over its own members, to determine controversies arising between them: but, that if one, or many of these particular congregations should err, or break the rule, he hath left no power authoritatively to decide what should be done in such cases. Can we conceive that Christ should provide more for the cases of particular persons, than of particular churches? and that he should give authority for determining one, and not the other? Is there any more coactive power given by any to synods, or greater officers, than there is by them to particular churches? which power is only declarative as to the rule, though authoritative as to persons wherever it is lodged. Is there not more danger to God's people, by the scandals of churches, than persons? Or did Christ's power of governing his people reach to them only as particular congregations? Doth not this too strongly savour of the *Pars Donati*? "the party of Donatus;" only the *Meridies*<sup>1</sup> must be rendered a particular congregational church, where Christ causeth his flock, to rest at noon?<sup>2</sup> But supposing the scripture not expressly to lay down a rule for governing many churches, are men outlawed of their natural rights? that supposing a wrong sentence passed in the congregation, there is no hope, way or means to redress his injury, and make his innocence known? Doth this look like an institution of Christ? But that which I conceive is the *πρωτον ψευδος*; and "the original" of this "mistake," is, that the churches we read of first planted in scripture, were only particular congregations; and therefore there is no proper church power beyond them or above them. I meddle not with the antecedent now, which is largely discussed by others, but the extreme weakness of the consequence, is that I am here obliged to discover. For what a strange shortness of discourse is it to argue thus; if when there was but one congregation, that congregation had all power within itself; then when there are more particular congregations, it must be so; and yet this is the very foundation of all those kingdoms of *Yvetot*, as one calls them, those sole self-governing congregations. When there was but one congregation in a church, it was necessary if it had any church power, that it must be lodged in that one congregation: but when this congregation was multiplied into

<sup>1</sup> Literally, the south or noon tide.

<sup>2</sup> See Song Sol. i. 7.



many more, is it not as necessary for their mutual government, there should be a common power governing them together, as a joint society? Besides, the first congregational church in the New Testament, viz. that of *Jerusalem*, could be no particular organical church, for it had many, if not all, universal officers in it; and if they were the fixed pastors of that church, they could not, according to the principles of those who thus speak, preach to any other congregation but their own, by virtue of their office: and so, either their apostolical office and commission must be destroyed, if they were pastors of particular organical churches; or if their apostolical office be asserted, their pastorship of particular organical churches is destroyed by their own principles, who assert, that the pastor of a church can do no pastoral office out of his own congregation. The case is the same, as to other churches planted by the apostles, and governed by themselves; which two, as far as I can find in the New Testament, were of an equal extent; viz. That all the churches planted by apostles, were chiefly governed by themselves, though they had subordinate officers under them. These first churches then were not such particular organized churches, but they were as the *first matter* of many congregations to be propagated out of them; which afterwards made one society, consisting of those several congregations embodied together, and ruled by one common government. As in a college, every tutor hath his own pupils, which he rules; and if we suppose but one tutor at first in the college, with his pupils, all the power, both common to the society, and peculiar to his flock, is joined together; but when there are many more tutors, having pupils under their charge, all these, for their better ordering as a society, must be governed by the common government of the college, to which the particular government of every tutor is and must be subordinate: but this will be more fully made appear in the original of civil government. It is far more evident, that all civil power lay at first in *Adam* and his family, and afterwards in particular families, than that all church power lay in particular congregations at first. We may then with as good reason say, that there is no lawful civil government now, but that of particular families; and that no national government hath any right or power over particular families, because families had once all civil power within themselves; as because it is supposed, that all church power lay first in particular congregations, therefore there

must be no church power above them; nor that particular congregations are subject to such government as is requisite for the regulating of the society in common, as comprehending in it many particular congregations. Let them show then, how any government in the state is lawful, when families had the first power, and by what right now those families are subordinate to the civil magistrate, and what necessity there is for it; and by the very same reasons will we show the lawfulness of government in the church over many congregations, and that those are by the same right, and upon the same necessity, to subordinate themselves to the government of the church, considered as a society taking in many particular congregations. The parallel runs on further and clearer still: for as the heads of the several families after the flood, had the command over all dwelling under their roofs, while they remained in one family; and when that increased into more, their power was extended over them too; which was the first original of monarchy in the world: so the planters of the first churches, that while the church was but one congregation, had power over it, when this congregation was multiplied into more, their power equally extended over them all. And as afterwards, several heads of families upon their increase, did constitute distinct civil governments, wherein were subordinate officers, but those governments themselves were coordinate one with another: so in the church, so many congregations as make up one provincial, or national society, (as succession and prudence doth order the bounds of them,) do make up several particular churches, enjoining their officers ruling them, but subordinate to the governors of the church in common: which society, national or provincial, is subordinate to none beyond itself, but enjoys a free power within itself of ordering things for its own government, as it judgeth most convenient, and agreeable to the rules of scripture. The sum then of what I say, concerning subordination of officers and powers in the society of the church, is this, that by the light and law of nature it appears, that no individual company or congregation, hath an absolute, independent power within itself; but that, for the redressing grievances happening in them, appeals are necessary by the parties aggrieved, and a subordination of that particular congregation, to the government of the society in common. So that, the right of appealing, and original of subordination, is from nature; the particular manner and form of subordinate and superior courts, is to be

fetches from positive laws;<sup>1</sup> the limitation of appeals, extent of jurisdiction, the binding power of sentence, so far as concerns external unity in the church, is to be fetched from the power of the magistrate, and civil sanctions and constitutions. The church's power, as to divine law, being only directive and declarative; but being confirmed by a civil sanction, is juridical and obligatory. Concerning the magistrate's power to call, confirm, alter, repeal the decrees of synods; see *Grotius*, *Chamier*, *Whitaker*, *Casaubon*, *Mornay*, and others, who fully and largely handle it; to whom having nothing to add, I will take nothing at all from them: as for that time when the church was without magistrates ruling in it, in those things left undetermined by the rule of the word, they acted out of principles of Christian prudence agreeable to the rules of scripture, and from the principles of the law of nature; one of which we come in the next place to speak to. So much for the church's power, considered as a society for ending controversies, arising within itself, tending to break the peace and unity of it.

<sup>1</sup> Grot. de Imp. summ. Potest. cap. 7, s. 14, 15, &c. c. 8, s. 13. Chamier: tom. 2, l. 13, c. 12. Whitaker Contr. 3 q. 2. Cas. de Lib. Eccles. cap. 2. Mornæ. hist. Papatus passim.

## CHAPTER VII.

The fifth thing dictated by the law of nature; that all that are admitted into this society, must consent to be governed by the laws and rules of it. Civil societies founded upon mutual consent; express in the first entrance, implicit in others born under societies actually formed. Consent as to a Church necessary, the manner of consent determined by Christ by Baptism and profession. Implicit consent supposed in all baptized; explicit, declared by challenging the privileges, and observing the duties of the Covenant. Explicit by express owning the Gospel when adult, very useful for recovering the credit of Christianity. The discipline of the primitive Church cleared from *Origen, Justin Martyr, Pliny, Tertullian*. The necessary requisites of church membership, whether positive signs of grace: explicit Covenant, how far necessary; not the formal constitution of a church: proved by several arguments.

§ 1. THE law of nature dictates, *that all who are admitted into this society, must consent to be governed by the laws and rules of that society, according to its constitution*. For none can be looked upon as a member of a society, but such a one as submits to the rules and laws of the society, as constituted at the time of his entrance into it. That all civil societies are founded upon voluntary consent and agreement of parties, and do depend upon contracts and covenants made between them, is evident to any that consider that men are not bound by the law of nature to associate themselves with any but whom they shall judge fit; that dominion and propriety were introduced by free consent of men: and so there must be laws and bonds fit, agreement made, and submission acknowledged to those laws, else men might plead their natural right and freedom still, which would be destructive to the very nature of these societies. When men then did first part with their natural liberties, two things were necessary in the most express terms to be declared: first, a free and voluntary consent to part with so much of their natural rights as was not consistent with the well being of the society: secondly, a free submission to all laws, which should be agreed upon at their entrance into society, or afterwards as they see cause.



But when societies were already entered, and children born under them, no such express consent was required in them, being bound by virtue of the protection they find from authority to submit to it, and an implicit consent is supposed in all such as are born under that authority. But for their more full understanding of this obligation of theirs, and to lay the greater tie of obedience upon them, when they come to understanding, it hath been conceived very requisite by most states to have an explicit declaration of their consent, either by some formal oath of allegiance, or some other way sufficiently expressing their fidelity, in standing to the covenants long since supposed to be made. To apply this now to the church.

We have all along hitherto considered the church in general, as a society or corporation which was necessary in order to our discovering what is in it, from the light of nature without positive laws.

§ 2. But here we must take notice of what was observed by father *Layne*, the Jesuit at the Council of Trent, that it is not with the church as with other societies, which are first themselves, and then constitute the governors.<sup>1</sup> But the Governor of this society was first himself, and he appointed what orders, rules, and laws should govern this society; and wherein he hath determined anything, we are bound to look upon that, as necessary to the maintaining of that society which is built upon his constitution of it. And in many of those orders which Christ hath settled in his church, the foundation of them is in the law of nature; but the particular determination of the manner of them is from himself. Thus it is in the case we are now upon; nature requires that every one entering into a society, should consent to the rules of it. Our Saviour hath determined how this consent should be expressed, viz. by receiving baptism from those who have the power to dispense it: which is the federal rite whereby our consent is expressed to own all the laws and submit to them, whereby this society is governed: which at the first entering of men into this society of the church was requisite to be done by the express and explicit consent of the parties themselves, being of sufficient capacity to declare it, but the covenant being once entered into by themselves, not only in their own name, but in the name of their posterity, (a thing implied in all covenants wherein benefits do redound to posterity,<sup>2</sup> that the obligation

<sup>1</sup> Hist. Council of Trent, l. 7, p. 612.

<sup>2</sup> Deut. xxix. 15, Acts ii. 38.

should reach them too; but more particular in this, it having been always the tenor of God's covenants with men, to enter the seed as well as the persons themselves, as to outward privileges,) an implicit consent as to the children in covenant, is sufficient to enter them upon the privileges of it by baptism, although withal it be highly rational for their better understanding the engagement they entered into, that when they come to age, they should explicitly declare their own voluntary consent to submit to the laws of Christ, and to conform their lives to the profession of Christianity, which might be a more than probable way, and certainly most agreeable both to reason and Scripture to advance the credit of Christianity once more in the world, which at this day so much suffers by so many professing it without understanding the terms of it; who swallow down a profession of Christianity, as boys do pills, without knowing what they are compounded of, which is the great reason it works so little alteration upon their spirits.

§ 3. The one great cause of the great flourishing of religion in the primitive times, was certainly the strictness used by them in their admission of members into church societies, which is fully described by *Origen*<sup>1</sup> against *Celsus*, who tells us they did *εξετασειν τους βιους και τας αγωγας των προσιοντων*, "inquire into their lives and carriages, to discern their seriousness in the profession of Christianity during their being catechumens:" who after tells us they did require *το κεκαθαρθαι απο του αλογου και οση δυναμις βελτιον βεβιωκεναι*, "true repentance and reformation of life," *το τηνικαδε καλουμεν αυτους επι τας παρ ημιν τελετας*, "then we admit them to the participation of our mysteries." I confess the discipline of the primitive church hath been very much misrepresented to us, by men's looking upon it through the glass of the modern practices and customs obtaining among us: as though all this only concerned the admission to the Lord's supper: though that was always in chief veneration in the church of God, as being the chief of gospel mysteries,<sup>2</sup> (as they loved to speak,) yet I cannot find that any were admitted to all other ordinances freely with them who were debarred from this: but their admission to one, did include an admission to all: so on the contrary, I find none admitted to baptism, who were not to the Lord's supper;

<sup>1</sup> Lib. 3, p. 142, 143, and 147.

<sup>2</sup> Tertul. Apol. c. 39, describes exclusion to be *à communicatione Orationis et conventus, et omnis sancti commercii*, or an exclusion from discourse, assemblies, and all holy fellowship.

and if *catechumens*, presently after, only confirmation intervening, (which will hardly be ever found separate from baptism, till the distinction of the double *Chrism in vertice et pectore* came up, "on the head and breast," which was about *Jerome's* time!)

§ 4. The thing then which the primitive church required in admitting persons adult to baptism, and so to the Lord's supper, was a serious visible profession of Christianity; which was looked upon by them as the greatest evidence of their real consent to the rules of the gospel. For that purpose it will be worth our taking notice what is set down by *Justin Martyr*, *Apolog.* 2,<sup>1</sup> speaking of the celebration of the Lord's supper, "But this food, amongst us, is called the eucharist, of which it is permitted to none to partake, except to those believing that the doctrines taught amongst us are true, and hath been washed to the remission of sins, and to the baptism of regeneration, and so walk as Christ enjoined."<sup>2</sup> Where we see what was required before admission to the Lord's supper, "a profession of faith in the truths of the gospel, and answerable life to the gospel, without which it was not lawful to participate of the Lord's supper." And further, we see by *Pliny*, that the Christians of those times did make use of some solemn engagements among themselves which he calls *sacramenta*; "they bound themselves by an oath,<sup>3</sup> not to commit theft, robbery, adultery, nor to swerve from the faith,"<sup>4</sup> &c.; and *Tertullian* reports it out of *Pliny*,<sup>5</sup> that he found nothing *de sacramentis eorum*,<sup>6</sup> (as *Junius* first reads it out of MS. for *de Sacris*, after him *Heraldus*, and as it is now read in *Rigaltius'* edition,) besides *cautelam et ad confæderandam disciplinam, etc. scelera prohibentes*, "a security both for covenanting, as to discipline, and for the prohibition of crime," which *Eusebius*<sup>7</sup> calls *συνθηκας*, "convention," *pacta*, "covenants" between them; and so *Master Selden*<sup>8</sup>

<sup>1</sup> P. 97, ed. Paris, 1636.

<sup>2</sup> Κι ἡ τροφή αὐτὰ καλεῖται παρ' ἡμῖν εὐχαριστία ἧς οὐδενὶ ἄλλῳ μετασχεῖν ἔξον ἐστὶν ἢ τῷ πιστευόντι ἀληθῆ εἶναι τὰ δεδιδαγμένα ἐφ' ἡμῶν, καὶ λουσαμίνῳ τὸ ὑπὲρ ἀφεσέως ἁμαρτιῶν καὶ εἰς ἀναγεννήσιν λουτρον καὶ οὕτως βιούντι ὡς ὁ Χρῖστος παρέδωκεν.

<sup>3</sup> The Latin word *sacramentum* signified an *oath*, as well as the *eucharist*. The utmost this can prove is, that they considered taking the sacrament, relative to tacit or expressed obligations, equivalent to an oath.—*Am. Ed.*

<sup>4</sup> Se sacramento obstringere nē furta, nē latrocinia, nē adulteria committerent, nē fidem fallerent.

<sup>5</sup> Lib. 10, ch. 97.

<sup>6</sup> "Concerning their sacraments."

<sup>7</sup> Hist. Eccl. lib. 3, cap. 33.

<sup>8</sup> Selden. de Syned. l. 1, cap. 9. V. Heraldum in Tertul. Apologt. cap. 39

interprets the place of *Origen* in the beginning of his book against *Celsus*, where *Celsus* begins his charge against the Christians, ὡς συνθηκας κρυβδην προς ἀλληλους πονουμενων χειριστων πασα τα νενομισμενα, "that the Christians were secretly devising contracts one with another against matters established by law," where he takes συνθηκας, not, as *Gelenius* renders it, *conventus*, but in its proper sense for contracts or covenants that were made by the Christians, as by other societies, only permitted, and tolerated by the commonwealth. And we find by *Pliny*, that when the *hetæriæ*, "sects among the Romans," were forbidden, he brought the Christians in under that law; the ground of those societies was only a mutual compact and agreement among the persons of it: such as among the *Essenes* of the *Jews*, and the schools of philosophers among the *Greeks*. *Josephus* mentions the ὄρκους φρεκωδεις, "horrible oaths," of those who were admitted into the society of the *Essenes*. And so in all other societies which subsist only from mutual confederation in a commonwealth.<sup>1</sup> Thus I acknowledge it to be in Christianity, that there must be such a supposed contract or voluntary consent in the persons engaged in such societies. But with this observable difference, that although there must be a consent in both, yet the one is wholly free as to any pre-engagement or obligation, to wit, as well as to the act itself; but in religious societies, though the act of consent be free, yet there is an antecedent obligation upon men, binding them to this voluntary consent. The want of the understanding this difference, is the very foundation of that opinion men call *Erastianism*. For the followers of *Erastus*, when they find that Christians did act *ex confœderatâ disciplinâ*, "from confederated discipline," they presently conclude all church power lay only in mutual consent. It is granted, church power doth suppose consent; but then all Christians are under an obligation from the nature of Christianity to express this consent, and to submit to all censures legally inflicted. About the *hetæriæ* and societies among the *Romans*, we may take notice of the law of the Twelve Tables. So in the collection of *Lud. Charondus*.<sup>2</sup> "Let the power of covenanting what they will, be granted societies of the same college, having the right of fellowship, and agreeing amongst themselves, provided that they infringe not on any public law."

<sup>1</sup> Joseph. Hales. p. 2, cap. 12.

<sup>2</sup> Sodalibus qui ejusdem Collegii sunt, et jus cœundi habent, potestas esto pacis quam volunt inter se inuendæ dum nè quid ex publicâ lege corrumpant. Ex Caio, c. 4, D. de collec. et corp.



§ 5. I confess, when persons are entered into a visible church society by baptism, if they will own that profession they were baptized into, and are not guilty either of plain ignorance, or manifest scandal, and demand as their right the other ordinances of the gospel; I see not by what power they may be excluded. If we fix not in a serious visible profession as the ground of giving right, but require positive evidences of grace in every one to be admitted to ordinances as the only thing giving right, for my part, setting aside the many inconveniences besides, which attend that in reference to the persons to be admitted, I see not how with a safe and good conscience ordinances can be administered by any. My reason is this: Every one, especially a minister, in that case ought to proceed upon certain grounds that the person admitted hath right to the ordinance to be administered; but if positive signs of grace be required, a man's conscience cannot proceed upon any certainty, without infallible knowledge of another's spiritual state, which I suppose none will pretend to. My meaning is, that which gives right, must be something evident to the person admitting into it, if it be his duty to inquire after it; but if only positive signs of grace be looked on, as giving right, the ground of right can never be so evident to another person, as to proceed with a good conscience, *i. e.* with a full persuasion of another's right to the administration of any ordinance to him. If it be said, that these are required only as tokens of a true visible profession, and it is that which gives the right; I reply, our knowledge of, and assent to the conclusion, can be no stronger, nor more certain than to the premises from whence it is inferred, if therefore true profession gives right, and our knowledge of that proceeds upon our knowledge of the work of grace, we are left at the same uncertainty we were at before. But if we say, that an outward profession of the gospel (where there is nothing rendering men incapable of owning it, which is ignorance, nor declaring they do not own it, which is scandal) is that which gives a visible right to the ordinances of the church as visible, we have something to fix ourselves upon, and to found a persuasion of the right of persons to ordinances.

Christ when he instituted churches, did institute them as visible societies, that is, to have marks whereby to be known and distinguished, as other societies in the world are: now that which puts a difference between this and other societies, is an open profession of Christianity, which profession is

looked upon as the outward expression of the internal consent of the soul to the doctrine and laws of the gospel. Which outward evidence of consent, where there is nothing evidently and directly oppugning it, is that which the church of God in admission of visible members is to proceed upon. I nowhere find that ever Christ or his apostles, in making disciples, or admitting to church membership, did exact any more than a professed willingness to adhere to the doctrine which they preached; nor that they refused any one who did declare their desire to join with them. An owning Christianity is all we read of antecedent to admission of church members. And if anything else be further required as necessary, we must either say the word of God is defective in institutions of necessity to the church, which I suppose the assertors of it will not be so inconsistent to their own principles, as to do; or else must produce, where anything further is required by the word of God.

§ 6. By this we may see what to answer those who require an explicit covenant from all members of the church, as that which gives the form and being to a church. If they mean only in the first constitution of a visible church, an express owning of the gospel covenant; there is none will deny that to be necessary to make one a member of the visible church of Christ. If they further mean, that there must be a real confederation between those who join together in gospel ordinances in order to their being a church, I know none will question it that know what it is that makes a society to be so; which is such a real confederation with one another. If they mean further, that though Christians be bound by virtue of their gospel covenant to join with some church society, yet not being determined by Scripture to what particular church they should join; therefore for Christians' better understanding what their mutual duty is to one another; and who that pastor is to whom they owe the relation of member, that there should be some significant declaration either by words or actions of their willingness to join with such a particular society in gospel ordinances; I shall grant this to be necessary too. But if beyond this their meaning be, that a formal explicit covenant be absolutely necessary to make any one a member of a church, I see no reason for it. For,

1. If there may be a real confederation without this, then this is not necessary; but there may be a real confederation without this explicit covenant: as appears in those churches of Christ, both in primitive times, and since the reformation,

who have never used it, which none I suppose who maintain this opinion will deny to have been true visible churches of Christ.

2. If the gospel covenant entered into by any gives a right to gospel ordinances by itself, then an explicit covenant is not that which makes one a member of a church; but the gospel covenant gives that right to all gospel ordinances. If by baptism, the person baptized have a legal title to all gospel ordinances; then, &c. The *minor* appears, in that they are admitted church members by baptism; and how can any be a member of a church, and not have right to all the ordinances in it, supposing capacity to receive them? A right once received, continues till it be forfeited, especially when it is such a right as is not limited to any particular privileges, but to all the privileges of that society into which they are entered.

3. The reality of consent may be sufficiently manifested without an explicit covenant; as in the joining with those who are under the same profession in the common acts of the society, and acceptance of, and submission to the rulers of that society, which implicitly is that covenant which they would have expressed; and actions in this case, are as declarative and significative as words.

4. If a church may cease to be a true church without explicit disowning such a covenant, then it is not explicit covenanting which makes a church; but a church may cease to be a true church without explicit disowning it; as in case of universal corruption, as to word and sacraments; as in the church of *Rome*, that still owns herself for a church. The ground of the consequence is from the parity of reason as to contraries.

§ 7. But though I see no reason at all, why an explicit covenant should be so necessary to a church, that we cannot suppose a true church without it; yet I no ways deny the lawfulness or expediency, in many cases, of having a personal profession from all baptized in infancy, when they come to age, (which we may, if we please, call *confirmation*;) and the necessity of desiring admission, in order to participation of all ordinances: which desire of admission, doth necessarily imply men's consenting to the laws of that society, and walking according to the duties of it; and so they are *consequently* and *virtually*, though not *expressly* and *formally*, bound to all the duties required of them in that relation. When churches are overrun with looseness, ignorance, and profaneness, or when Christians are under persecution, an external

profession of the gospel covenant, and declaring their owning the society they are entered into, and submitting to the laws of it, may be, if not wholly necessary, yet very useful and expedient: and indeed, at all times we see people understand so little of their duty or engagements, and are so hardly brought under the exercise of gospel discipline, that an open profession of their submission to the rules of the gospel, seems the most likely way to advance the practice, power, and purity of religion: but of this much is spoken by others lately, and therefore I supersede. From all this we see, that every society, implying a joining together in some common duties, nature tells us there must be a real consenting together, explicit or implicit, in all persons who enter into such a society.



## CHAPTER VIII.

The last thing dictated by the law of nature, is, that every offender against the laws of the society, must give an account of his actions to the governors of it, and submit to the censures inflicted upon him by them. The original of penalties in societies. The nature of them, according to the nature and ends of societies. The penalty of the church no civil mulct; because its laws and ends are different from civil societies. The practice of the *Druids* in excommunication. Among the *Jews*, whether a mere civil or sacred penalty. The latter proved by six arguments. Objections answered. The original of the mistake showed. The first part concluded.

§ 1. NATURE dictates further, that in a well-ordered society, every offender against the rules of that society must give an account of his actions to the governors of that society, and submit to the censures of it, according to the judgment of the rulers of it. In all societies subsisting by laws, men being more ruled by hopes and fears than by a sense of duty, or love of goodness, it is necessary for maintaining a society, that there must be not only a declaration of what men ought to do, but a setting forth the penalties which they must undergo upon violation of the laws whereon the society doth subsist: and as there must be penalties annexed, as the sanction of the law, so it must of necessity be implied in a well-ordered society, that every person, as he doth promise obedience to the law, so by the same obligation he is bound to submit to the penalties upon disobedience: for whatever law binds to duty where there is a penalty threatened, doth bind likewise to punishment upon neglect of duty: for no sooner is the law broken, but the offender lies under the penal sanction of that law, and is thereby bound to give an account of himself and actions, to those governors who are bound to see the laws obeyed, or offenders punished. Guilt follows immediately upon the breach of the law, which is nothing else but the offender's obligation to punishment. From this obligation on the offender's part, ariseth a new relation

between the governor of the society and the offender. On the governor's part, a right to punish, vindictive justice supposing offences committed, and on the offender's part, an obligation to undergo what shall be inflicted upon him for his offence: punishment being nothing else but *malum passionis ob malum actionis*, "suffering an evil inflicted on account of an evil done." There must be then these things supposed in any well ordered society; laws to be governed by, rulers to see the laws kept, or offenders punished, penalties made known for offenders, submission of the persons in the societies to the penalties, if they deserve them. But now of what kind, nature, and degree the penalties must be, must be resolved according to the nature, end, and design of the constitution of the society. If it be a society for preservation of the rights of bodies, or estates, the penalties must be either pecuniary or corporal: and the ground is, because the end of legal punishment is not properly revenge, but the preservation of the society, which without punishments could not be. A threefold end is therefore assigned to punishments; the reformation of the offending person, the prevention of further offences in the society of the same kind, and the being a terror and example to others; the first is called *νουθεσια, κολασις*, or *παραινεσις*, "reprehension, restraint, check." The second *τιμωρια*, "vengeance," being for the preservation of the honour of the magistrate: the third *παραδειγμα*, "punishment by making an example of," when the punishment is inflicted upon one, that others should take notice of it; which must be always done in a public manner. So *παραδειγματισαι*, "to make a public example of," in *Matthew*, is opposed to *καθρα απολυσαι*, "privately to dismiss."<sup>1</sup>

§ 2. These things being thus in general considered, come we now to apply it to the church considered as a society. That it hath peculiar laws to be governed by, appears by the distinct nature, end, and design of the constitution of it; which is not to preserve any outward rights, but to maintain and keep up a religious society for the service of God; and therefore the penal sanctions of these laws cannot properly be any corporal or pecuniary mulct, but somewhat answerable to the nature of the society. It must be then somewhat which implies the deprivation of that which is the chief benefit of that society. The benefits of it are the privileges and honour

<sup>1</sup> Gellius Noct. Attic. l. 16, c. 16. V. Grotium de jure belli, l. 2, c. 20, s. 6, 7, 8. Matth. i. 19.

which men enjoy by thus associating themselves for so high an employment: that punishment then must be the loss of those privileges which the corporation enjoys, which must be by exclusion of the offending persons from communion with the society. Hence we see it is evident, that which we call excommunication is the greatest penalty which the church, as a society, can inflict upon the members of it, considered as such. And hence it is likewise clear, that as the society of the church is distinct from others, the laws, ends, governors of a different nature; so the punishment must be a punishment distinct from civil, and ordained wholly in order to the peculiar ends of this society; which they do not well consider, who deny any such power as that of excommunication peculiar to the church, which is as much as to deny that the laws whereby the church is ruled, are different from the civil laws, or the end of this society from the ends of civil societies: for the punishment must be proportioned to the laws, and referred immediately to its proper ends. It were no ways difficult to answer the pretences brought against this: for although I acknowledge a subordination of this religious society to the supreme authority in the commonwealth, and that the rules concerning the government of the society in common must have their sanction from thence; yet this no ways implies but it may have its peculiar penalties and power to inflict them, any more than any company of tradesmen have not power to exclude any from their company for breaking the rules of the company, because they are subordinate to the supreme authority: or any college to expel any from thence, for breaking the local statutes of it, which are distinct from the common laws. Nor is it any argument, that because Christians had mutual confederations in times of persecution for the exercise of censures, therefore these censures were only arbitrary and human; unless it be proved, that it was not a duty in them so to confederate and join together, nor was there any antecedent obligation to inflict those censures upon offenders. Much less, thirdly, because their jurisdiction is not civil and coactive, therefore they have none at all; which is as much as to say, the laws of scripture are not our common laws, therefore they are none at all.

§ 3. I shall not here insist upon the divine right of power to excommunicate offenders, founded upon the positive laws of Christ, it being my only business now to show what foundation such a power hath in the law of nature, which we have seen doth follow upon the church's being a distinct

society ruled by other laws, acting on other ends, subsisting upon different grounds from any other society. A further evidence we have of this, how consonant it is to the light of nature, from the practice of all societies pretending to be for the worship of God, who have looked upon this as the proper penalty of offenders among them, to be excluded out of those societies. Thus we find among the *Druids*, whose great office was to take care of the worship of their gods, and to instruct the people in religion, as *Cæsar*<sup>1</sup> relates: "They are present at the sacred rites, take care of the public and private sacrifices, and expound the obligations and mysteries of religion;"<sup>2</sup> and accordingly the punishment of disobedience among them was excommunication from their sacrifices, which they looked upon as the greatest punishment that could be inflicted upon them, as *Cæsar* at large describes it: "If any public or private character, has not obeyed the decree, he is interdicted at the sacrifices; and they who are thus interdicted, are accounted amongst the number of the impious and wicked, from whom all withdraw, and whose intercourse all shun, lest they should sustain any disadvantage as from contagion, or that neither right nor any honour, when solicited, should be imparted."<sup>3</sup>

The practice of excommunication among the Jews is not questioned by any, but the right ground and original of that practice, with the effect and extent of it. Some conceive it to have been only taken up among the Jews, after the power of capital punishments was taken from them; and that it was used by them, wholly upon a civil account, not extending to the exclusion of men from their worship in the temple or synagogues, but only to be a note of infamy upon offending persons. This opinion, though entertained by persons of much skill and learning in the Jewish antiquities, yet carries not that evidence with it to gain my assent to it. For first, the causes of excommunication were not such as were expressed by their law to deserve such civil punishments as might have been inflicted by them upon offenders, nor were

<sup>1</sup> *Cæsar de bello Gallico*. l. 6. V. *Nicolaum Damascenum de moribus gentium de cercetis*, τοὺς ἀδικησαντάς ὁ τινοὺν τῶν ἱερῶν ἀπειροῦσιν.

<sup>2</sup> *Illi rebus divinis intersunt, sacrificia publica ac privata procurant, religiones interpretantur.*

<sup>3</sup> *Si quis aut privatus aut publicus eorum decreto non stetit, sacrificiis interdicunt: hæc pœna apud eos est gravissima: quibus ita est interdictum, ii numero impiorum et sceleratorum habentur; iis omnes decedunt, aditum eorum sermionemq; defugiunt, nè quid ex contagione incommodi accipiant, neq; iis petentibus jus redditur, neq; honos ullus communicatur.*



they generally matters of a civil nature, but matters of offence and scandal, as will appear to any that shall peruse the twenty-four causes of excommunication, related out of the Jewish writers by *Selden*<sup>1</sup> and *Joh. Coch.* Such were *the neglecting the precepts of the Scribes, the vain pronouncing the name of God, bearing witness against a Jew before heathen tribunals, doing any common work in the afternoon of the day before the Passover*, with others of a like nature. If excommunication had been then taken up among them only *ex confœderatâ disciplinâ*, to supply the defect of civil judicatories, at least all capital offenders must have lain under the sentence of excommunication. But here we read not of any being excommunicated for those, but for other less matters, which were looked upon as matters of scandal among them: and though some of them were matters of civil injuries, yet it follows not that men were excommunicated for them as such, but for the scandal which attended them. As, in the Christian church, men are excommunicated for matters which are punishable by the civil magistrate, but not under that notion, but as they are offences to that Christian society which they live among. *Secondly*, It appears that excommunication was not a mere civil penalty, because the increasing or abatement of that penalty did depend upon the person's repentance and desire of absolution. Now civil penalties do not regard the intention and mind of the person, but the quality and desert of the action; the reason is, because human laws do respect immediately *actionem ipsam, non animum agentis*, "the action itself, and not the intention of the doer," unless it be only so far as the mind hath influence upon the action. But now it is otherwise in such laws which take immediate notice of the intention of the mind, and only of outward actions as they are significative and expressive of the inward intention: for in these, though the ground of proceeding to penalties be from the notice taken of the outward action, yet that outward action being subject to penalty, as expressive of the mind's intention, where there may be sufficient evidence given of the integrity and uprightness of the intention afterwards, there may be proportionably a relaxation of the penalty; because the end of the penalty inflicted was not to be an act of justice excluded from mercy in the end of administration as in civil judicatories, but an act of justice whose end was mercy,

<sup>1</sup> *Selden de jure natur. &c. l. 4, cap. 8. Excerpt. Gem. Saub. pag. 147.*

that is, the regaining and recovering the offender's soul from sin, by inflicting such a penalty upon him, as might humble him under the sense of it. Hence appears the great reasonableness of their proceedings in the management of discipline in the primitive times, who did not fix a certain time as a standing law for all offenders, but did increase or lessen both the time and weight of their penance, according to the evidences given of their submission and true repentance for their miscarriages. That it was thus now in reference to excommunication among the Jews, appears from what is asserted by the learned *Buxtorf*<sup>1</sup> concerning the time of the less excommunication, called נִדְּדוּי *Niddui*, "depart, be separated," which remained thirty days usually, but were shortened by confession and desire of absolution: "It continues thirty days, which may, however, be shortened by repentance and prayer."<sup>2</sup> But if after thirty days past, he continue impenitent; the judge as he sees fit, increaseth the punishment, so as to double or treble the time, or extend it to his whole life: if he died without repentance, a stone is laid upon his bier, to show he deserved lapidation; they wept not for him, nor buried him in the common place of burial. Further, *Buxtorf*<sup>3</sup> there allegeth this constitution of their law; that if he that was under *Niddui*, and desired not absolution, was the second time under it, if that did no good on him, then he was excommunicated with the higher sort of excommunication, called חֶרֶק "cut off," which is likewise observed by *Joh. Coch.* *Mr. Selden*, and others. From whence it is evident that this was an ecclesiastical censure, and not merely civil, because the main end of it was not satisfaction to the law, but the repentance of the person who lay under the fault; and according to the evidence given of it, the penalty was relaxed or increased, which argument not yet taken notice of nor improved by writers on this subject, seems to make the case clear, that excommunication among the Jews was not a mere *outlawry*, as some conceive it to have been.

§ 4. *Thirdly*, I argue, if it was not the breach of the law, but the publicity of the offence, or the scandal of it which was the ground of excommunication; then it was not a mere civil penalty, but an ecclesiastical censure: for civil penalties do proceed upon the breach of the law, and alter not as to the

<sup>1</sup> Epist. Hebr. Institut. p. 55.

<sup>2</sup> Durat triginta dies qui tamen pœnitentiâ et deprecatione decurtantur.

<sup>3</sup> V. Selden de jure nat. &c. lib. 4, cap. 8, p. 516. Schulehan. A ruch chosen. hammischpat. s. 100. Excerpt. Gen. Sam. hed. p. 141, n. 11, 12.

publicity or privateness of the offence; but here it is evident that the same offence deserving excommunication if done in public, did not if done in private, or was left at the person's liberty to have the offender excommunicated or not. That which is reckoned as the first cause of excommunication, is affront or contempt put upon a wise man, or *Rabbi*, or one that was תלמיד חכם "a student in the law;" now it is determined by them in this case, that if it were done in private, the *Rabbi* might pardon him: but if in public, he could not. For as *Joh. Coch.*<sup>1</sup> gives the reason, *publicum Doctoris ludibrium in legis contemptum redundas*: "the contempt of public teachers of the law, redounds to the dishonour of the law itself." Thus it was the scandal of the fault, and not the bare offence which made excommunication necessary among them; and not as that scandal was a mere defamation of the person, but as it redounded to the contempt of the law. *Fourthly*, I argue from the form used in excommunication by them. There are two forms produced of their excommunications, the one by *Buxtorf* out of an old Hebrew manuscript,<sup>2</sup> the beginning of which is, "by the authority of the Lord of lords, let Plonus, the son of Plonus, be an anathema, in both houses, the higher and the lower courts of judgment,"<sup>3</sup> where two things evidence, it was accounted a sacred and no civil action, doing it immediately in the name and authority of the Lord of lords; and pronouncing him excommunicate both in heaven and earth. So *R. Elieser*, speaking of the excommunication of the Cuthites or Samaritans,<sup>4</sup> "and by anathema they doomed the Cuthites, by the mystery of the name of Amphorasch, and by the words engraven on plates, both by the anathema of the higher and lower courts of judgment,"<sup>5</sup> as it is translated by *Guli. Vorstius*, who in his notes upon that book produceth a most dreadful sentence of excommunication used to this day in many synagogues, which they call *Cherem Col Bo*. from the book whence it is taken, which runs most solemnly in the several names of God,<sup>6</sup> whereby they do *chamatize*, curse and devote the persons against whom it is pronounced. *Fifthly*, it appears

<sup>1</sup> P. 146.

<sup>2</sup> Lex Rabbinic. p. 828.

<sup>3</sup> Ex sententiâ Domini Dominorum, sit in Anathemate Plonus filius Ploni, in utraque domo judicii, superiorum, scilicet et inferiorum, &c.

<sup>4</sup> Pirk. R. Elieser, c. 38, p. 101.

<sup>5</sup> Atque anathemate devovebant Cuthæos mysterio nominis Amphorasch, et Scriptura exarata in tabulis, et anathemate domus judicii superioris, atque anathemate curiæ inferioris.

<sup>6</sup> P. 226, ad 230.

not to be a merely civil thing instead of civil power, because they use it against those over whom they have no civil jurisdiction, as appears by their *chumatizing* the Christians in their liturgies, as *Buxtorf* observes. *Sixthly*, I argue from the effects of it, because they who lay under it were excluded from public worship, which is averred by *Buxtorf*, *Coch.* and others in the places forecited. It is acknowledged that he that was only under *Niddui*, might be present at public worship; but even there he was under his separation too, of four cubits from any other Israelite.

§ 5 And hence in probability might the mistake arise, because those under *Niddui* might appear at the temple or synagogue, therefore excommunication was no prohibition à *sacris*.<sup>1</sup> But he that was under *Cherem*, *non docet, non doceter*, “neither teacheth others, nor is taught himself,” saith *Joh. Cocceius*; and *Buxtorf* of one under *Cherem*, *omnino à cœtu sacro excluditur*, “is altogether excluded from the holy assembly:” and in this sense *Buxtorf*<sup>2</sup> expressly takes the turning out of the synagogue, *Joh.* 9, 22; 12, 42, which, saith he, is done by *Cherem*. But against this it is strongly pleaded by our learned Mr. *Selden*<sup>3</sup> that putting out of the synagogue is nothing else but excommunicating לְכַדּוּל כֵּן הַקָּהָל “to separate from the congregation,” taking קָהָל and so συναγωγή “synagogue,” in the civil and not sacred sense, as it denotes an excluding them from common society; but though it be freely granted that that is sometimes the signification of קָהָל and συναγωγή as *Mat.* x. 17, yet those particulars being considered, which are already laid down, I shall leave it to consideration whether it be more probable to take the word *synagogue* here in a civil or sacred sense; when the occasion expressed is merely a matter of doctrine and opinion, and not anything condemned by their law. Another thing which hath been, I believe, a great ground of mistaking in this matter, is, that excluding from the civil society among them was always consequent upon excommunication; the reason whereof was, because the church and commonwealth were not distinct among the Jews; and the same persons who took care of sacred, did likewise of civil things, (there being no distinct *Sanhedrim* among them as some imagine:) but from hence it no ways follows, but their excommunication might be an exclusion from sacred worship as well as

<sup>1</sup> From sacred rites.

<sup>2</sup> *Ep. institut.* pag. 56.

<sup>3</sup> *De Synedriis*, lib. 1, cap. 7.



civil society. However, were it as they pretend, that it was from civil commerce, yet the whole people of the Jews being כְּנֻלָּה God's "peculiar people," and his only church in being before the times of the gospel, an exclusion in that respect from the common society of them, might deservedly be looked upon as a sacred action, and not merely civil, it being a separation from a people whose main ligature was their being a church of God, or a community gathered together for God's worship and service. Thus we see the church of the Jews had this power among them; and for the Christian church, the practice of discipline upon offenders was never questioned, though the right hath been; so that from hence we gather, in that it hath been the practice of societies constituted for the worship of God, to call offenders to an account for their offences, and if upon examination they be found guilty, to exclude them their society; that it is a dictate of the law of nature, that every offender against the laws of a society must give an account of his actions to the rulers of it, and submit to the censures inflicted on him by them. Thus I am now come to the end of my first stage, to show how far church government is founded upon the law and light of nature,

And so to the end of the first part.

## PART II.

## CHAPTER I.

The other ground of divine right considered, viz. God's positive laws; which imply a certain knowledge of God's intention to bind men perpetually. As to which, the arguments drawn from tradition, and the practice of the church in after ages, proved invalid by several arguments. In order to a right stating the question, some concessions laid down; First, that there must be some form of government in the church. The notion of a church explained: whether it belongs only to particular congregations, which are manifested not to be of God's primary intention, but for our necessity. Evidence for national churches under the gospel. A national church government necessary.

§ 1. I now come to the second way, whereby anything comes to be of unalterable divine right, which is, by the positive laws of God, which do bind universally to obedience. In the entrance into this discourse, it is necessary to lay down the ways, whereby we find out a divine positive law determining an unalterable obligation: which must be either by express words of scripture, or by some other certain way, whereby to gather from thence, that it was God's intention to bind men. For the main thing requisite to make a standing universal positive law, is God's declaring his mind, that the thing inquired into, should unalterably bind men to the practice of it. Now whatever doth sufficiently manifest God's intention, is a *medium* to find out such a law by, and nothing else: but it must be such a manifestation as gives a man's mind sufficient evidence and testimony whereon to build a true, certain, and divine assent to the thing, as revealed: so that whatsoever binds the conscience as a law, must first be entertained by the understanding as a matter of faith; not as it imports something merely *doctrinal* and *dogmatical*, but as it implies the *matter* of a *divine revelation*, and the object of an assent upon the credibility of a *testimony*. For God having the

only immediate authority over the consciences of men, nothing can bind immediately the conscience but a divine law, neither can anything bind as such, but what the understanding assents unto, as revealed by God himself. Now the Word of God being the only *codex* and *digest* of divine laws, whatever law we look for, must either be found there in express terms, or at least so couched therein, that every one by the exercise of his understanding, may by a certain and easy collection, gather the universal obligation of the thing inquired after. In this case then, whatsoever is not immediately founded upon a divine *testimony*, cannot be made use of as a *medium* to infer an universally binding law by: so that all traditions and historical evidence will be unserviceable to us, when we inquire into God's intentions in binding men's consciences. Matters of fact, and mere apostolical practice, may I freely grant, receive much light from the records of succeeding ages; but they can never give a man's understanding sufficient ground to infer any divine law, arising from those facts attested to be the practice or records of succeeding ages.

§ 2. For *first*, The foundation and ground of our assent in this case, is not the bare testimony of antiquity; but the assurance which we have, either that their practice did not vary from what was apostolical; or in their writings, that they could not mistake concerning what they deliver unto us: and therefore those who would infer the necessary obligation of men to any form of government, because that was practised by the apostles, and then prove the apostolical practice from that of the ages succeeding, or from their writings, must first of all prove, that what was done then, was certainly the apostles' practice, and so prove the same thing by itself, or that it was impossible they should vary from it, or that they should mistake in judging of it: for here something more is required than a mere matter of fact, in which I confess their nearness to the apostles' times doth give them an advantage above the ages following, to discern what it was; but such a practice is required, as infers an universal obligation upon all places, times, and persons. Therefore these things must be manifested, *that such things were unquestionably the practice of those ages and persons; that their practice was the same with the apostles; that what they did, was not from any prudential motives; but by virtue of a law which did bind them to that practice.* Which things are easily passed over by the most eager disputers of the controversy about church government, but how necessary they are to be proved before any form of

government be asserted, so necessary, that without it there can be no true church, any weak understanding may discern.

*Secondly*, Supposing that apostolical practice be sufficiently attested by the following ages, yet unless it be cleared from scripture, that it was God's intention that the apostles' actions should continually bind the church, there can be nothing inferred that doth concern us in point of conscience. I say, that though the matter of fact be evidenced by posterity, yet the obligatory nature of that fact must depend on scripture: and the apostles' intentions must not be built upon men's bare surmises, nor upon after practices, especially if different from the constitution of things during the apostles' times. And here those have somewhat whereon to exercise their understandings, who assert an obligation upon men to any form of government, by virtue of an apostolical practice; which must of necessity suppose a different state of things from what they were when the apostles first established governors over churches. As how those who were appointed governors over particular congregations by the apostles, come to be by virtue of that ordination, governors over many congregations of like nature and extent with that over which they were set: and whether, if it were the apostles' intention that such governors should be always in the church, is it not necessary that that intention of theirs be declared by a standing law, that such there must be, for here matter of fact and practice can be no evidence, when it is supposed to be different from the constitution of churches-afterwards: but of this more hereafter.

*Thirdly*, Supposing any form of government in itself necessary, and that necessity not determined by a law in the word of God, the scripture is thereby apparently argued to be insufficient for its end; for then *deficit in necessariis*, "is deficient in necessary matters;" some things are necessary for the church of God which the scripture is wholly silent in. I say not, that every thing about church government must be written in scripture; but supposing any one form necessary, it must be there commanded, or the scripture is an imperfect rule, which contains not all things necessary by way of precept: for there can be no other necessity universal, but either by way of *means to an end*, or by way of *divine command*. I know none will say, that any particular form of government is necessary absolutely, by way of means to an end; for certainly, supposing no obligation from scripture, government by an equality of power in the officers of the church, or by superiority of one order above another, is indifferent in order



to the general ends of government, and one not more necessary than the other. If any one form then be necessary, it must be by that of command; and if there be a command universally binding, whose footsteps cannot be traced in the word of God, how can the scriptures be a perfect rule, if it fails in determining binding laws? So that we must, if we own the scripture's sufficiency as a binding rule, appeal to that about anything pleaded as necessary, by virtue of any divine command: and if such a law cannot be met with in scripture, which determines the case in hand one way or other by way of necessary obligation, I have ground to look upon that which is thus left undetermined by God's positive laws, to be a matter of Christian liberty; and that neither part is to be looked upon as necessary for the church of God, as exclusive of the other.

§ 3. This I suppose is the case, as to particular forms of government in the church of God: but that I may not only suppose but prove it, I now come to the stating of the question, which if ever necessary to be done anywhere, it is in the controversy of church government, the most of men's heats in this matter arising from want of right understanding the thing in question between them. In the stating the question, I shall proceed by degrees, and show how far we acknowledge anything belonging to government in the church to be of an unalterable divine right. *First*, That there must be a form of government in the church of God, is necessary by virtue, not only of that law of nature which provides for the preservation of societies, but likewise by virtue of that divine law, which takes care for the church's preservation in peace and unity. I engage not here in the controversy, whether a particular congregation be the first *political* church or not; it sufficeth for my purpose, that there are other churches besides particular congregations: I mean, not only the *Catholic* visible church, which is the *first*, not only in *order of consideration*, but *nature* too, as a *totum integrale*, "an integral whole," before the *similar parts* of it, but in respect of all other accidental modifications of churches, from the several ways of their combination together. They who define a church by stated worshipping congregations, do handsomely, as logicians say, "beg the question," *i. e.* beg to be granted what they desire, by placing that in their definition of a church, which is the thing in question: which is, whether there be no other church but such particular congregations? Which is as if one should go about to prove, that there were

no civil societies but in particular corporations, and to prove it, should give such a definition of civil society, that it is, a company of men joined together in a corporation, for the preservation of their rights and privileges, under the governors of such a place. It must be first proved, that no other company of men can be called a civil society besides a corporation: and so that no other society of men joining together in the profession of the true religion, can be called a church, but such as join in particular congregations.

§ 4. To which purpose it is very observable, that particular congregations are not *de primaria intentione divinâ*, "of the primary divine intention," for if the whole world could join together in the public worship of God, no doubt that would be most properly a church, but particular congregations are only accidental, in reference to God's intention of having a church, because of the impossibility of all men's joining together for the convenient distribution of church privileges, and administration of gospel ordinances. For it is evident, that the privileges and ordinances, do immediately and primarily belong to the catholic visible church, in which Christ to that end hath set officers, as the apostle clearly expresseth, 1 *Corinth.* xii. 28, (for how apostles should be set as officers over particular congregations, whose commission extended to the whole world, is, I think, somewhat hard to understand,) but for the more convenient participation of privileges and ordinances, particular congregations are necessary. This will be best illustrated by examples. We read, (*Esther* i. 3,) that King *Ahasuerus* made a feast for all his princes and servants. Doubtless the king did equally respect them all as a body in the feasting of them, and did bestow his entertainment upon them all as considered together; but by reason of the great multitude of them, it was impossible that they should all be feasted together in the same room; and therefore for more convenient participation of the king's bounty, it was necessary to divide themselves into particular companies, and to associate as many as conveniently could in order to that end. So it is in the church, Christ in donation of privileges equally respects the whole church; but because men cannot all meet together to participate of these privileges, a more particular distribution was necessary for that end. But a clearer example of this kind we have yet in scripture, which is, *Mark* vi. 39, in our Saviour's feeding the multitude with five loaves and two fishes; where we see our Saviour's *primary intention* was to feed the whole multitude, but for their more convenient

partaking of this food, our Saviour commands them to sit down *συμπόσια, συμπόσια*, "by companies," according to the *Hebraism* of ingeminating the words, to note the distribution of them, and therefore the Vulg. Lat. renders it *secundum contubernia*, "by tent-fellowship, or companies," that is *διαμεμερισμένως*, "distributed among themselves," as *Camerarius* expounds it, according to so many companies and divisions as might conveniently sit together, as at a table; where we plainly see this distribution was only accidental, as to Christ's primary intention of feeding the multitude, and was only necessary for their own convenience. Thus the case is evident, as to the church of God, it is our necessity and convenience which makes several congregations of the catholic visible church, and not God's primary intention, when he bestowed such privileges upon the church, that it should be understood of particular congregations.

§ 5. If then particular congregations be only accidental for our convenience, it evidently follows that the primary notion of a church doth not belong to these; nor that these are the first subject of government which belongs to a church as such, and not as crumbled into particular congregations; although the actual exercise of government be most visible and discernible there; because the joining together for participation of gospel ordinances must be in some particular company or other associated together for that end. Wherever then we find the notion of a church particular, there must be government in that church; and why a national society incorporated into one civil government, joining in the profession of Christianity, and having a right thereby to participate of gospel ordinances in the convenient distributions of them into particular congregations, should not be called a church; I confess I can see no reason. The main thing objected against it, is, that a church implies an actual joining together for participation of all gospel ordinances; but as this, as I said before, is only a begging the question, so I say now, that actual communion with any particular congregation, is not absolutely necessary to a member of a church; for supposing one baptized at sea, where no settled congregation is, (nor any more society than that which *Aristotle* calls *συμπλοια*, "voyage fellowship,") yet such a one is thereby a member of the church of God, though not of any congregation; so likewise a church then may consist of such as have a right to ordinances, without the inserting their actual participation of them in fixed congregations. A particular church then I would define thus:

That it is, *a society of men joining together in the visible profession of the true faith; having a right to, and enjoying among themselves the ordinances of the gospel.* That a whole nation professing Christianity, in which the ordinances of the gospel are duly administered in particular congregations, is such a society, is plain and evident. A clear instance of such a national constitution of a church under the gospel, we have in the prophecy of the conversion of *Egypt* and *Assyria* in gospel times. *Isaiah* xix. 19, 21, 24, 25. *We have Egypt's professing the true faith, and enjoying gospel ordinances,* verse 19, 21, which, according to the prophetic style are set down under the representation of such things as were then in use among the Jews; *by an altar in the midst of the land,* verse 19. The altar noting the true worship of God; and being in the midst of the land, the universal owning of this worship by all the people of the land. God owns them for a church, verse 25. *Whom the Lord of hosts shall bless,* saying, *Blessed be Egypt my people.* The very name whereby Israel was called while it was a church; אַמִּי, "ammi," *Hosea* ii. 1. And when God unchurched them, it was under this name, לֹא-אִמִּי, "Lo-Ammi, ye are not my people." As much then as Israel was a church when God owned it for his people: so should Egypt be upon their conversion to the faith of Christ, which was done upon *Mark's* preaching at *Alexandria* not long after the death of Christ.

§ 6. This then we have now briefly cleared, that a nation joining in profession of Christianity, is a true church of God: whence it evidently follows, that there must be a form of ecclesiastical government over a nation as a church, as well as of civil government, over it, as a society governed by the same laws. Therefore some make this necessary to a national church, *national union in one ecclesiastical body in the same community of ecclesiastical government.*<sup>1</sup> For every society must have its government belonging to it as such a society, and the same reason that makes government necessary in any particular congregation, will make it necessary for all the particular congregations joining together in one visible society as a particular national church. For the unity and peace of that church, ought much more to be looked after than of any one particular congregation, inasmuch as the peace of all the particular combinations of men

<sup>1</sup> Hudson of the Church, cap. 1, sect. 3.



for participation of ordinances doth depend upon, and is comprehended in the peace of the whole. But though I say from hence that some form of public government by the subordination of particular assemblies to the government of the whole body of them is necessary, yet I am far from asserting the necessity of any one form of that government, much more, from saying that no national church can subsist without one national officer, as the high-priest under the law, or one national place of worship, as the temple was. The want of considering of which, viz. that national churches may subsist without that form of them under the Jews, is doubtless the great ground of men's quarrelling against them; but with what reason, let men impartially judge. This then we agree, that some form of government is necessary in every particular church, and so that government in the church of divine and unalterable right; and that not only of particular congregations, but of all societies which may be called churches, whether provincial or national,

## CHAPTER II.

The second concession is, that church government formally considered, must be administered by officers of divine appointment. To that end, the continuance of a Gospel ministry fully cleared from all those arguments, by which positive laws are proved immutable. The reason of the appointment of it continues; the dream as to a *seculum spiritus sancti* discussed, first broached by the Mendicant Friars. Its occasion and unreasonableness shown. God's declaring the perpetuity of a Gospel ministry, Matth. xxviii. 19, explained. A novel interpretation largely refuted. The world to come, what. A ministry necessary for the church's continuance, Ephes. iv. 12, explained and vindicated.

§ 1. SECONDLY, that the government of the church ought to be administered by officers of divine appointment, is another thing I will yield to be of divine right; but the church here I take not in that latitude which I did in the former concession, but I take it chiefly here for the members of the church, as distinct from officers, as it is taken in *Acts* xv. 22. So that my meaning is, that there must be a standing perpetual ministry in the church of God, whose care and employment must be, to oversee and govern the people of God, and to administer gospel ordinances among them, and this is of divine and perpetual right. That officers were appointed by Christ in the church for these ends at first, is evident from the direct affirmation of scripture, *God hath set in the church, first apostles, secondly prophets, thirdly teachers, &c.* 1 *Corinth.* xii. 28; *Eph.* v. 8, 11, and other places to the same purpose. This being then a thing acknowledged, that they were at first of divine institution, and so were appointed by a divine positive law, which herein determines and restrains the law of nature, (which doth not prescribe the certain qualifications of the persons to govern this society, nor the instalment or admission of them into this employment, viz. by ordination.) The only inquiry then left is, Whether a standing gospel ministry be such a positive law, as is to

remain perpetually in the church, or not? which I shall make appear by those things which I laid down in the entrance of this treatise, as the notes whereby to know when positive laws are unalterable.

§ 2. The first was, when the same reason of the command continues still; and what reason is there why Christ should appoint officers to rule his church then, which will not hold now? Did the people of God need ministers then to be as *Stars*,<sup>1</sup> (as they are called in scripture,) to lead them unto Christ, and do they not as well need them now? Had people need of *guides* then,<sup>2</sup> when the doctrine of the gospel *was confirmed to them by miracles*,<sup>3</sup> and have they not much more now? Must there be some then to *oppose gainsayers*,<sup>4</sup> and must they have an absolute liberty of prophesying now, when it is foretold what times of seduction the last shall be?<sup>5</sup> Must there be some then *to rule over their charge, as they that must give an account*,<sup>6</sup> and is not the same required still? Were there some then *to reprove, rebuke, exhort, to preach in season, out of season*,<sup>7</sup> and is there not the same necessity of these things still? Was it not enough then, that there were so many in all churches that had extraordinary gifts of *tongues, prophesying, praying, interpretation of tongues*,<sup>8</sup> but besides those there were *some pastors by office*, whose duty it was *to give attendance to reading, to be wholly in these things*,<sup>9</sup> and now when these extraordinary gifts are ceased, is not there a much greater necessity than there was then, for some to be set apart and wholly designed for this work? Were ordinances only then administered by those whom *Christ commissioned*,<sup>10</sup> and such as derived their authority from them; and what reason is there that men should arrogate and take this employment upon themselves now? If Christ had so pleased, could he not have left it wholly at liberty for all believers to have gone about preaching the gospel? or why did he make choice of twelve apostles chiefly for that work, were it not his will to have some particularly to dispense the gospel? and if Christ did then separate some for that work, what reason is there why that office should be thrown common now, which Christ himself enclosed by his own appointment?

<sup>1</sup> Rev. i. 16.

<sup>3</sup> Heb. ii. 3.

<sup>5</sup> 2 Tim. iii. 1.

<sup>7</sup> 2 Tim. iv. 2.

<sup>9</sup> 1 Tim. iv. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Heb. xiii. 7.

<sup>4</sup> Titus i. 9.

<sup>6</sup> Heb. xiii. 17.

<sup>8</sup> Cor. xiv.

<sup>10</sup> Matth. xxviii. 18.

§ 3. There can be no possible reason imagined, why a gospel ministry should not continue still, unless it be that fanatic pretence of *seculum spiritus sancti*, “an over-strained<sup>1</sup> view of a dispensation of the spirit,” which dispenses with the use of all means of instruction, and gospel ordinances; which pretence is not so novel as most imagine; for setting aside the *montanistical spirit* in the primitive times, which acted upon principles much of the same nature with these we now speak of: the first rise of this *ignis fatuus* was from the *bogs* of popery, viz. from the orders of the *Dominicans* and *Franciscans*, about the middle of the twelfth century. For no sooner did the *pauperes de Lugduno*, the “paupers of Lyons,” called so in derision, or the *Waldenses* appear, making use of the word of God to confute the whole army of popish traditions, but the Dominicans and Franciscans finding themselves worsted at every turn while they disputed that ground, found out a *stratagem* whereby to recover their own credit, and to beat their adversaries quite out of the field. Which was, that the gospel which the Waldenses<sup>2</sup> adhered to so much, was now out of date, and instead of that the friars broached another gospel out of the writings of the *Abbot Joachim*, and *Cyril’s visions*, which they blasphemously named *Evangelium spiritus sancti*, “the gospel of the holy spirit,” *Evangelium novum*, “the new gospel,” and *Evangelium æternum*, “the eternal gospel,” as *Gulielmus de Sancto Amore*, their great antagonist, relates in his book *de periculis noviss. temporum*, “on the dangers of the late times,” purposely designed against the impostures of the mendicant friars, who then like locusts, rose in multitudes with their shaven crowns out of the bottomless pit. This gospel of the spirit they so much magnified above the gospel of Christ, that the same author relates these words of theirs concerning it;<sup>3</sup> “that it exceeded it as much as the kernel doth the shell, or the light of the sun doth that of the moon.” We see then from what quarter of the world this new light began to rise: but so much for this digression. To the thing itself.

§ 4. If there be such a dispensation of the spirit which takes away the use of the ministry and ordinances, it did either

<sup>1</sup> To the neglect of the word of God, and an ignorance of the nature of man, who is one party in the covenant.

<sup>2</sup> Matthæus Paris, hist. Angl. in Hen. 3. A. 1257, p. 939. Ed. Vatsii, cap. 8, apud. Balæum. App. de vit. Pontif. p. 480.

<sup>3</sup> Quod comparatum ad evangelium Christi, tanto plus perfectionis ac dignitatis habet, quantum sol ad lunam comparatus, aut ad nucleum testa.”



commence from the time of the effusion of the spirit upon the apostles, or some time since. Not then; for even of those who had the most large portion of the spirit poured upon them, we read that they continued in all gospel ordinances, *Acts* ii. 42, and amongst the chief, *τη διδαχη των Αποστολων*, *under the apostles' ministry*, it may be better rendered than *in the apostles' doctrine*. And which is most observable, the prophecy of *Joel* about the spirit, is then said to be fulfilled, *Acts* ii. 17. Besides, if either that place of *Joel*, or that of *Jeremiah*, cited *Heb.* viii. 11, or *the unction of the spirit*, *1 John* ii. 20, 27, did take away the use of preaching, how did the apostles themselves understand their meaning, when they were so diligent in preaching and instructing others. *John* writes to those, "*to try the spirits*,"<sup>1</sup> of whom he saith, "*they have an unction to know all things*:"<sup>2</sup> and those to whom the apostle writes, that "*they need not teach every one his neighbor*;" of them he saith, "*that they had need to be taught the first principles of the oracles of God*."<sup>3</sup> And even in that very chapter where he seems to say, they that are under the new covenant, need not be taught, he brings that very speech in as an argument, that the old dispensation of the law was done away: and so goes *about to teach*, when he seems to *take away the use of it*. These speeches then must not be understood in their absolute and literal sense, but with a reflection upon, and comparison with, the state of things in the times wherein those prophecies were uttered. For God, to heighten the *Jews'* apprehensions of the great blessings of the gospel, doth set them forth under a kind of hyperbolical expressions,<sup>4</sup> that the dull capacity of the *Jews* might at least apprehend the just weight and magnitude of them, which they would not otherwise have done. So in the place of *Jeremiah*,<sup>5</sup> God to make them understand how much the knowledge of the gospel exceeded that under the law, doth as it were set it down in this hyperbolical way, that it will exceed it as much, as one that needs no teaching at all, doth one that is yet but in his rudiments of learning. So that the place doth not deny the use of teaching under the gospel, but because teaching doth commonly suppose ignorance, to show the great measure of knowledge, he doth it in that way, as though the knowledge should be so great, that men should not need be taught in

<sup>1</sup> 1 John iv. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Heb. v. 12.

<sup>5</sup> Jer. xxxi. 31.

<sup>2</sup> 1 John ii. 20.

<sup>4</sup> Calvin in *Joel* ii. 28.

such a way of rudiments as the *Jews* were, viz. by types and ceremonies, and such things. We see then no such dispensation was in the apostles' times; for the same apostle after this, in chapter x. 25, bids them "*not to forsake the assembling themselves together as some did;*"<sup>1</sup> wherefore were these assemblies, but for instruction? and in the last chapter, "*bids them obey their rulers.*"<sup>2</sup> What need rulers, if no need of teaching? But so senseless a dream will be too much honoured with any longer confutation. In the apostles' times, then, there was no such dispensation of the spirit, which did take away the use of ministry and ordinances. If it be expected since their times, I would know whence it appears, that any have a greater measure of the spirit than was poured out in the apostles' times; for then the ministry was joined with the spirit: and what prophecies are fulfilled now, which were not then? Or if they pretend to a doctrine distinct from, and above, what the apostles taught, let them produce their evidences, and work those miracles which may induce men to believe them. Or let them show what obligation any have to believe pretended new revelations, without a power of miracles, attesting that those revelations come from God? Or whereon men must build their faith, if it be left to the dictates of a pretended spirit of revelation? Or what way is left to discern the good spirit from the bad, in its actings upon men's minds, if the word of God be not our rule still? Or how God is said to have spoken "*in the last days by his son,*"<sup>3</sup> if a further speaking be yet expected? For the gospel dispensation is therefore called the last days, because no other is to be expected: times being differenced in scripture according to God's ways of revealing himself to men. But so much for this.

§ 5. The second way whereby to know when positive laws are unalterable, is when God hath declared that such laws shall bind still. Two ways whereby God doth express his own will concerning the perpetuity of an office founded on his own institution. *First*, If such things be the work belonging to it, which are of necessary and perpetual use. *Secondly*, If God hath promised to assist them in it perpetually, in the doing of their work. *First*, the object of the ministerial office are such things which are of necessary and perpetual use; I mean the administration of gospel ordinances; viz. the

<sup>1</sup> Heb. x. 25.<sup>2</sup> Heb. xiii. 7.<sup>3</sup> Heb. i. 1.

word and sacraments, which were appointed by Christ for a perpetual use. The word as a means of conversion and edification; the sacraments not only as notes of distinction of professors of the true faith from others, but as seals to confirm the truth of the covenant on God's part towards us, and as instruments to convey the blessings sealed in the covenant to the hearts of believers. Now the very nature of these things doth imply their perpetuity and continuance in the world, as long as there shall be any church of God in it. For these things are not *typi rerum futurarum* only, "ceremonies or types to represent things to come," but they are *symbola rerum invisibilium*, "signs to represent to our senses things invisible" in their own nature: and between these two there is a great difference, as to the perpetuity of them: for types of things to come, must of necessity expire when the thing typified appears; but representation of invisible things cannot expire on that account, because the thing represented being invisible, cannot be supposed to be made visible, and so to dispense with the use of the signs which represent them to us. *Types* represent a thing which is at present invisible; but under the notion of it as future. *Symbols* represent a thing at present invisible, but as present; and therefore *symbols* are designed by God's institution for a perpetual help to the weakness of our faith. And therefore the Lord's supper is appointed *to set forth the Lord's death till he come*,<sup>1</sup> whereby the continuance of it in the church of God is necessarily implied. Now then, if these things which are the proper object of the ministerial function be of a perpetual nature, when these things are declared to be of an abiding nature, it necessarily follows, that that function to which it belongs to administer these things, must be of a perpetual nature.

§ 6. Especially if we consider in the second place, that Christ hath promised to be with them continually in the administration of these things: for that, notwithstanding the dust lately thrown upon it, we have a clear place, Matth. xxviii. 19. *Go teach and baptize, &c., Lo I am with you always, to the end of the world.* If *πας τις ημερας*, "all days, or always," did not signify perpetuity, yet certainly the latter words do; for how could Christ otherwise be with the apostles themselves personally to the end of the world? He must be therefore with them, and all that succeed them in the office of teaching and baptizing, to the world's end: for that I

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xi. 26.

assert to be the meaning of *ἕως της συντελείας του αἰῶνος*. 'I insist not barely on the signification of the word αἰών,<sup>1</sup> either as to its supposed etymology, or as it answers the Hebrew עולם<sup>2</sup> knowing how fallible the arguments drawn from thence are, when in the dispute of the eternity of the law of *Moses* with the Jews, it is confessed that עולם relates only to a long continuance of time. But however, I suppose that it will hardly be found in scripture, that either αἰών or עולם doth barely relate to the time of life of any individual persons, especially, if absolutely put as it is here. One great signification of αἰών in the New Testament, (which we are to inquire into, and not how it is used among Greek authors,) is that wherein αἰών is taken for the world itself, which *Vorstius* reckons among the Hebraisms of the New Testament,<sup>3</sup> in which sense the Jews call God רב העולם "the great eternal," and great persons העולם גרולי *Magnates mundi*, "the great ones of the earth," in which sense, in the New Testament, the devil is called ὁ ἀρχὸν του αἰῶνος τουτου, "the prince of this world," John xii. 31.—xiv. 30, and ὁ θεὸς του αἰῶνος τουτου, "the god of this world," 2 Cor. iv. 4. And so God is said to create τους αἰῶνας, "*the worlds*," Heb. i. 2.—xi. 3. If we take it in this sense, Christ's promise must of necessity relate to the dissolution of the fabric of the world, and that he would be with his servants in the gospel, till all things be dissolved. Against this it is pleaded that the συντέλεια, or "end," here relates to the destruction of *Jerusalem*, and that αἰών implies the state of things under the law, which would continue till *Jerusalem* were destroyed, from which time a new αἰών would commence. But to this I answer, *first*; I absolutely deny, that συντέλεια του αἰῶνος, doth ever in scripture relate to the destruction of the Jewish state. This will be best made out by a particular view of the places wherein this phrase occurs. The first time we meet with this phrase is in Matth. xiii. where we have it thrice, ver. 39, ὁ δὲ θερισμὸς συντέλεια του αἰῶνος ἐστίν: now can any be so senseless; as to imagine that the harvest wherein the

<sup>1</sup> Αἰών, "*Eternity*;" (1), Absolutely; (2), Past eternity; (3), Eternity to come. (4), This word if applied to a being of endless duration, its meaning is equivalent to the same; (5), if to a being of secular duration, as to a whole dispensation, a world or system of worlds, its meaning is commensurate to their whole existence, which is *virtually eternity to it or to those beings*. It has no sense more limited than this. Therefore it never signifies an *age* in the ordinary acceptation of that English term. What say the universalists to this?—*Am. Ed.*

<sup>2</sup> This Hebrew word is the exact parallel to αἰών, and has the same significations.—*Am. Ed.*

<sup>3</sup> Philolog. Sacr. de Hebr. N. T. cap. 2.



tares shall be gathered, and cast into<sup>o</sup> unquenchable fire, when the angels are said to be the reapers, and to gather out of Christ's kingdom every thing that offends, should be attributed to the destruction of *Jerusalem*? and so ver. 40, and ver. 49, where the same phrase expresseth the same time, *οὕτως ἔσται ἐν τῇ συντελείᾳ τοῦ αἰῶνος*, "Thus shall it be in the end of the world;" where the antecedents and consequents fully declare, what time there is meant, which is the general judgment of the world. The only place pleaded for this sense, is Matthew xxiv. 3, where the disciples inquire of Christ what should be the sign, *τῆς σῆς παρουσίας καὶ τῆς συντελείας τοῦ αἰῶνος*, "of thy coming, and of the end of the world;" where granting, that the former *Christ's coming* may respect his coming to alter the present state of things, according to the Jews' apprehension of the Messiah; yet I deny that the latter doth, but it respects the general destruction of the world, consequent upon that alteration: for the Jews not only expected an alteration of the present state of things among them, but a consequent destruction of the world, after the coming of the Messiah, according to that speech of theirs cited by Doctor *Lightfoot*. עולם זה חרב אלף שנים "This world shall be destroyed for 1000 years," and after that עתיד לבא "there should be the state of eternity."<sup>1</sup> So that the disciples, speaking in the sense of the Jews, do not only inquire of the signs of his altering the present state of things among them, but likewise of the destruction of the whole world too. Accordingly it is observable, that throughout that chapter, our Saviour intermixeth his answers to these two questions. Sometimes speaking in reference to the Jewish state, as it is plain he doth, verse 15, 16, and so on; and when he saith, *that this generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled*, verse 34. But then it is as evident, that some places must relate to the destruction of the world, as when he saith, *Of that day and hour knoweth no man, no not the angels of Heaven, but the Father only*, verse 36, which will appear more plainly, by comparing it with Mark xiii. 32. *Where the Son is excluded from knowing that hour too*; but how can any say, that the Son did not know the time of the destruction of *Jerusalem*, which he himself foretold when it should be? And those words, *Heaven and earth shall pass away*, verse 35, seem to be our Saviour's transition to the answer of the other question, about the final destruction of all things. However that be, as we see no

<sup>1</sup> Horæ hebr. in Matth. xxiv. 3, p. 262.

reason at all why *συντελεια του αιωνος*, should only respect the subversion of the Jewish state: but supposing it should, yet there is far less reason why it should be so meant, in the place of the sense we are inquiring into. For if by Christ's coming to destroy *Jerusalem*, the old state and dispensation should be taken away, we must suppose a new state under the Messiah to begin from thence. And how rational doth this sound, that Christ should promise his peculiar presence with his own apostles, whom he employed in erecting the gospel state, only till the old Jewish state be subverted; but his promise not at all to extend to that time, wherein the state of the kingdom of the Messiah should be set up instead of it: and how could any of the apostles, for example, Saint *John*, who survived the destruction of *Jerusalem*, expect Christ's presence with him, by virtue of this promise, if it extended no further than to the destruction of the Jewish state? Besides, it is a mere groundless fancy, and savours of the Jewish apprehensions of the state of the Messiah's kingdom, to imagine that the temporal state of *Jerusalem* must be first subverted before that *αιων* or dispensation of things was at an end. For the Jewish state and dispensation did not lie in the *Jewish polity*, but in obligation to the *Law of Moses*, which expired together with Christ. And so the gospel state, which is called the *Kingdom of Heaven*, and the *Regeneration*,<sup>1</sup> began upon Christ's resurrection and ascension, when he was solemnly (as it were) inaugurated in his Mediatory kingdom. And presently after sends down his *Viceroy* upon the day of *Pentecost*, in the effusion of the spirit upon the apostles,<sup>2</sup> making good his promise of the *Paraclete* to supply his absence: whereby the apostles were more signally empowered for the advancing of the gospel state.

§ 7. The *αιων* then of the gospel commenceth from Christ's resurrection, and to this *αιων* I am very inclinable to think that our Saviour hath reference in these words, when he saith, *he will be with his disciples to the end of that αιων*, if we take it for a state of things, or the gospel dispensation; *that is*, as long as the evangelical church shall continue. For that in scripture is sometimes called the world to come, and that phrase among the Jews<sup>3</sup> of *עלם הבא*, "the world to come," is set to express the times of the Messiah; and it may be the apostle may refer to this,<sup>4</sup> when he speaks of apostates tasting

<sup>1</sup> Matth. xix. 28.

<sup>2</sup> Acts ii. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Heb. ii. 5. Lightfoot Horæ. Hebr. in Matth. xii. 32, p. 173.

<sup>4</sup> Heb. vi. 5.

δυναμεις τε μέλλοντος αἰωνος, *that is*, the force and energy of the gospel preached; whence the kingdom of God is said to be not εν λογω, but εν δυναμει, “not in word, but in power,” which is the ἀποδείξις πνευματος και δυναμειως, spoken of by the apostle elsewhere,<sup>1</sup> “the powerful demonstration of the spirit” accompanying the preaching of the gospel. When Christ is called by the prophet עֲלֵיךָ, “the everlasting Father,” the Septuagint renders it by πατρὸς του μελλοντος αἰωνος, and so the vulgar Latin. *Pater futuri sæculi*, “the Father of the world to come;”<sup>2</sup> *that is*, the gospel state, and to this sense Christ is said to be made an high priest,<sup>3</sup> των μελλοντων αγαθων, “of goods things to come,” and the law to be a shadow των μελλοντων αγαθων, “of good things which should be under the new state of the gospel.”<sup>4</sup> And which is more plain to the purpose, the apostle expresseth what was to come to pass in the days of the gospel,<sup>5</sup> εν τοις αιωσι τοις επερχομοις, “in the ages to come,” where the very word αἰων is used to this sense. And according to this importance of the word αἰων, some very probably interpret that place of our Saviour<sup>6</sup> concerning the sin against the Holy Ghost, that it should not be forgiven ουτε εν τουτω τω αιωνι, ουτε εν τω μελλοντι, “neither in the present state” of the Jewish church, wherein there is no sacrifice of expiation for contumacious sinners,<sup>7</sup> but they that despised *Moses’* law died without mercy; so neither shall there be, any under the “world to come,” that is, *the dispensation of gospel grace*, any pardon proclaimed to any such sinners who trample under foot the blood of the covenant, and offer despite to the spirit of grace.<sup>8</sup> Thus we see how properly the word αἰων may agree here to the gospel state, and so Christ’s promise of his presence doth imply the perpetuity of that office as long as the evangelical state shall remain, which will be to the world’s end.

§ 8. The third thing, whereby to know when positive institutions are unalterable, is, when they are necessary to the being, succession, and continuance of the church of God. Now this yields a further evidence of the perpetuity of officers in the church of God, seeing the church itself cannot be preserved without the government; and there can be no government without some to rule the members of the church of God, and to take care for a due administration of church

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. iv. 20.

<sup>3</sup> Isaiah ix. 5; Heb. ix. 11.

<sup>5</sup> Eph. ii. 7.

<sup>7</sup> D. Reynolds on Hosea xiv. 3.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. ii. 4.

<sup>4</sup> Heb. x. 1.

<sup>6</sup> Matth. xii. 32.

<sup>8</sup> Heb. x. 27, 27, 28.

privileges, and to inflict censures upon offenders, which is the power they are invested in by the same authority which was the ground of their institution at first. It is not conceivable how any society, as the church is, can be preserved without the continuance of church officers among them. As long as the body of Christ must be edified, there must be some *κατηρτισμένοι εἰς ἔργον διακονίας*, "fitted for the work of the ministry," which is appointed in order to that end. For that I suppose is the apostle's meaning in *Ephes. iv. 12*,<sup>1</sup> following the *Complutensian copy*, leaving out the *comma* between *ἁγίων* and *εἰς ἔργον*, which makes as though it were a distinct thing from the former; whereas the original carries the sense on; for otherwise it should have been *εἰς καταρτισμον τῶν ἁγίων, εἰς ἔργον διακονίας*, &c. and those who follow the ordinary reading, are much at a loss how to explain that *εἰς ἔργον διακονίας* coming in so in the midst without dependence upon the former. Therefore the *vulgate Latin* best renders it *ad consummationem sanctorum ad opus ministerii*; "for the completing of the saints for the work of the ministry, in order to the building up of the body of Christ;" and to this purpose *Musculus* informs us, the *German version* renders it. And so we understand the enumeration in the verse before<sup>2</sup> of *apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors* and *teachers*, not for the persons themselves, but for the gifts of those persons, *the office of apostles, evangelists, pastors*, &c. which is most suitable to the *ἔδωκε δόματα* in the *eighth verse*. *He gave gifts to men*; now these gifts, saith he, Christ gave to *μεν πρὸς καταρτισμὸν τῶν ἁγίων εἰς ἔργον διακονίας*, *for the fitting the saints for the work of the ministry*. Not as a late *democratical writer* would persuade us, as though all the saints were thereby fitted for this work of the ministry, (for that the apostle excludes by the former enumeration;) for, are all the saints fitted for apostles? are all prophets, are all evangelists, are all pastors and teachers? as the apostle himself elsewhere argues. and in the eighth verse of that chapter,<sup>3</sup> he particularly mentions the several gifts qualifying men for several useful employments in the church of God, the spirit dividing to every man severally as he will. Therefore it cannot be that all the saints are hereby fitted for this work; but God hath scattered these gifts among the saints, that those who have them might

<sup>1</sup> Πρὸς τὸν καταρτισμὸν τῶν ἁγίων εἰς ἔργον διακονίας, εἰς δικοδομὴν τοῦ σώματος τοῦ Χριστοῦ.

<sup>2</sup> Eph. iv. 11.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. xii. 29, 8, 9, 10, 11.



be fitted, εἰς ἔργον διακονίας, "for the work of the ministry," because God would not leave his church without persons qualified for the service of himself in the work of the ministry, in order to the building up of the body of Christ. And by the τῶν ἁγίων, here may be meant no other than those he speaks of in the chapter before, when he speaks of the revelation made τοῖς ἁγίοις ἀποστόλοις αὐτοῦ καὶ προφήταις, "to his holy apostles and prophets,"<sup>1</sup> and so God gave these gifts for the fitting the holy apostles, &c. for the work of the ministry. It cannot be meant of all, so as to destroy a peculiar function of the ministry; for *God's very giving these gifts to some and not to others*, is an evidence that the function is *peculiar*. For else had the gifts been common to all, every saint had been an apostle, every believer a pastor, and teacher, and then where had the people been that must have been ruled and governed? So that this very place doth strongly assert both the peculiarity of the function, from the peculiarity of gifts in order to fitting men for it; and the perpetuity of the function from the end of it, the building up of the body of Christ. Thus I have now asserted the *perpetual divine right of a gospel ministry*, not only for teaching the word, but administration of ordinances, and governing the church as a society: which work belongs to none but such as are appointed for it, who are the same with the dispensers of the word, as appears from the titles of ἡγουμενοί, προεσώτες, ποιμένες, "governors, rulers, pastors,"<sup>2</sup> all which necessarily imply a governing power, which having been largely proved by others, and yielded by me, I pass over.

<sup>1</sup> Eph. iii. 5.

<sup>2</sup> Heb. xiii. 7, 17; 1 Tim. v. 17; Eph. iv. 11.

## CHAPTER III.

The question fully stated. Not what form of government comes the nearest to the primitive practice, but whether any be absolutely determined. Several things propounded for resolving the question. What the form of church government was under the law. How far Christians are bound to observe that. Neither the necessity of superiority, nor the unlawfulness can be proved thence.

§ 1. AND NOW I come to the main subject of the present controversy, which is acknowledging a form of government necessary, and the governors of the church perpetual; whether the particular form whereby the church must be governed, be determined by any positive law of God, which unalterably binds all Christians to see the observation of it? By *church* here, I mean not a particular congregation, but such a society which comprehends in it many of these less congregations united together in one body under a form of government. The forms of government in controversy, the question being thus stated, are only these two, the particular officers of several churches, acting in an equality of power, which are commonly called *a college of presbyters*; or a superior order above the standing ministry, having the power of jurisdiction and ordination belonging to it by virtue of a divine institution. Which order is by an *antonomasia*<sup>1</sup> called episcopacy. The question now, is not, which of these two doth come the nearest to *apostolical practice*, and the first institution, which hath hitherto been the controversy so hotly debated among us; but whether either of these two forms be so settled by a *jus divinum*, that is, be so determined by a positive law of God, that all the churches of Christ are bound to observe that one form so determined, without variation from it; or whether Christ hath not in settling of his church, (provided there be

<sup>1</sup> A rhetorical figure, by which a name different from the proper name is given to a thing.

some form of government, and a settled ministry for the exercise of it,) left it to the prudence of every particular church, consisting of many congregations, to agree upon its own form which it judgeth most conducing to the end of government in that particular church. *Αὐτοῦ βοθος, αὐτοῦ πῆδμα.*<sup>1</sup> Here now we fix ourselves, and the first thing we do, is to agree upon our ways of resolution of this question, whereby to come to an end of this debate. And the most probable way to come to an issue in it, is, to go through all the ways whereon men do fix an unalterable divine right, and to see whether any of these do evince a divine right settled upon a positive law or not, for one of these forms. The pleas then for such a divine right are these; either some formal law standing in force under the gospel, or some plain institution of a new law by Christ in forming his church, or the obligatory nature of apostolical practice, or the general sense of the primitive church, to which we shall add by way of appendix, the judgment of the chief divines and churches since the reformation; if we go happily through these, we may content ourselves with having obtained the things we aim at.

§ 2. The first inquiry then is, whether any formal law of God concerning a form of government for his church, either by persons acting in an equality of power, or subordination of one order to another, under the gospel, doth remain in force or not, binding Christians to the observing of it. The reason why I begin with this, is, because I observe the disputants on both sides make use of the pattern under the law to establish their form by.<sup>2</sup> Those who are for superiority of one order above another in the government of the church, derive commonly their first argument from the pattern under the law.<sup>3</sup> Those who are for an equality of power in the persons acting in government, yet being for a subordination of courts, they bring their first argument for that, from the Jewish pattern. So that these latter are bound by their own argument, though used in another case, to be ruled in this controversy by the Jewish pattern. For why should it be more obligatory as to subordination of courts, than as to the superiority of orders? If it holds in one case, it must in the

<sup>1</sup> "There was the roaring of the waves, hence the start, the spring;" equivalent to the Latin motto: *hic-career, illic meta*, that was the beginning, this the end of the race; see Adams's Antiquities.

<sup>2</sup> B. Bilson Perpet. Govern. cap. 2. B. Andrews' Form of Government in the old T. B. Usher. Original of Episc.

<sup>3</sup> Herl of Indep. p. 4. Apol. Spanhem. omnes.

other. And if there be such a law for superiority standing unrepealed, there needs no new law to enforce it under the gospel. We shall therefore first inquire what foundation there is for either form in that pattern, and how far the argument drawn from thence is obligatory to us now. For the practice then in the Jewish church, that there was no universal equality in the tribe of *Levi*, which God singled out from the rest for his own service, is obvious in scripture. For there we find *priests* above the *Levites*; the family of *Aaron* being chosen out from the other families of *Cohath*, (one of the three sons of *Levi*,) to be employed in a nearer attendance upon God's service than any of the other families. And it must be acknowledged, that among both *priests* and *Levites* there was a superiority:<sup>1</sup> for God placed *Eleazar* over the *priests*, *Elizaphan* over the *Cohathites*, *Eliasaph* over the *Gershonites*, *Zuriel* over the *Merarites*; and these are called נְשִׂאִים, "the rulers or princes," over their several families; for it is said of every one of them וְנִשְׂאָ בֵּית אָבִי, "he was ruler over the house of his father."<sup>2</sup> Neither were these equal; for over *Eliasaph* and *Zuriel* God placed *Ithamar*, over *Elizaphan* and his own family God set *Eleazar*,<sup>3</sup> who by reason of his authority over all the rest, is called נִשְׂאָ וְנִשְׂאֵי, "the ruler of the rulers," of *Levi*, and besides these there were under these rulers רִאשֵׁי אֲבֹתָיִם, "the chief fathers" of the several distinct families, as they are called, *Exodus* vi. 26. ¶ Thus we briefly see the subordination that there was in the tribe of *Levi*; the *Levites* first, over them the heads of the families, over them the rulers, or the chief of the heads, over them *Ithamar*, over both *priests* and *Levites*, *Eleazar*; over all, *Aaron* the high priest.

§ 3. There being then so manifest an inequality among them, proceed we to show how obligatory this is under the gospel. For that end it will be necessary to consider, whether this imparity and superiority were peculiarly appointed by God for the ecclesiastical government of the tribe of *Levi*, as it consisted of persons to be employed in the service of God, or it was only such an inequality and superiority as was in any other tribe. If only common with other tribes, nothing can be inferred from thence peculiar to ecclesiastical government under the gospel, any more than from the government of other tribes to the same kind of government in all civil states. We must then take notice that *Levi* was a particular distinct

<sup>1</sup> Numb. iii. 30, 34, 35.

<sup>2</sup> Numb. iv. 28, 32.

<sup>3</sup> Numb. iv. 19.



tribe of itself, and so not in subordination to any other tribe; for each had "*the heads of its fathers as well as others*," *Exodus* vi. 25; and although when they settled in *Canaan*, their habitations were intermixed with other tribes in their *forty-eight* cities, yet they were not under the government of those tribes among whom they lived, but preserved their authority and government entire among themselves. And therefore it was necessary that there should be the same form of government among them, which there was among the rest. The whole body of the nation was then divided into *thirteen tribes*; these tribes into their *several families*; some say *seventy*, which they called משטתהו, "names or families," these were divided into so many "households," בתים; "their households into children or persons," בנכרים; over the several persons were the several masters of families; over the several households were the captains of one thousand and one hundred, fifty and ten. Over the families, I suppose, were the heads of the fathers. And over the thirteen tribes were the ראשי אבות המטות, "*the chief fathers of the tribes*" of the *children of Israel*, *Numb.* xxxii. 28, and we have the names of them set down, *Numb.* xxxiv. 17, &c. So that hitherto, we find nothing peculiar to this tribe, nor proper to it as employed in the service of God. For their several families had their several heads, and *Eleazar* over them as chief of the tribe. And so we find, throughout *Numbers* ii. all the heads of the several tribes are named and appointed by God as *Eleazar* was.

§ 4. The only things then which seem proper to this tribe, were the superiority of the priests over the *Levites* in the service of God, and the super-eminent power of the high priest, as the type of Christ. So that nothing can be inferred from the order under the law as to that under the gospel, but from one of these two. And from the *first* there can be nothing deduced but this, that as there was a superiority of officers under the law, so likewise should there be under the gospel; which is granted by all in the superiority of *priests* over *deacons*, to whom these two answer in the church of God, in the judgment of those who contend for a higher order by divine institution above presbyters. And withal we must consider, that there was under that order no power of jurisdiction invested in the priests over the *Levites*, but that was in the heads of the families; and ordination there could not be, because their office descended by succession in their several families. Those who would argue from *Aaron's* power, must

either bring too little, or too much from thence. *Too little*, if we consider his office was typical and ceremonial, and as high priest had more immediate respect to God than men, *Heb. v. 1*, and therefore *Eleazar* was appointed over the several families during *Aaron's* lifetime; and under *Eleazar*, his son *Phinehas*. *Too much*, if a necessity be urged for the continuance of the same authority in the church of God; which is the argument of the papists, deriving the pope's supremacy from thence. Which was acutely done by pope *Innocent the third*; the father of the *Lateran Council*, who proved, that the pope may exercise temporal jurisdiction from that place in *Deuteronomy xvii. 8*, and that by this reason, because *Deuteronomy did imply the second law, and therefore what was there written in novo testamento debet observari*, "must be observed under the gospel," which, according to them, is a new law.

§ 5. All that can be inferred then from the Jewish pattern, cannot amount to any obligation upon Christians, it brings at the best but a judicial law, and therefore binds us not up as a positive law; but only declares the equity of the thing in use then. I conclude then, that the Jewish pattern is no standing law for church government now, either in its common or peculiar form of government; but because there was some superiority of order then, and subordination of some persons to others under that government, that such a superiority and subordination is no ways unlawful under the gospel; for that would destroy the equity of the law. And though the form of government was the same with that of other tribes, yet we see God did not bind them to an equality, because they were for his immediate service, but continued the same way as in other tribes; thence I infer, that as there is no necessary obligation upon Christians to continue that form under the *Jews*, because their laws do not bind us now; so neither is there any repugnancy to this law in such a subordination, but it is very agreeable with the equity of it, it being instituted for peace and order, and therefore ought not to be condemned as anti-Christian. The Jewish pattern then of government neither makes equality unlawful, because their laws do not oblige now; nor doth it make superiority unlawful, because it was practised then. So that notwithstanding the Jewish pattern, the church of Christ is left to its own liberty for the choice of its form of government, whether by an equality of power in some persons, or superiority and subordination of one order to another.

## CHAPTER IV.

Whether Christ hath determined the form of government by any positive laws.

Arguments of the necessity why Christ must determine it, largely answered; as *First*, Christ's faithfulness compared with *Moses*, answered, and retorted, and proved, that Christ did not institute any form of church government, because no such law for it as *Moses* gave; and we have nothing but general rules, which are applicable to several forms of government. The office of *Timothy* and *Titus*, what it proves in order to this question: the lawfulness of Episcopacy shown thence, but not the necessity. A particular form, how far necessary, as Christ was the governor of his church; the similitudes the church is set out by, prove not the thing in question. Nor the difference of civil and church government: nor Christ setting officers in his church; nor the inconvenience of the church's power in appointing new officers. Every minister hath a power respecting the church in common, which the church may restrain. Episcopacy thence proved lawful; the argument from the Scriptures' perfection answered.

§ 1. WE come then from the type to the *antitype*, from the *Rod of Aaron* to the *Root of Jesse*, from the *pattern* of the Jewish church, to the *Founder* of the Christian: to see whether our Lord and Saviour hath determined this controversy, or any one form of government for his church, by any universally binding act or law of his. And here it is pleaded more hotly by many that *Christ must do it*, than that *he hath done it*. And therefore I shall first examine the pretences of the necessity of Christ's determining the particular form; and then the arguments that are brought that he hath done it. The main pleas that there must be a perfect form of church government laid down by Christ for the church of God, are from the comparison of Christ with *Moses*,<sup>1</sup> from the equal necessity of forms of government now which there is for other societies, from the perfection and sufficiency of the scriptures; all other arguments are reducible to these three heads. Of these in their order.

<sup>1</sup> Heb. i. 2, 5, 6.

Arg. 1. First, *From the comparison of Christ with Moses*, they argue thus: if *Moses was faithful in his house as a servant, much more Christ as a son; now Moses appointed a particular form of government for the church under the Old Testament; therefore Christ did certainly lay down a form of church government for the New Testament.*

Ans. 1. To this I answer: first, faithfulness implies the discharge of a trust reposed in one by another: so that it is said verse 2, *he was faithful to him that appointed him*: Christ's faithfulness then lay in discharging the work which his Father laid upon him, which was the work of mediation between God and us; and therefore the comparison is here instituted between *Moses* as typical *Mediator*, and Christ as the true *Mediator*; that as *Moses* was faithful in his work, so was *Christ* in his. Now *Moses'* faithfulness lay in keeping close to the pattern received in the mount, that is, observing the commands of God; therefore if Christ's being faithful in his office, doth imply the settling any one form of government in the church, it must be made appear that the settling of this form was part of Christ's mediatory work, and that which the father commanded him to do as mediator; and that Christ received such a form from the Father for the Christian church, as *Moses* did for the Jewish. To this it is said, that the *government is laid upon Christ's shoulders, and all power is in his hands*;<sup>1</sup> and therefore it belongs to him as mediator. Christ I grant is the King of the church, and doth govern it outwardly by his laws, and inwardly by the conduct of his spirit: but shall we say, that therefore any one form of government is necessary, which is neither contained in his laws, nor dictated by his spirit? The main original of mistakes here, is, the confounding the *external* and *internal* government of the church of Christ, and thence whensoever men read of Christ's power, authority and government, they fancy it refers to the outward government of the church of God, which is intended of his internal mediatory power over the hearts and consciences of men. But withal I acknowledge that Christ for the better government of his church and people, hath appointed officers in his church, invested them by virtue of his own power with an authority to preach and baptize, and administer all gospel ordinances in his own name, *that is, by his authority*;<sup>2</sup> for it is clearly made known to us in the word of God, that Christ hath appointed these things. But then,

<sup>1</sup> Isa. ix. 6. Matth. xxviii. 18.

<sup>2</sup> Matth. xxviii. 18, 19.



whether any shall succeed the apostles in superiority of power over presbyters, or all remain governing the church in an equality of power, is nowhere determined by the will of Christ in scripture, which contains his royal law: and therefore we have no reason to look upon it as anything flowing from the power and authority of Christ as mediator; and so not necessarily binding Christians.

§ 2. Secondly, I answer: if the correspondence between Christ and *Moses* in their work, doth imply an equal exactness in Christ's disposing of everything in his church, as *Moses* did among the Jews; then the church of Christ must be equally bound to all circumstances of worship as the Jews were. For there was nothing appertaining in the least to the worship of God, but was fully set down even to the pins of the tabernacle in the law of *Moses*; but we find no such thing in the gospel. The main duties and ordinances are prescribed indeed, but their circumstances and manner of performance are left as matters of Christian liberty, and only couched under some general rules: which is a great difference between the legal and gospel state. Under the law all ceremonies and circumstances are exactly prescribed: but in the gospel we read of some general rules of direction for Christians' carriage in all circumstantial things. These four especially contain all the directions of scripture concerning circumstantials. "All things to be done decently and in order."<sup>1</sup> "All to be done for edification."<sup>2</sup> "Give no offence."<sup>3</sup> "Do all to the glory of God."<sup>4</sup> So that the particular circumstances are left to Christian liberty with the observation of general rules. It is evident as to baptism and the Lord's supper,<sup>5</sup> which are unquestionably of divine institution, yet as to the circumstances of the administration of them, how much less circumstantial is Christ than *Moses* was. As to circumcision and the passover under the law, the age, time, persons, manner, place, form, all fully set down; but nothing so under the gospel. Whether baptism shall be administered to infants or not, is not set down in express words, but left to be gathered by analogy and consequences; what manner it shall be administered in, whether by dipping or sprinkling, is not absolutely determined; what form of words to be used, whether in the name of all three persons, or sometimes in the name of Christ only, as in the *Acts*<sup>6</sup> we read, (if that be the sense, and not rather in Christ's

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xiv. 40.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. x. 32.

<sup>5</sup> Rom. xiv. 6, 7,

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. xiv. 26.

<sup>4</sup> 1 Cor. x. 31.

<sup>6</sup> Acts ii. 38, viii. 12, xix. 5.

name, *i. e.* by Christ's authority.) Whether sprinkling or dipping shall be thrice as some churches use it, or only once as others. These things we see relating to an ordinance of divine institution, are yet passed over without any express command determining either way in scripture. So as to the Lord's supper; what persons to be admitted to it, whether all visible professors, or only sincere Christians: upon what terms, whether by previous examination of church officers; or by an open profession of their faith, or else only by their own trial of themselves, required of them as their duty by their ministers; whether it should be always after supper as Christ himself did; whether taken fasting, or after meat, whether kneeling, or sitting, or leaning? Whether to be consecrated in one form of words, or several? These things are not thought fit to be determined by any positive command of Christ, but left to the exercise of Christian liberty; the like is as to preaching the word, public prayer, singing of psalms; the duties are required, but the particular modes are left undetermined. The case is the same as to church government. That the church be governed, and that it be governed by its proper officers, are things of divine appointment: but whether the church should be governed by many joining together in an equality, or by subordination of some persons to others, is left to the same liberty which all other circumstances are; this being not the substance of the thing itself, but only the manner of performing it.

§ 3.—Thirdly, I answer, that there is a manifest disparity between the Gospel and Jewish state: and therefore reasons may be given why all punctilios were determined then which are not now: as,

1. The perfection and liberty of the gospel state above the Jewish. The law was only as a pedagogue, the church then in her infancy and nonage, and therefore wanted the *fescues*<sup>1</sup> of ceremonies to direct her, and every part of her lesson set her, to bring her by degrees to skill and exactness in her understanding the mystery of the things represented to her. But must the church, now grown up under Christ, be still *sub ferula*, "under the cane," and not dare to vary in any circumstance which doth not concern the thing itself! A boy at school hath his lesson set him, and the manner of learning it prescribed him in every mode and circumstance. But at the university he hath his lectures read him, and his work set,

<sup>1</sup> "A wire or pointer to show children the letters."

and general directions given, but he is left to his own liberty how to perform his work, and what manner to use in the doing of it. So it was with the church under age. Every mode and circumstance was determined; but when fulness of time was come, the church then being grown up, the main offices themselves were appointed, and general directions given; but a liberty left how to apply and make use of them, as to every particular case and occasion. Things moral remain still in their full force, but circumstantialia are left more at liberty by the gospel liberty; as a son that is taught by his father, while he is under his instruction, must observe every particular direction for him in his learning; but when he comes to age, though he observes not those things as formerly, yet his sonship continues, and he must obey his father as a child still, though not in the same manner. The similitude is the apostle's, *Galat.* iv. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 10, which he there largely amplifies to this very purpose of freeing Christians from judaical ceremonies.

2. The form of government among the Jews in the tribe of *Levi*, was agreeable to the form of government among the other tribes; and so *Moses* was not more exact in reference to it than to any other; and those persons in that tribe who were the chief before the institution of the Aaronical priesthood, were so after; but now under the gospel people are not under the same restrictions for civil government by a judaical law, as they were then. For the form of ecclesiastical government then took place among them as one of their judaical laws; and therefore if the argument hold, Christ must as well prescribe a form for civil government as ecclesiastical; if Christ in the gospel must by his faithfulness follow the pattern of *Moses*. But if Christ be not bound to follow *Moses'* pattern as to judaical law, for his church and people, neither is he as to a form of ecclesiastical government, because that was a part of their civil and judaical law.

3. The people of the Jews was a whole and entire people, subsisting by themselves when one set form of government was prescribed them; but it is otherwise now under the gospel. The church of Christ was but forming in Christ's own time, and in that of the apostles, in whose time we read of but some cities and no whole nations converted to the faith; and therefore the same form of government would not serve a church in its first constitution, which is necessary for it when it is actually formed. A pastor and deacons might serve the church of a city while believers were few, but

cannot when they are increased into many congregations. And so proportionably when the church is enlarged to a whole nation, there must then be another form of government. Therefore they who call for a national church under the gospel, let them first show a nation converted to the faith, and we will undertake to show the other. And this is the chief reason why the church's polity is so little described in the New Testament, because it was then only growing; and it doth not stand to reason, that the coat which was cut out for one in his infancy, must of necessity serve him when grown a man; which is the argument of those who will have nothing observed in the church, but what is expressed in scripture. The apostles looked at the present state of a church in appointing officers, and ordered things according to the circumstances of them, which was necessary to be done in the founding of a church; and the reason of apostolical practice binds still, though not the individual action, that as they regulated churches for the best convenience of governing them, so should the pastors of churches now. But of this largely afterwards.

4. Another difference is, that the people of the Jews lived all under one civil government; but it is otherwise with Christians who live under different forms of civil government. And then by the same reason that in the first institutions of their ecclesiastical government it was formed according to the civil, by the same reason, must Christians do under the gospel, if the argument holds, that Christ must be faithful as *Moses* was. And then because Christians do live under several and distinct forms of civil government, they must be bound by the law of Christ, to contemper the government of the church to that of the state. And what they have gained by this for their cause, who assert the necessity of any one form from this argument, I see not; but on the contrary this is evident, that they have destroyed their own principle by it. For if *Moses* did prescribe a form of government for *Levi* agreeable to the form of the commonwealth, and Christ be as faithful as *Moses* was, then Christ must likewise order the government of Christian churches, according to that of the state, and so must have different forms as the other hath. Thus much will serve abundantly to show the weakness of the argument drawn from the agreement of Christ and *Moses*, for the proving any one form of government necessary; but this shall not suffice. I now shall, from the abundant answers



to this argument, lay down several that Christ did never intend to institute any one form of government in his church.

§ 4.—1. Whatever binds the church of God as an institution of Christ, must bind as an universal standing law; but one form of government in the church cannot bind it as a standing law. For whatever binds as a standing law, must either be expressed in direct terms as such a law; or deduced by a necessary consequence from his laws, as of an universally binding nature; but any one particular form of government in the church, is neither expressed in any direct terms by Christ, nor can be deduced by just consequence; therefore no such form of government is instituted by Christ. If there be any such law, it must be produced, whereby it is determined in scripture, either that there must be superiority or equality among church officers, as such, after the apostles' decease. And though the negative of a fact holds not, yet the negative of a law doth, else no superstition. I have not yet met with any such produced, and therefore shall see what consequences can be made of a binding nature. To this I say, that no consequences can be deduced to make an institution, but only to apply one to particular cases: because positives are in themselves indifferent without institution and divine appointment: and therefore that must be directly brought for the making a positive universally binding, which it doth not in its own nature. Now here must be an institution of something merely positive supposed, which in itself is of an indifferent nature; and therefore no consequence drawn can suffice to make it unalterably binding, without express declaration that such a thing shall so bind; for what is not in its own nature moral, binds only by virtue of a command, which command must be made known by the will of Christ, so that we may understand its obligatory nature. So that both a consequence must be necessarily drawn, and the obligation of what shall be so drawn must be expressed in scripture: which I despair of ever finding in reference to any one form of government in the church.

2. If the standing laws for church government be equally applicable to several distinct forms, then no one form is prescribed in scripture; but all the standing laws respecting church government, are equally applicable to several forms. All the laws occurring in scripture respecting church government may be referred to these three heads. Such as set down the *qualifications of the persons for the office of government*, such as require a *right management of their office*, and

such as *lay down rules for the management of their office*. Now all these are equally applicable to either of these two forms we now discourse of. We begin then with those which set down the qualifications of persons employed in government, those we have largely and fully set down by St. *Paul* in his order to *Timothy*<sup>1</sup> and *Titus*,<sup>2</sup> prescribing what manner of persons those should be who are to be employed in the government of the church: "A bishop must be blameless as the steward of God, not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker," &c. All these, and the rest of the qualifications mentioned, are equally required as necessary in a bishop, whether taken for one of a superior order above presbyters, or else only for a single presbyter; however that be, if he hath a hand in church government, he must be such a one as the apostle prescribes; and so these commands to *Timothy* and *Titus* given by *Paul*, do equally respect and concern them, whether we consider them as evangelists acting by an extraordinary commission, or as fixed pastors over all the churches in their several precincts; so that from the commands themselves nothing can be inferred either way to determine the question; only one place is pleaded for the perpetuity of the office *Timothy* was employed in, which must now be examined: the place is, 1 *Tim.* 6, 13, 14; "I give thee charge in the sight of God, &c. that thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ." From hence it is argued thus: the commandment here was the charge which *Timothy* had of governing the church; this *Timothy* could not keep personally till Christ's second coming; therefore there must be a succession of officers in the same kind till the second coming of Christ. But this is easily answered. For, *first*, it is no ways certain what this command was which St. *Paul* speaks of; some understand it of fighting the good fight of faith, others of the precept of love, others most probably the sum of all contained in this epistle, which I confess implies in it, (as being one great part of the epistle,) *Paul's* direction of *Timothy* for the right discharging of his office; but, granting that the command respects *Timothy's* office, yet I answer, *secondly*, it manifestly appears to be something *personal*, and not *successive*; or at least nothing can be inferred for the necessity of such a succession from this place which it was brought for: nothing being more

<sup>1</sup> 1 *Tim.* iii. 1 to the 8.

<sup>2</sup> *Titus* i. 5 to the 10.

evident than that this command related to *Timothy's* personal observance of it; and therefore, *thirdly*, Christ's appearing here, is not meant of his second coming to judgment, but it only imports the time of *Timothy's* decease;<sup>1</sup> so *Chrysostom*, μέχρι τε της τελετης, μέχρι της εξοδιου, "until the end, until the departure." So *Estius* understands it, *usque ad exitum vitæ*; "until the termination of life;" and for that end brings that speech of *Augustine*: "then shall that day of the advent of the Lord overtake every one; when a day shall come on him, so that such as he is on departing hence, such shall he be judged."<sup>2</sup> And the reason why the time of his death is set out by the coming of Christ is, *ἵνα μαλλον αὐτον διεγείρη*, as *Chrysostom*, and from him *Theophylact* observes, "that it might incite him the more," both to diligence in his work and patience under sufferings, from the consideration of Christ's appearance. The plain meaning of the words then is the same with that, *Revel. ii. 10*, "be thou faithful unto death, and I will thee a crown of life." Nothing then can be hence inferred as to the necessary succession of some in *Timothy's* office, whatever it is supposed to be.

§ 5. Secondly, The precepts of the gospel requiring a right management of the work, are equally applicable to either form. *Taking heed to the flock over which God hath made them overseers*,<sup>3</sup> is equally a duty; whether by *flock* we understand either the particular church of *Ephesus*, or the adjacent churches of *Asia*; whether by *overseers* we understand some acting over others, or all joining together in an equality. So *exhorting, reproofing, preaching in season and out of season*,<sup>4</sup> *doing all things ἀνεν πρὸςκριματος*, without "rash censures," and *partiality*;<sup>5</sup> *watching over the flock as they that must give an account: laying hands suddenly on no man: rebuking not an elder, but under two or three witnesses*.<sup>6</sup> And whatever precepts of this nature we read in the epistles of *Timothy* and *Titus*, may be equally applicable to men acting in either of these two forms of government: there being no precept occurring in all those epistles prescribing to *Timothy*, whether he must act only as a *consul in Senatu* with the consent of the presbytery, or whether by his sole power he should determine what was the common interest, and concern

<sup>1</sup> Homil. 18, in 1 Tim. tom. 4.

<sup>2</sup> Tunc unicuique veniet dies adventus Domini, cum venerit ei dies, ut talis hinc exeat, qualis judicandus est illo die.—Epistol. 80, ad Hecych.

<sup>3</sup> Acts xx. 28.

<sup>4</sup> 2 Tim. iv. 2.

<sup>5</sup> 1 Tim. v. 21.

<sup>6</sup> Heb. xiii. 17. 1 Tim. v. 19, 22.

of those churches he was the superintendent over. Neither doth the apostle determine at all in those epistles chiefly concerning church government, whether upon the removal of *Timothy* or *Titus* thence as evangelists, as some pretend, or upon their death as fixed pastors and bishops, as others, any should succeed them in the power they enjoyed, or not; nor in what manner the pastors of the several churches should order things of common concernment. Which would seem to be a strange omission, were either of these two forms so necessary, taken exclusively of the other, as both parties seem to affirm. For we cannot conceive but if the being and right constitution of a church did depend upon the manner of the governors acting in it, but that care which *Paul* had over all the churches would have prompted him, (especially being assisted and guided by an infallible spirit in the penning those epistles,) to have laid down some certain rules for the acting of the pastors of the churches after the departure of *Timothy* and *Titus*. Considering especially that the epistles then written by him, were to be of standing perpetual use in the church of God; and by which the churches in after ages were to be guided as well as those that were then in being. The apostle in both epistles takes care for a succession of pastors in those churches: *Timothy* is charged to commit the things he had heard of *Paul* to faithful men; who shall be fit to teach others.<sup>1</sup> Had it not been as requisite to have charged him to have committed his power of government to men fit for that, had the apostles looked on the form of government to be as necessary as the office of preaching? *Paul* saith, he left *Titus* in *Crete*, on purpose to settle the churches and ordain presbyters in every city:<sup>2</sup> had it not been as necessary to have showed in what order the churches must be settled, and what power did belong to those presbyters, and how they should act in the governing their churches, had he thought the constitution of the churches did depend upon the form of their acting? We see here then, that *St. Paul* doth not express anything necessarily inferring any one constant form to be used in the church of God. And whence can we infer any necessity of it, but from the scriptures laying it down as a duty that such a form and no other there must be used in the church of God? For all that we can see then by *Paul's* direction for church government, (when if ever, this should have been expressed,) it was left to the Christian wisdom and

<sup>1</sup> 2 Tim. ii. 2.<sup>2</sup> Titus i. 5.



prudence of the churches of *Ephesus* and *Crete* to consult and determine in what manner the government of their churches should be provided for, on the departure of *Timothy* and *Titus* from them.

§ 6. But here it will be soon replied, that though nothing be expressed in *Paul's* epistles to *Timothy* and *Titus*, yet *Paul's* appointing *Timothy* and *Titus* over those churches, did determine the form of government, and they were entrusted with a power to provide for future governors after them.

To this I answer: *First*, The superiority which *Timothy* and *Titus* had over those churches, doth not prove that form of government necessary in all churches; I dispute not whether they were *evangelists* or not, or acted as such in that superiority, (of that afterwards,) it is evident they might be so; there being no convincing argument to the contrary. And the bare possibility of the truth of the negative, destroys the necessity of the affirmative of a proposition. As, *Si possibile est, hominem non esse animal*, "if it be possible that man is not an animal," then that proposition is false, *Necesse est hominem esse animal*, "but man is necessarily an animal." For, *Necesse est esse*, and *Non possibile est non esse*, "it is necessary to be, and it is not possible not to be," being *æquipollents* on the one side; and *Possibile est non esse*, *Et non necesse est esse*, "It is possible not to be, and it is not necessary to be," being *æquipollents* on the other; *Possibile est non esse*, "It is possible not to be," must be contradictory to *Necesse est esse*, "It is necessary to be," as *Non possibile est non esse*, is to *Non necesse est esse*, "It is not possible not to be," is to "it is not necessary to be." So that if only the possibility of their acting as *evangelists*, that is, by an extraordinary commission, be evinced, which I know none will deny; the necessity of their acting as fixed bishops is destroyed, and consequently the necessity of the continuance of their office too, which depends upon the former. For if they acted not as bishops, nothing can be drawn from their example necessarily enforcing the continuance of the superiority which they enjoyed. But though nothing can be inferred from hence as to the necessity of that office to continue in the church, which *Timothy* and *Titus* were invested in; yet from the superiority of the power which they enjoyed over those churches, whether as *evangelists*, or as fixed bishops, these two things may be inferred. *First*, That the superiority of some church officers over others, is not contrary to the rule

of the gospel: for all parties acknowledge the superiority of their power above the presbyters of the several cities; only the continuance of this power is disputed by many. But if they had any such power at all, it is enough for my present design, viz. that such a superiority is not contrary to the gospel rule: or that the nature of the government of the church doth not imply a necessary equality among the governors of it. *Secondly*, Hence I infer, that it is not repugnant to the constitution of churches in apostolical times, for men to have power over more than one particular congregation. For such a power *Timothy* and *Titus* had, which had it been contrary to the nature of the regiment of churches, we should never have read of in the first planted churches. So that if those popular arguments of a necessary relation between a pastor and particular people, of personal knowledge, care and inspection, did destroy the lawfulness of extending that care and charge to many particular congregations, they would likewise overthrow the nature, end and design of the office which *Timothy* and *Titus* acted in: which had a relation to a multitude of particular and congregational churches. Whether their power was extraordinary or not, I now do not dispute; but whether such a power be repugnant to the gospel or not; which from their practice is evident that it is not. But then others who would make this office necessary, urge further, that *Timothy* or *Titus* might ordain and appoint others to succeed them in their places and care over all those churches under their charge. To which I answer, First, What they might do is not the question, but what they did, as they might do it; so they might not do it, if no other evidence be brought to prove it: for, *Quod possibile est esse, possibile est non esse*, "What is possible to be, is possible not to be." *Secondly*, Neither what they did, is the whole question, but what they did with an opinion of the necessity of doing it, whether they were bound to do it or not? and if so, whether by any law extant in scripture, and given them by *Paul* in his epistles, or some private command and particular instructions when he deputed them to their several charges: if the former, that law and command must be produced, which will hardly be, if we embrace only the received canon of the scripture. If the latter, we must then fetch some standing rule and law from unwritten traditions; for no other evidence can be given of the instructions by word of mouth, given by *Paul* to *Timothy* and *Titus* at the taking their charges upon them. But yet *Thirdly*, Were it only the matter of fact that was

disputed, that would hold a controversy still, viz. Whether any did succeed *Timothy* and *Titus* in their offices: but this I shall leave to its proper place to be discussed, when I come to examine the argument from apostolical succession. Thus we see then that neither the qualification of the persons, nor the commands for a right exercise of the office committed to them, nor the whole epistles to *Timothy* and *Titus*, do determine any one form of government to be necessary in the church of God.

§ 7. *Thirdly*, Let us see whether the general rules do require any one form; which rules in that they are general, can determine nothing of the authority itself as to its particular mode, being intended only for the regulation of the exercise of the authority in which men are placed. And it is an evidence that nothing is particularly determined in this case, when the Spirit of God only lays down such rules for government which are applicable to distinct forms. Otherwise, certainly some rule would have been laid down, which could have been applied to nothing but to that one form. *That none take the office of preaching without a call, nor go without sending*,<sup>1</sup> will equally hold whether the power of ordination lie in a bishop with presbyters, or in presbyters acting with equality of power; *That offenders be censured, and complaints made to the church in case of scandal*, determines nothing to whom the power of jurisdiction doth solely belong, nor what that church is which must receive these complaints. *That all things be done with decency and order*, doth prescribe nothing wherein that decency lies, nor how far that order may extend; nor yet who must be the judges of that decency and order. *That all be done for edification, and the common benefit of the church*, doth no ways restrain his church's freedom in disposing of itself as to the form of its government, so the aim of the church be for the better edification of the body of the church, and to promote the benefit of it. But methinks, these general orders and rules for discipline do imply the particular manner of government to be left at liberty to the church of God, so that in all the several forms these general rules be observed. Whereas had Christ appointed a superior order to govern other subordinate officers and the church together; Christ's command for governing the church would have been particularly addressed to them: and again, had it been the will of

<sup>1</sup> Heb. v. 2; Rom. x. 14.

Christ there should be no superior order above the pastors of particular churches, there would have been some express and direct prohibition of it; which because we nowhere read, it seems evident that Christ hath left both the one and the other to the freedom and liberty of his church. So much shall serve in this place to show how improbable it is that Christ did ever prescribe any one form of government in his church, since he hath only laid down general rules for the management of church government.

§ 8. But this will not yet suffice those, who plead that Christ must determine one immutable form of government in his church: but although it be a high presumption to determine first what Christ must do, before we examine what he hath done, yet we shall still proceed and examine all the pretences that are brought for this opinion. The next thing, then, which is generally urged for it, is “the equal necessity of Christ’s instituting a certain form as for any other legislator who models a commonwealth.” Now for answer to this, I say first, that Christ hath instituted such an immutable government in his church, as is sufficient for the succession and continuance of it, which is all which founders of commonwealths do look after, viz. that there be such an order and distinction of persons, and subordination of one to the other, that a society may still be preserved among them; now this is sufficiently provided for by Christ’s appointing officers continually to rule his church, and establishing laws for the perpetuating of such officers; so whatsoever is necessary in order to the general ends of government, is acknowledged to be appointed by Jesus Christ. Until, then, that it be proved that one form of government is in itself absolutely necessary for the being of a church, this argument can prove nothing; for what is drawn from necessity, will prove nothing but in a case of necessity. *Secondly*, I answer, that those things which are not absolutely necessary to the being of a church, are left to Christ’s liberty, whether he will determine them or not; and are no further to be looked on as necessary than as he hath determined by his laws whether they shall be or not, in his church. The thing will be thus cleared. When I read that *Zaleucus*, *Lycurgus*, or *Numa*, did form a commonwealth and make laws for it, I presently conclude that there must be some order or distinction of persons in this commonwealth, and some rules whereby persons must be governed, and whereby others must rule; but I cannot hence infer that *Zaleucus* or *Lycurgus* did institute monarchical, aristocratical, or democratical government, be-



cause any of these forms might be agreeable to their design; and therefore what kind of government they did appoint, can no otherwise be known than by taking a view of the laws which they made in order thereto. So it is in reference to Christ; when we read that Christ hath instituted a church always to continue in the world, we presently apprehend that there must be some power and order in the members of that society, and laws for the governing it: but we cannot hence gather that he hath bound up his officers to act in any one form, because several forms might in themselves equally tend to the promoting the end of government in his church. And therefore what Christ hath expressly determined in his positive laws, must be our rule of judging in this case, and not any presumption of our own, that such a form was necessary, and therefore Christ must institute and appoint it; which is fully expressed by judicious *Mr. Hooker*,<sup>1</sup> whose words will serve as a sufficient answer to this objection. "As for those marvellous discourses, whereby they adventure to argue that God must needs have done the thing which they imagine was to be done; I must confess I have often wondered at their exceeding boldness herein. When the question is, whether God has delivered in scripture, (as they affirm he hath,) a complete particular immutable form of church polity, why take they that other, both presumptuous and superfluous labour, to prove he should have done it: there being no way in this case to prove the deed of God, saving only by producing that evidence wherein he hath done it? But if there be no such thing apparent upon record, they do as if one should demand a legacy, by force and virtue of some written testament, wherein there being no such thing specified, he pleadeth that there it must needs be, and bringeth arguments from the love and good will which always the testator bore, imagining that these or the like proofs will convict a testament to have that in it, which other men can nowhere by reading find. In matters which concern the actions of God, the most dutiful way on our part, is, to search what God hath done, and with meekness to admire that, rather than to dispute what he in congruity of reason ought to do." Thus he, with more to the same purpose. The sum, then, of the answer to this argument, is this, that nothing can be inferred of what Christ must do, from his relation to his church, but what is absolutely necessary to the being of it; as for all other things, they being

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesiast. Polity, lib. iii. sect. 2.

arbitrary constitutions, we can judge no more of the necessity of them, than as we find them clearly revealed in the Word of God. And therefore the plea must be removed from what Christ must do, to what he hath done, in order to the determining the particular form of government in his church.

§ 9. But still it is argued for the necessity of a particular form of government in the church from the similitudes *the church is set out by in scripture; it is called a vine, and therefore must have keepers; an house, and therefore must have government; a city, and therefore must have a polity; a body, and therefore must have parts.*<sup>1</sup> I answer, *First*, all these similitudes prove only that which none deny, that there must be order, power, and government in the church of God; we take not away the keepers from the vine, nor the government from the house, nor polity from the city, nor distinction of parts from the body; we assert all these things as necessary in the church of God. The keepers of the vine to defend and prune it; the governors of the house to rule and order it; the polity of the city to guide and direct it; the parts of the body to complete and adorn it. But *Secondly*, none of these similitudes prove what they are brought for; viz. that any one immutable form of government is determined. For may not the keepers of the vine use their own discretion in looking to it, so the flourishing of the vine be what they aim at? and if there be many of them, may there not be different orders among them, and some as supervisors of the others' work? The house must have governors; but those that are so, are entrusted with the power of ordering things in the house according to their own discretion; and where there is a multitude, is there not diversity of offices among them? and is it necessary that every house must have offices of the same kind? In great and large families there must be more particular distinct orders and offices, than in a small and little one. The city must have its polity; but all cities have not the like; some have one form, and some another, and yet there is a city still and a polity too. A body must have all its parts; but are all the parts of the body equal one to another? it sufficeth that there be a proportion, though not equality in them: the several parts of the body have their several offices, and yet we see the head is superintendent over them all: and thus if we make every particular church a body, yet it follows not that the form of clothing that body

<sup>1</sup> Parker de Polit. Eccles. lib. 2, c. 40.

must always be the same; for the manner of government is rather the clothing to the body than the parts of it; the governors indeed are parts of the body, but their manner of governing is not, that may alter according to the proportion and growth of the body, and its fashion change for better convenience.

§ 10. *But if these similitudes prove nothing, yet certainly, say they, the difference as to civil and ecclesiastical government will; for though there may be different forms in civil government, which are therefore called an ordinance of man;<sup>1</sup> yet there must be but one in church government, which is an ordinance of God, and Christ hath appointed officers to rule it.* I answer, *first*, we grant and acknowledge a difference between the church and the commonwealth, they are constituted for other ends; the one political, the other spiritual; one temporal, the other eternal; they subsist by different charters; the one given to men as men, the other to men as Christians. They act upon different principles; the one to preserve civil rights, the other to promote an eternal interest; nay, their formal constitution is different; for a man by being a member of a commonwealth doth not become a member of the church, and by being excommunicated out of the church, doth not cease to be a member of the commonwealth. The officers of the one are clearly distinct from the other, the one deriving their power from the law of Christ, the other from God's general providence: the magistrate hath no power to excommunicate formally out of the church any more than to admit into it, nor have the church officers any power to cast men out of the commonwealth. We see then there is a difference between civil and ecclesiastical government. But then I answer, *Secondly*, the power of the magistrate is not therefore called an ordinance of man, because of the mutability of its form, and as distinguished from the form of church government. For, *First*, the apostle speaks not of the form of government, but of the power: *Submit to every ordinance of man, &c.*; the ground of submission is not the form, but the power of civil government; and therefore there can be no opposition expressed here between the forms of civil and ecclesiastical government; but if any such opposition be, it must be between the powers; and if this be said as to civils, that the power is an ordinance of man in that sense, (whereas *Paul* saith it is of God,<sup>2</sup>) yet as

<sup>1</sup> 1 Pet. ii. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. xiii. 1.

to the church it is freely acknowledged that the power is derived from God. *Secondly*, the civil power is not called ἀνθρώπινη κτίσις, “a human institution,” because it is a creature of man’s making, and so subject to men’s power; but the ground of that speech is, because all civil power respects men as men, without any further connotation. “It is called human, not because it was devised by man, but because it is peculiar to man,” saith *Beza*.<sup>1</sup> And to the same purpose *Calvin*,<sup>2</sup> “it is called human administration, not on account of its being invented by men, but because it hath been appointed, and put in order, as a method of life peculiar to man.” *Piscator*,<sup>3</sup> “he calls it human, not because the magistracy hath men for its authors, but because they exercise it.” So then the civil power is not called an ordinance of man, as it is of man’s setting up, but as it is proper to man; and so if there be any opposition between the civil and church power, it is only this, that the one belongs to men as men, the other to men as Christians. *Thirdly*, although it be granted that Christ hath appointed and set up his own officers in his church; yet it doth not thence follow that he hath determined in what manner they shall rule his church. It is true, Christ hath set up in his church, *some apostles, some evangelists, and some pastors and teachers*:<sup>4</sup> but it doth not thence follow, that Christ hath determined, whether the power of apostles and evangelists should continue in his church or not, as it implied superiority over the ordinary pastors of the churches; nor whether the pastors of the church should act in an equality in their governing churches. I grant, that all church government must be performed by officers of Christ’s appointing, but that which I say is not determined in scripture, is, the way and manner whereby they shall govern churches in common.

§ 11. It is yet further argued,<sup>5</sup> *That if the form of church government be not immutably determined in scripture, then it is in the church’s power to make new officers which Christ never made, which must be a plain addition to the laws of Christ, and must argue the scripture of imperfection.* This

<sup>1</sup> Humana dicitur, non quod ab hominibus sit excogitata, sed quod hominum sit propria.

<sup>2</sup> Humana dicitur ordinatio, non quod humanitùs inventa fuerit; sed quod propria hominum est digesta et ordinata vivendi ratio.

<sup>3</sup> Humanam appellat, non quod magistratus homines authores habeat, sed quod homines eam gerant.

<sup>4</sup> Ephes. iv. 12.

<sup>5</sup> Parker Polit. Eccles. l. 2, cap. 45, s. 6.



being one of the main arguments, I have reserved it to the place of the *Triarii*,<sup>1</sup> and shall now examine what strength there lies in it. To this, therefore, I answer, *First*, Those officers are only said to be new, which were never appointed by Christ, and are contrary to the first appointments of Christ for the regulating of his church; such, it is granted, the church hath no power to institute: but if by new officers be meant only such as have a charge over more than one particular congregation by the consent of the pastors themselves, then it is evident such an office cannot be said to be new. For, besides the general practice of the church of God, from the first primitive times, which have all consented in the use of such officers, we find the foundation of this power laid by Christ himself in the power which the apostles were invested in, which was extended over many, both churches and pastors. But if it be said, *The apostolical power being extraordinary, must cease with the persons who enjoyed it*: I answer, *First*, What was extraordinary did cease; but all the dispute is, what was extraordinary and what not; some things were ordinary in them, as preaching, baptizing, ordaining, ruling churches; some things were again extraordinary, as immediate mission from Christ, (the main distinguishing note of an apostle,) a power of working miracles to confirm the truth of what they preached. Now the question is, whether the power which they enjoyed over presbyters and churches, be to be reckoned in the first or the second number. It must, therefore, be proved to be extraordinary, before it can be said to cease with them, and that must be done by some arguments proper to their persons; for if the arguments brought be of a common and moral nature, it will prove the office to be so too. *Secondly*, By ceasing may be meant either ceasing as to its *necessity*, or ceasing as to its *lawfulness*. I say not but that the *necessity* of the office, as in their persons, for the first preaching and propagating the gospel, did cease with them; but, that after their death it became *unlawful* for any particular persons to take the care and charge of *diocesan* churches, I deny. For to make a thing unlawful which was before lawful, there must be some express prohibition forbidding any further use of such a power, which I suppose men will not easily produce in the word of God.

§ 12. I answer, therefore, *secondly*, That the extending of any ministerial power, is not the appointing of any new office;

<sup>1</sup> Old soldiers set in the rear as a reserve.

because every minister of the gospel hath a relation *in actu primo*, "in the first act, or stage," to the whole church of God: the restraint and enlargement of which power is subject to positive determinations of prudence and conveniency *in actu secundo*, "in the second act;" and, therefore, if the church see it fit for some men to have this power enlarged for better government in some, and restrained in others, that enlargement is the appointing no new office, but the making use of a power already enjoyed for the benefit of the church of God. This being a foundation tending so fully to clear the lawfulness of that government in the church which implies a superiority and subordination of the officers of the church to one another: and the church's using her prudence in ordering the bounds of her officers, I shall do these two things. *First*, Show that the power of every minister of the gospel doth primarily and habitually respect the church in common. *Secondly*, That the church may, in a peculiar manner, single out some of its officers for the due administration of ecclesiastical power. *First*, That every minister of the gospel hath a power respecting the church in common. This I find fully and largely proved by those who assert the equality of the power of ministers: *First*, from Christ's bestowing the several offices of the church, for the use of the whole church, *Ephesians* iv. 12, 13. Christ hath set apostles, &c., pastors and teachers in his church;<sup>1</sup> now this church must needs be the catholic<sup>2</sup> visible church, because indisputably the apostles' office did relate thereto, and consequently so must that of pastors and teachers too. Again, the end of these offices is the building up the body of Christ, which cannot otherwise be understood than of his whole church: else Christ must have as many bodies as the church hath particular congregations, which is a new way of *consubstantiation*. *Secondly*, The ministerial office was in being before any particular congregations were gathered: for Christ, upon his ascension to glory, *gave these gifts to men*;<sup>3</sup> and the apostles were empowered by Christ before his ascension. Either, then, they were no church officers, or if they were so, they could have no other *correlatives*, but the whole body of the church of God, then lying under the power of darkness, a few persons excepted. *Thirdly*, Because the main design of appointing a gospel ministry was the conversion of heathens

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xii. 28, 29.

<sup>2</sup> In the generic sense, *universal*, from *καθολος*, the whole, or all, and not in its special sense, as usurped by the Romanists.

<sup>3</sup> Eph. iv. 8; Matth. xxviii. 19.

and infidels: and if these be the proper object of the ministerial function, then the office must have reference to the whole church of Christ; else there could be no part of that office performed towards those who are not yet converted. *Fourthly*, Else a minister can perform no office belonging to him as such beyond the bounds of his particular congregation, and so can neither preach nor administer the sacraments to any other but within the bounds of his own particular place and people. *Fifthly*, Because ministers by baptizing do admit men into the catholic visible church, (else a man must be baptized again every time he removes from one church to another,) and none can admit beyond what their office doth extend to; therefore it is evident that every particular pastor of a church hath a relation to the whole church; to which purpose our former observation is of great use, viz. that particular congregations are not of God's *primary intention*, but for *men's conveniency*, and so consequently is the fixedness of particular pastors to their several places for the greater conveniency of the church: every pastor of a church then hath a relation to the whole church; and that which hinders him from the exercise of this power, is not any unlawfulness in the thing, but the preserving of order and conveniency in the church of God. This being premised, I say, *Secondly*, That the officers of the church may in a peculiar manner attribute a larger and more extensive power to some particular persons for the more convenient exercise of their common power. We have seen already that their power extends to the care of the churches in common, that the restraint of this power is a matter of order and decency in the church of God. Now in matters of common concern, without all question it is not unlawful when the church judgeth it most for edification, to grant to some the *executive part* of that power, which is originally and fundamentally common to them all. For our better understanding of this, we must consider a twofold power belonging to church officers, *a power of order*, and *a power of jurisdiction*; for in every *presbyter*, there are some things inseparably joined to his function, and belonging to every one in his personal capacity, both *in actu primo* and *in actu secundo*, both as to the *right and power* to do it, and the *exercise and execution* of that power; such are preaching the word, visiting the sick, administering sacraments, &c. But there are other things which every presbyter hath an aptitude, and a *jus* to, *in actu primo*, but the limitation and exercise of that power doth belong to the church in common, and belongs not to any one

personally, but by a further power of choice or delegation to it; such is the power of visiting churches, taking care that particular pastors discharge their duty; such is the power of ordination and church censures, and making rules for decency in the church; this is what we call the *power of jurisdiction*. Now this latter power, though it belongs habitually and *in actu primo* to every presbyter; yet being about matters of public and common concern, some further authority in a church constituted is necessary, besides the power of order; and when this power, either by consent of the pastors of the church, or by the appointment of a Christian magistrate, or both, is devolved to some particular persons, though *quoad aptitudinem*, "as to fitness," the power remains in every presbyter, yet *quoad executionem*, "as to execution," it belongs to those who are so appointed. And therefore *Camero*<sup>1</sup> determines that "ordination does not arise from the minister, merely because he is the minister, but because it obtains its special authority at the time."<sup>2</sup> i. e. That ordination doth not belong to the power of order but to the power of jurisdiction, and therefore is subject to positive restraints, by prudential determinations. By this we may understand how lawful the exercise of an episcopal power may be in the church of God, supposing an equality in all church officers as to the power of order. And how incongruously they speak, who supposing an equality in the presbyters of churches at first, do cry out, that the church takes upon her the office of Christ, if she delegates any to a more peculiar exercise of the power of jurisdiction.

§ 13. The last thing pleaded why an immutable form of church government must be laid down in scripture, is, *from the perfection and sufficiency of the scriptures; because otherwise the scriptures would be condemned of imperfection*. But this will receive an easy despatch: for, *first*, the controversy about the perfection of the scriptures, is not concerning an essential or integral perfection, but a perfection *ratione finis et effectuum*,<sup>3</sup> "in order to its end and effects;" now the end of it, is to be an adequate rule of faith and manners, and sufficient to bring men to salvation; which it is sufficiently acknowledged to be, if all things to be believed or practised be contained in the word of God: now that which we assert

<sup>1</sup> De Ecclesia in Matt. xviii. 15, tom. 1, op. in 40, p. 27.

<sup>2</sup> Ordinalio non sit à pastore quatenus pastor est, sed quatenus ad tempus singularem auctoritatem obtinet.

<sup>3</sup> Rivet. Isagog. ad Script. sacr. cap. 24, s. 3.



not to be fully laid down in scripture, is not pleaded to be any ways necessary, nor to be a matter of faith, but something left to the church's liberty; but here it is said by some, that this is *adding to the law of God*, which destroys the scriptures' perfection; therefore I answer, *secondly*, whatever is done with an opinion of the necessity of doing it, destroys the scriptures' perfection if it be not contained in it: for that were to make it an imperfect rule; and in this sense every *additio perficiens* is *additio corrumpens*, every "addition perfecting, is an addition corrupting," because it takes away from the perfection of the rule which it is added to: and thus popish traditions are destructive of the scriptures' sufficiency. But the doing of anything not positively determined in scripture, not looking upon it as a thing we are bound to do from the necessity of the thing, and observing the general rules of scripture in the doing it, is far from destroying the perfection or sufficiency of the word of God. *Thirdly*, all essentials of church government are contained clearly in scripture. The essentials of church government, are such as are necessary to the preservation of such a society as the church is. Now all these things have been not only granted, but proved to be contained in scripture; but whatever is not so necessary in itself, can only become necessary by virtue of God's express command; and what is not so commanded, is accidental, and circumstantial, and a matter of Christian liberty, and such we assert the form of church government to be. It is not our work to inquire, why God hath determined some things that might seem more circumstantial than this, and left other things at liberty; but whether God hath determined these things or not, which determination being once cleared, makes the thing so commanded necessary as to our observance of it; but if no such thing be made appear, the thing remains a matter of liberty, and so the scriptures' perfection as to necessities in order to salvation, is no ways impeached by it. So much now for the necessity of Christ's determining the particular form of government. We now proceed to the consideration of Christ's actions, whether by them the form of church government is determined or not?

## CHAPTER V.

Whether any of Christ's actions have determined the form of government. All power in Christ's hands for governing his church. What order Christ took in order thereto when he was in the world. Calling Apostles the first action respecting outward government. The name and office of Apostles cleared. An equality among them proved during our Saviour's life. *Peter* not made Monarch of the church by Christ. The Apostles' power over the seventy disciples considered, with the nature and quality of their office, *Matth.* xx. 25, 26, 27, largely discussed and explained. It makes not all inequality in church officers unlawful; by the difference of Apostles and pastors of churches, *Matth.* xviii. 15. How far that determines the form of church government. No evidence of any exact order for church government from thence, *Matth.* xvi. 15, 16, 17, 18; considered how far that concerns the government of the church.

§ 1. HAVING considered and answered the arguments which are brought, why Christ must determine the particular form of government; our next task will be to inquire into those actions of our Saviour which are conceived to have any plausible aspect towards the settling the form of government in his church. And were it not that men are generally so wedded to an *hypothesis* they have once drunk in by the prevalency of interest or education, we might have been superseded from our former labour, but that men are so ready to think that opinion to be most necessary, which they are most in love with, and have appeared most zealous for. Men are loath to be persuaded that they have spent so much breath to so little purpose, and have been so hot and eager for somewhat, which at last appears to be a matter of Christian liberty. Therefore we find very few that have been ever very earnest in the maintaining or promoting any matter of opinion, but have laid more weight upon it, than it would really bear; lest men should think, that with all their sweat and toil, they only beat the air, and break their teeth in cracking a nut, with a hole in it; which if they had been so wise as to discern before, they might have saved their pains for somewhat which would have better recompensed them. But thus it generally fares

with men; they suck in principles according as interest and education disposes them, that being once in, have the advantage of insinuating themselves into the understanding, and thereby raising a prejudice against whatever comes to disturb them; which prejudice being the *yellow jaundice* of the soul, leaves such a tincture upon the eyes of the understanding, that till it be cured of that *icterism*, it cannot discern things in their proper colours. Now this prejudice is raised by nothing more strongly than when the opinion received is entertained, upon a presumption that there is a *divine stamp* and *impress* upon it, though no such *effigies* be discernible there. Hence comes all the several contending parties about church government, equally to plead an interest in this *jus divinum*, and whatever opinion they have *espoused*, they presently conceive it to be of no less than *divine* extract and *original*; and as it sometimes was with great personages among the *heathens*, when their miscarriages were discernible to the eye of the world, the better to *palliate* them among the *vulgar*, they gave themselves out to be impregnated by some of their adored deities; so I fear it hath been among some whose religion should have taught them better things, when either faction, design, or interest, hath formed some conceptions within them suitable thereunto, to make them the more passable to the world, they are brought forth under the pretence of divine truths. Far be it from me to charge any sincere, humble, sober Christians with an offence of so high a nature, who yet may be possessed with some mistakes and apprehensions of this nature; but these are only wrought on by the *masters of parties*, who know unless they fly so high, they shall never hit the game they aim at. This is most discernible in the *factors* for the *Roman omnipotency*, (as *Paulus* the fifth was called *Omnipotentia Pontificia Conservator*, “the defender of the pontiff’s omnipotency:”) they who see not that interest and faction uphold that *court* rather than the *church*, may well be presumed to be hoodwinked with more than an implicit faith; and yet if we believe the great supporters of that interest, the power they plead for is plainly given them from Christ himself; and not only offer to prove that it was so, but that it was not consistent with the wisdom of Christ that it should be otherwise. Lest I should seem to wrong those of any religion, hear what the author of the *Gloss* upon the *Extravagants*,<sup>1</sup> (so they may be well called,) saith to this

<sup>1</sup> Extravag. unum sanctum.

purpose, applying that place of our Saviour, "all power is given to me in heaven and earth," *Matthew* xxviii. 18, to the *pope*, adds these words, "the Lord would not seem, I would speak with reverence, to have been discreet, had he not left one such only vicar after him, who could do all these things."<sup>1</sup> We see by this, what blasphemies men may run into, when they argue from their private fancies and opinions, to what must be done by the law of Christ. It therefore becomes all sober Christians impartially to inquire what Christ hath done, and to ground their opinions only upon that, without any such presumptuous intrusions into the counsels of Heaven. We here therefore take our leave of the dispute, why it was necessary that a form of government should be established, and now enter upon a survey of those grounds which are taken from any passages of our Saviour, commonly produced as a foundation for any particular forms.

§ 2. I shall not stand to prove, that *Christ* as *Mediator* hath all the power over the *church* in his own hands, it being a thing so evident from scripture,<sup>2</sup> and so beyond all dispute with those whom I have to deal with. In which respect he is the head of the church,<sup>3</sup> and from whom all divine right for authority in the church must be derived. Which right can arise only from some actions or laws of Christ, which we therefore now search into. The first public action of Christ after his solemn entrance upon his office, which can be conceived to have reference to the government of his church, was, the calling the *Apostles*. In whom for our better methodizing this discourse, we shall observe these three several steps: First, When they were called to be Christ's disciples. Secondly, When Christ sent them out with a power of miracles. Thirdly, When he gave them their full commission of acting with apostolical power all the world over. These three periods are accurately to be distinguished; for the apostles did not enjoy so great power when they were disciples, as when they were sent abroad by Christ; neither had they any proper power of church government after that sending forth, till after Christ's resurrection, when Christ told them, *All power was put into his hands*, and therefore gave them full commission to go and preach the gospel to all nations.<sup>4</sup> The first step then we observe in the apostles towards their power of church

<sup>1</sup> Non videtur Dominus discretus fuisse, ut cum reverentia ejus loquar; nisi unicum post se talem vicarium reliquisset, qui hæc omnia posset.

<sup>2</sup> Matth. xxviii. 18.

<sup>3</sup> Isa. ix. 6.

<sup>4</sup> Matth. xxviii. 18, 19.



government, was in their first calling to be disciples. Two several calls are observed in scripture concerning the apostles: the first was more general, when they were called only to follow Christ; the second more special, when Christ told them what he called them to, and specified and described their office to them, by telling them he would make them *Fishers of men*. We shall endeavour to digest the order of their calling as clearly and as briefly as we can. Our blessed Saviour, about the thirtieth year of his age, solemnly entering upon the discharge of his prophetic office,<sup>1</sup> in making known himself to be the true *Messias* to the world, to make his appearance more public, goes to *Jordan*, and is there baptized of *John*;<sup>2</sup> presently after he is led up by the Spirit into the wilderness, where he continued forty days.<sup>3</sup> In this space of time *John* removes from *Jordan*, and comes on the other side to *Bethabara*; thither *Christ* comes to *John*;<sup>4</sup> *John* not only owns *Christ* himself, but tells his disciples, "This was he into whose name he had baptized them." Upon this, two of *John's* disciples leave their master and follow *Christ*.<sup>5</sup> These two are the first disciples we ever read our Saviour had; whereof the one was *Andrew*, *Peter's* brother, and the other probably conceived to be *John*, (it being his custom to conceal his name when he speaks of himself;) *Andrew* calls his brother *Peter*; *Christ* next day calls *Philip*; *Philip* finds *Nathaniel*; and this, as far as we read, was the first number of *Christ's* disciples. Here we find "two or three gathered together in the name of *Christ*, and *Christ*, truly, in the midst of them." These disciples it appears staid with *Christ* some time, for they went with him to the marriage in *Cana*;<sup>6</sup> and after went up with him to *Jerusalem*;<sup>7</sup> when many professed to be his disciples; from thence he goes into *Judea*, where he gathers many disciples, and baptizeth them.<sup>8</sup> After this he returns with his disciples by the way of *Samaria* into *Galilee*.<sup>9</sup> and these disciples being now again at home, in probability did return for their livelihood to their old employments for some small time, *Christ* having not yet commanded them to forsake all and follow him. Not long after, (about a year's space from their first calling,) *Jesus* being in *Galilee*, goes to the lake of *Genezareth*,<sup>10</sup> there he finds *Andrew* and *Peter* fishing:<sup>11</sup> after

<sup>1</sup> Luke iii. 23.<sup>3</sup> Mat. iv. 1.<sup>5</sup> John i. 37.<sup>7</sup> John ii. 17, 23.<sup>9</sup> John iv. 1.<sup>11</sup> Matth. iv. 18, 19.<sup>2</sup> Mat. iii. 23.<sup>4</sup> John i. 29.<sup>6</sup> John ii. 2.<sup>8</sup> John iii. 22.<sup>10</sup> Luke v. 1.

the miracle there wrought, he then in a more solemn manner calls them to leave their employment, for he had designed them for a greater, which was to be fishers of men.<sup>1</sup> Whereby *our Saviour* expresseth the care, pains, diligence, design and end of the ministerial function he had appointed them for. *Andrew* and *Peter* presently leave all and follow Christ; the like do *James* and *John* whom they met with, a little further upon the shore. And now those who were before but as common disciples, are admitted into a higher order, and bred up by Christ as persons designed for an employment of so high a nature. We see here a necessity of making a double call of the apostles; else it were impossible to reconcile the narration of *John* with the other evangelists. Therefore *Augustine*<sup>2</sup> thinks their first being with *Christ* as related by *St. John*, was only for present satisfaction who he was, which as soon as they understood and admired, they returned to their own habitations. *St. Thomas Aquinas* makes three several callings of them, the first *ad agnitionem et familiaritatem*, "to acknowledgement and intimacy," which is that in *John*; the second *ad discipulatum*, "to discipleship," that spoken of in *Luke* v. 1; the third *ad adhæSIONem*, "to adherence,"<sup>3</sup> *Matth.* iv. 18; *Mark* i. 16. But I see no reason to make the story in *Luke* to be different from that of *Matthew* and *Mark*; the former, some say, was *vocatio ad fidem*, "a call to the faith," a general preparatory call to the latter; the latter was *vocatio ad munus apostolicum*, "the call to the apostleship," although they were not chosen to be apostles till afterwards, yet now Christ made them *candidatos* of the apostleship, *et amicos interioris admissionis*, "his friends of a more intimate access," in order to that great employment he had designed them for. Further, we must take notice that from the time of the baptism of *John*, the *Apostles* did generally continue with *Christ*, which appears from the qualification of an apostle given by *Peter* at the choice of *Matthias*; "Of those men who have companied with us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us, beginning from the baptism of John, unto that same day he was taken up from us."<sup>4</sup> The strength of which testimony is impregnable, for proving that the apostles did generally continue with Christ after their being called to follow him; but that time,

<sup>1</sup> *Mark* i. 16, 17.

<sup>2</sup> *De Consensu. Evang.* l. 2, cap. 17.

<sup>3</sup> *V. Casaub. exer. in Bar.* xiii. s. 11. *Montacut. Grig. Eccles.* tom. 1. p. 2. p.

41. *Chemnitium Harm. Evan.* c. 36.

<sup>4</sup> *Acts* i. 21, 22.

from the baptism of *John*, must not be taken strictly; for many of the *apostles*, as *Matthew*, &c. were not called till some time after.<sup>1</sup> About four months after *Christ's* more solemn calling of the *apostles*, at the time of *Pentecost*, as *Chemnitius* conjectures, our Saviour proceeds to a soleinn choice of them into their office, which is described by *Luke*, vi. 13, after he had prayed the whole night before, v. 12. *Mark*<sup>2</sup> acquaints us with the ends of *Christ's* choosing them; First, That they might continually attend upon him, the better to be fitted for their employment afterwards; which he expresth, when he adds, that he might send them out to preach, and to give them power over devils and diseases, to cast out the one, and to cure the other. Their actual sending out was not (say some,) till half a year after, which is the story related by *Mat.* x. 1; near a *twelvemonth*, (say others,) but presently upon their choice *Christ* makes the sermon in the mount, as appears by comparing *Luke* vi. 17, 20, with *Mat.* v. 1, wherein among other things, our Saviour takes occasion to declare their duty to them, telling them, "They were the *light of the world*," &c., which he doth the more to fit them for the discharge of their employment.

§ 3. Having thus laid these things together about the apostles, from their first calling to the time of their *mission*, we shall take notice of those things from them which may relate to the office which the apostles were called to, and to the government of the church by them. *First*, We here observe, that our Saviour no sooner began to preach the gospel himself, but he made choice of some persons as a peculiar order of men for the propagation of the gospel in the world. The peculiarity of the function of a gospel ministry under *Christ* was, we see, designed from *Christ's* first public appearance in his office: he might have left the *apostles* in the common order of *disciples*, had he not intended an office in his church distinct and peculiar from all other employments; and therefore it is observable, that *Christ* did not call the *apostles* off from their other employments, till he designed to make them *apostles*; before, when they were only private disciples, they followed their employments at some times still; but when he calls them to be *fishers of men*, he bids them leave all and follow him. *Secondly*, We take notice of the admirable wisdom of our Saviour in the choice he made of the persons for first founding his church,

<sup>1</sup> Harmon. cap. 50.

<sup>2</sup> Mark iii. 14, 15.

and the means he used to fit them for it. The persons were such as were most suitable to his design; the means such as were most suitable to the persons. The persons were such, who by reason of the known meanness of their condition, and supposed weakness of abilities, were the fittest to convince the world, that the doctrine which they preached was not the product of human wisdom, but the *express image and character of divine truth*, whose nakedness and simplicity would gain more upon men's belief by the power which accompanied the preaching of it, than the most refined and sublime notions of their wise men could do, managed with the greatest subtlety and prudence by the maintainers of them. *Christ* would make men see that his doctrine stood not in need either of the wisdom or power of men, to defend or propagate it; and therefore made choice of the most unlikely instruments for that end, "that men's faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God."<sup>1</sup> But withal, we are to take notice of *Christ's* admirable wisdom in the means he used to fit and qualify them for the first builders of his church; for although the power and efficacy of their preaching was wholly from God, and not from themselves, yet our Saviour doth not presently upon his calling them, place them in the highest office he intended them for, but proceeds gradually with them, and keeps them a long time under his own eye and instruction, before he sends them abroad: and that for two ends chiefly. First, *To be witnesses of his actions*. Secondly, *To be auditors of his doctrine*. First, To be witnesses of his actions, which was looked on by the apostles, as the most necessary qualification for an apostle in the place before cited, *Acts* i. 21, 22. *Peter* calls himself a "witness of the sufferings of *Christ*," 1 *Pet.* v. 1. *John* saith, "That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled of the Word of Life; that which we have seen and heard declare we unto you," 1 *John* i. 1, 3, whereby the *credibility* of the gospel was sufficiently evidenced to the world, when the chief preachers spoke nothing but what their own senses were witnesses of, both as to the doctrine and actions of *Christ*; and therefore it is no ways *credible* they should be deceived themselves in what they spoke; and more *improbable* they would deceive others, whose *interest* lay wholly upon the *truth* of

<sup>1</sup> 1 *Cor.* ii. 5.



the doctrine which they preached; for by the very preaching of that doctrine they robbed themselves of all the comforts of life, and exposed themselves to a thousand miseries in this world; so that unless their doctrine was true in order to another life, they were guilty of the greatest folly on earth ever heard of. We see what care our Saviour took to satisfy the reasons of men concerning the *credibility* of his doctrine, when the persons he employed in the founding a church upon it, were only such as were intimately conversant with the whole life, doctrine, and works of him from whom they received it; and thereby we cannot suppose any ignorance in them concerning the things they spoke; and lest men should mistrust they might have a design to impose on others, he made their faithfulness appear by their exposing themselves to any hazards to make good the truth of what they preached. Especially, having such a divine power accompanying them in the miracles wrought by them, which were enough to persuade any rational men that they came upon a true *embassy*, who carried such *credentials* along with them. Another end of our Saviour's training up his apostles so long in his school before he sent them abroad, was, that they might be auditors of his doctrine, and so might learn themselves before they taught others. Christ was no friend to those hasty births which run abroad with the shell on their heads; no, although it was in his power to confer the gifts of the Holy Ghost, as well at their first entrance into discipleship as afterwards, yet we see he nurtures and trains them up gradually, teaching them as *Quintilian* would have masters do, *guttatim*, "by drops," acquainting them now with one, then with another of the mysteries of the gospel. Christ doth not overwhelm them with floods and torrents of discourses, but gently drops now one thing into them, then another, by which way such narrow-mouthed vessels would be the soonest filled. Yea, our Saviour useth such an *οικονομία*, "economy, management," as the Greek fathers call it, such a prudent temper in instructing them, that it is matter of just admiration to consider under how great and stupendous ignorance of the main points of redemption, (Christ's death and resurrection, and the nature of his kingdom,) they discovered, after they had been some years under Christ's tutorage. And we see what industry and diligence was used in the training up of those for the apostleship, who were in an immediate way sent out by Christ. And it is very probable that upon their first sending abroad they taught not by immediate revelation, but only

what they had learned from Christ during their being with him. Whence we see what a subordination there is in acquired parts, labour, and industry, to the teachings and inspirations of the Divine Spirit; our Saviour looked not on his labour as lost, although afterwards the *unction from the Holy One should teach them all things*. It was Christ's design to have them go חֵל—מְחִיל אֵל, "from strength to strength,"<sup>1</sup> *à domo sanctuarii in domum doctrinæ*,<sup>2</sup> as the *Chaldee paraphrast* renders that place, "from one school of learning to another." As under the law even those that waited for the *Ruach hakkodesh*, "the inspiration of the Divine Spirit," were brought up in the *schools* of the *prophets* under instruction there; which was the place where they lay expecting the gentle gale of the Holy Spirit to carry them forth; which was the ground of *Amos's* complaint, that "he was neither a prophet, nor the son of a prophet;"<sup>3</sup> by which it seems evident that God's ordinary course was to take some of the sons of the prophets out of the colleges where they lived, and employ them in the prophetic office. But of this largely elsewhere. Such a *school* of the *prophets* did our Saviour now erect, wherein he entered his disciples as *scholars*, and educated them in order to the office he intended for them.

§ 4. The next thing we take notice of, is, the name and nature of that office which Christ called them to. They who derive the use of the name of apostles as applied by Christ to his disciples, either from the ἀποστολεις, "apostles," at *Athens*, by which name the masters of some ships were called, as the ships ἀποστολοι, "sent forth," or from *Hesychius's* ἀποστολοι, which he interprets νυμφαγωγος, "those who conducted the bride to the bridegroom," or from the ἀποστολοι in the sense of the *civil law*, which signifies the "dismissory letters granted for appeals;" or from the Jewish שְׁלִיחִין, "sent," as thereby were understood those ἀποστολοι as *Epiphanius* calls them, who were as assessors and counsellors to the *patriarch* of the Jews at *Tiberias*; or those "officers who were sent" up and down by the *patriarch* to gather up tenths, first fruits, and such other things; who are called thence *apostoli* in the *Codex. Theod. tit. de Judæis*;<sup>5</sup> all these I say do equally lose their labour, and run far to fetch that which might be found much nearer home.

<sup>1</sup> Psalms lxxxiv. 7.

<sup>2</sup> "From the house of the Sanctuary to the house of doctrine."

<sup>3</sup> Amos vii. 14.

<sup>4</sup> Suidas in v. Digest. l. 50, tit. 16, leg. 106. Cont. Ebionitas.

<sup>5</sup> Lib. 16, tit. 8.

Our Saviour taking the word from common use, but applying it in a special manner to a peculiar sense, which is the custom of the Scriptures. The original of the word properly imports such as are employed by commission from another for the despatch of some business in his name. So *Casaubon*,<sup>1</sup> (who was sufficiently able to judge of the use of a Greek word,) “certain men, in the common Greek dialect, are called ἀποστολοι, who are sent to some places, more for the purpose of carrying on some concern, than for conveying news.” And so it is taken, *John* xiii. 16, οὐδε ἀποστολος μείζων του πεμψαντος αυτον, “He that is sent is not greater than he that sent him.” Thence *Epaphroditus* when employed upon a special message to *Paul* in the name of the churches, is called ἀποστολος υμων, *Philippians* ii. 25, which we translate “your messenger.” And so *Titus* and the two other sent to the church of *Corinth* to gather their charity,<sup>2</sup> are called ἀποστολοι εκκλησιων, “the messengers of the churches.” Thence *Paul* fully renders the import and sense of the word apostle by πρεσβενομεν, *2 Corinth.* v. 20. We act as “ambassadors” for Christ. To which purpose it is observable that the Septuagint, (whose Greek is most followed by the New Testament,) do render the word מֵלָךְ when it signifies to employ a messenger upon special service, by ἀποσελλειν, “to send,”<sup>3</sup> as *1 King.* xxi. 11; *1 King.* xii. 18; *Exod.* iv. 30, and the very word ἀποστολος is used in this sense, *1 King.* xiv. 6, where *Ahijah* saith, I am ἀποστολος προς σε σκληρος, “a sad messenger to thee;” for, thus saith the Lord, &c. Whereby the full sense and importance of the word apostle appears to be, one that is employed by a peculiar commission from him that hath authority over him for the doing some special service. Thus were Christ’s disciples called apostles from the immediate commission which they had from Christ for the discharge of that work which he employed them in. Thence our Saviour makes use of the word *sending* in the proper and peculiar sense when he gives the apostles their commission, in those remarkable words of Christ to them; *As the Father hath sent me even so send I you.* *John* xx. 21. Whereby our Saviour delegates his power and authority which he had as doctor of the church, to his apostles upon his leaving the world, not in a *privative way*, so as to destroy his own authority over the church, but

<sup>1</sup> In communi Græcorum usu ἀποστολοι dicebantur certi homines qui negotii gerendi gratiâ, magis quam deferendi nuntii, aliquò mittebantur.—*Exercit.* 14, sect. 4.

<sup>2</sup> *2 Cor.* viii. 23.

<sup>3</sup> “A naval expedition; αποστολα πλοια, transport vessels, express-boats.”

in a *cumulative way*, investing them with that authority which they had not before, for both teaching and governing the church. No argument then can be drawn for the right or form of church government from Christ's actions towards his disciples before the last and full commission was given unto them; because they had no power of church government before that time.

§ 5. Which will be further cleared if we consider their first sending out, spoken in *Matth. x. 1, Mark vi. 7, Luke ix. 1*. Several things lie in our way to be observed in reference to this *mission* of the apostles. *First*, that though the apostles had been now for some competent time, not only called to their office, but solemnly chosen to it; yet we nowhere read that they did ever exercise that office till now they were sent forth by Christ. They remained still at Christ's feet, learning for their own instruction, and fitting themselves for their future employment, and thought it no inconvenience while they lay for a wind, to lay in sufficient lading and provision for their voyage. Baptize indeed they did before, *John iv. 2*, but that I suppose was done by them by an immediate present order from Christ himself, being by as the chief in the action, thence Christ in one place is said to baptize, *John iii. 22*, and yet he is said not to baptize, but his disciples, *John iv. 2*. Christ did it *authoritatively*, the disciples *ministerially*. Yet if we should grant the disciples did then baptize as private men after the received custom of the Jews, (among whom only a *confessus trium*, "a session of three," i. e. teacher, was requisite to baptize a proselyte,) this doth not at all take off from the peculiarity of a function both to preach and baptize, because as yet the gospel ministry was not instituted; and therefore what might be lawful before restraint, doth not follow it should be so after: when all those scattered rays and beams, which were dispersed abroad before, were gathered into the ministerial office upon Christ's appointing it, as that great *hemisphere* of light in the creation, was after swallowed up in the body of the sun. But now were the apostles first sent out to preach, and now God first begins to null the Jewish ministry, and set up another instead of it, and makes good that threatening: "That he was against the shepherds, and would require the flock at their hand, and cause them to cease to feed the flock,"<sup>1</sup> &c. Here then we have the first exercise of the apostles' ministry, for which we see, besides their former

<sup>1</sup> Ezek. xxxiv. 10.



call and choice, particular mission was afterwards necessary. *Secondly*, we observe that the employment *Christ* sent them upon now, was only a temporary employment, confined as to work and place, and not the full apostolical work. The want of considering and understanding this, hath been the ground of very many mistakes among men, when they argue from the occasional precepts here given the apostles, as from a standing perpetual rule for a gospel ministry: whereas our Saviour only suited these instructions to the present case, and the nature and condition of the apostles' present employment, which was, not to preach the gospel up and down themselves, but to be as so many *John Baptists* to call people to the hearing of *Christ* himself; and therefore the doctrine they were to preach was the same with his, "the kingdom of Heaven is at hand,"<sup>1</sup> whereby it appears their doctrine was only preparatory to *Christ*; it being only to raise up higher expectations of the gospel state under the *Messias*; and these were they "whom the King now sent into the highways to invite men to the marriage-feast, and to bid them to come in to him."<sup>2</sup> This was the only present employment of the apostles in their first mission: in which they were confined to the cities of *Judea*, that they might have the first refusal of the gospel offers. This mission then being *occasional, limited, and temporary*, can yield no foundation for anything *perpetual* to be built upon it. *Thirdly*, we observe that those whom *Christ* employed in the first dispersing of the gospel abroad, were furnished with arguments sufficient to evince not only the *credibility*, but the certain *truth* of what they preached. Therefore *Christ*, when he now sent them out, gave them *ἐξουσίαν πνευμάτων*, "power over spirits," not only "a mere power to work miracles, but a right conferred on them to do it as the apostles of *Christ*."<sup>3</sup> These were the *credentials* which the apostles carried along with them to show from whom they derived their power, and by whose authority they acted. And these were the most suitable to them, as making it appear that a divine presence went along with them, and therefore they could not falsify to the world in what they declared unto them; which was the best way for them to evidence the truth of their doctrine, because it was not to be discovered by the evidence of the things themselves, but it depended upon the testimony of the author; and therefore the only way to confirm the truth of the doctrine, was to confirm

<sup>1</sup> Matth. x. 7.<sup>2</sup> Matth. xxii. 9.<sup>3</sup> Matth. x. 2.

the credibility of the author, which was best done by doing something above what the power of nature could reach unto. And this was the prerogative of the *apostles* in their first mission above *John the Baptist*: for of him it is said that he did no miracle. *Fourthly*, we observe that the apostles in this mission were invested in no power over the church, nor in any superiority of order one over another. The first is evident, because Christ did not now send them abroad to gather churches, but only to call persons to the doctrine of the *Messias*; and while Christ was in the world among them, he retained all church power and authority in his own hand. When this temporary mission expired, the *apostles* lived as private persons still under Christ's tutorage, and we never read them acting in the least as church officers all that while. Which may appear from this one argument, because all the time of our Saviour's being in the world, he never made a total separation from the *Jewish church*, but frequented with his disciples the *temple worship* and service to the last; although he superadded many *gospel observances* to those of the *law*. And therefore when no churches were gathered, the *apostles* could have no church power over them. All that can be pleaded then in order to church government from the consideration of the form of government as settled by our Saviour, must be either from "a supposed inequality among the apostles themselves, or their superiority over the seventy disciples; or from some rules laid down by Christ in order to the government of his church: of which two are the most insisted on," *Matthew* xx. 25; xviii. 17. Of these in their order.

§ 6. The first argument drawn for an established form of government in the church, from the state of the apostles under Christ, is, "from a supposed inequality among the apostles, and the superiority of one as monarch of the church;" which is the papist's plea from *St. Peter*, as the chief and head of the apostles. Whose loud exclamations for *St. Peter's* authority are much of the same nature with those of *Demetrius* the silversmith, at *Ephesus*, with his fellow craftsmen, who cried up, great is *Diana* of the *Ephesiáns*, not from the honour they bore to her as *Diana*, but from the gain which came to them from her worship at *Ephesus*. But I dispute not now the *entail* of *St. Peter's power*, whatever it was to the *Roman bishop*: but I only inquire into the *pleas* drawn for his authority from the scriptures, which are written in so small a character, that without the *spectacles* of an implicit faith, they will scarcely appear legible to the eyes of men. For what

though *Christ changed St. Peter's name?* must it therefore follow that Christ baptized him monarch of his church? Were not *John* and *James* called by Christ *Boanerges?* and yet who thinks that those *sons of thunder* must therefore overturn all other power but their own? *Christ* gave them new names, to show his own *authority over them*, and not their *authority over others*; to be as *monitors of their duty*, and not as *instruments to convey power*. So *Chrysostom* says that the very name *Peter*, given to *Simon*, was to show him his duty of being fixed and stable in the faith of *Christ*, ἵνα εχῇ διδασκαλον διηνεχῇ τὴν προσηγορίαν τῆς τοιαυτῆς σεβρότητος,<sup>1</sup> "that he might have a teacher, as a perpetual remembrancer," (or as a string on his finger,) of such stability; (i. e. *of a rock*.) And likewise, I conceive, as an encouragement to him after his fall, that he should recover his former stability again; else it should seem strange that he alone of the *apostles* should have his name from *firmness* and *stability*, who *fell* the soonest, and the foulest of any of the apostles, unless it were κατ' ἀντιφράσιν, "by antiphrase," which would be worse *divinity* than rhetoric. The change then of *St. Peter's* name imports no such universal power, neither from the change, nor from the name. *But why then hath St. Peter the honour to be named first of all the apostles?* First, it seems to be implied as an honour given to *Peter* above the rest. But doth all honour carry a universal power along with it? There may be order certainly among equals; and there may be *first*, *second*, and *third*, &c. where there is no imparity and jurisdiction in the first over all the rest. *Primacy of order* as among equals, I know none will deny *St. Peter*: a *primacy of power* as over inferiors, I know none will grant, but such as have subdued their reason to their passion and interest. Nay, a further order than of mere place may without danger be attributed to him. A *primacy in order of time*, as being of the first called, and it may be the first who adhered to Christ, *in order of age*; of which *Jerome* says, *ætati delatum quia Petrus senior erat*, "It was conferred on age, because Peter was the senior," speaking of *Peter* and *John*; nay yet higher, some *order of dignity* too;<sup>2</sup> in regard of his θερμότης, "warmth," of which the *Greek fathers* speak so much; the fervency and heat of his spirit, whence by *Eusebius*<sup>3</sup> he is called προηγγορος των αποστολων, "the prolocutor among the apostles," who was

<sup>1</sup> Tom. 8, ed. Savil. p. 105.

<sup>2</sup> Lib. 1, 6, Jovin.

<sup>3</sup> Hist. Ecclesiast. lib. 2, c. 14.

therefore most forward to inquire, most ready to answer; which *Chrysostom* elegantly calls *προηγдан*, "a springing before," alluding to the name *κορυφαίος*, "a leader," and *εξαρχος*,<sup>1</sup> "one that commences, that starts," which are frequently given to *Peter* by the fathers, which import no more than *præsultor in chored*, "he that led the dance" among the disciples: but his being *κορυφαίος* implies no superiority of power. For *Dionys. Halicarnass.*<sup>2</sup> calls *Appius Claudius* *τε κορυφαίστατον της δεκαρχίας*, "the chief, (though not in power,) amongst the Decemviri," whereas all know that the *Decemviri* had an equality of power among themselves. Neither doth his being as the mouth of the disciples imply his power; for *Aaron* was a mouth to *Moses*, but *Moses* was *Aaron's* master. Neither yet doth this primacy of order always hold in reference to *Peter*, for although generally he is named first of the apostles, as in *Matthew* x. 2; *Mark* iii. 16; *Acts* i. 13; *Mark* i. 36; *Luke* viii. 45; *Acts* ii. 14—37. Yet in other places of scripture we find other apostles set in order before him, as *James*, *Galut.* ii. 9; *Paul* and *Apollos*, and others, *1 Cor.* iii. 22; *1 Cor.* i. 12—ix. 5. No argument then can be drawn hence, if it would hold but only a primacy of order; and yet even that fails too in the scripture's changing of the order so often. "But, say they, whatever becomes of this order, we have a strong foundation for *St. Peter's* power, because Christ said, he would build his church upon him," *Matth.* xvi. 17. This were something indeed, were it proved; but I fear this *rock* will not hold water, as it is brought by them; nor *St. Peter* prove to be *that rock*. For indeed, was the *church* built upon *St. Peter*? then he must be the chief foundation stone, and *Peter* must build upon himself, and not upon Christ, and all the apostles upon him; and thus in exalting the servant, we depress the master; and in setting a *new foundation*, we take away the *only foundation*, *Jesus Christ*.<sup>3</sup> If by being built upon *Peter*, they mean no more than being built by him as the chief instrument, it is both a very incongruous speech, and implies nothing more than what was common to him and the rest of the apostles, who were all master builders in the church of Christ, as *Paul* calls himself, and in that respect are set forth as the *twelve foundation stones*,<sup>4</sup> in the walls of the *New Jerusalem*.

The *rock* then spoken of by Christ, in his speech to *Peter*,

<sup>1</sup> Chrysost. in *Matth.* vi. 16.

<sup>3</sup> *1 Cor.* iii. 12.

<sup>2</sup> *Hist. Rom. lib.* 11.

<sup>4</sup> *Rev.* xxi. 19.



if taken *doctrinally*, was *St. Peter's* confession, as many of the fathers interpret it; if taken *personally*, it was none other but Christ himself; who used a like speech to this, when he said, "Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up."<sup>1</sup> Which words, though spoken by occasion of the material temple, (as those were of *Peter's* name,) yet Christ understood them of the temple of his body, (as here likewise he doth of his person.) *But still they urge, Christ put the keys into St. Peter's hands, Matthew xvi. 19. Now the power of the keys doth denote regal authority.* I answer, *First*, The keys may be given two ways, either *from a prince to a subject*, or *from a city to a prince*. In this latter acceptation, they denote principality in the receiver, but withal inferiority and subjection in the giver; and in this sense, I am so charitable, as to think they will not say that Christ gave the keys to *Peter*; it must then be as a prince to a subject; and when they are so given, it doth not imply an universal power in the persons to whom they are given, but an investing them in that particular place he hath appointed them to; the office which the power of the keys implies, is *ministerial*, and not *authoritative*; *declarative*, and not *juridical*; *over persons committed to their charge, and not over officers joined in equality of power with them*. For so were the rest of the apostles with *Peter* in the same power of the keys, *Matth. xviii. 18; John xx. 23*. This power of the keys then was given to *Peter* in a *peculiar manner*, but *nothing peculiar* to him given thereby. *But still there remains another ward in St. Peter's keys, and the last foot to the pope's chair, which is pasce oves, "Feed my sheep;" a charge given particularly to Peter, John xxi. 15.* Thence they infer *his power over the whole church*. But this *foot* hath neither *joints* nor *sinews* in it, and is as infirm as any of the rest; for neither did this *command* nor the *commission* belong only to *Peter*; for Christ had before given them all their general commission: "As the Father hath sent me, even so send I you," *John xx. 21*; whereby is implied an investing all the apostles equally, with the power and authority of governing the church of God; although this charge be peculiarly renewed to *Peter*, because as he had particularly fallen, so he should be particularly restored; neither yet did we grant this: doth the word ποιμαίνειν "to pasture, to feed," imply such a *power* and authority as they plead for, viz. a supreme power over the

<sup>1</sup> John ii. 19.

church of God? for this even by *Peter* himself is attributed to the fixed *presbyters* of the *churches*, who by this argument have as much authority conveyed them, as *St. Peter* had, 1 Peter v. 2; and yet should we grant this, it would not infer what they desire; for these *sheep* were not the whole church of Christ, taken *absolutely*, but *indefinitely*. For all the apostles had a command *to preach to every creature*, Matth. xxviii. 18, which was as to the words larger, as to the sense the same with that to *St. Peter* here. And afterwards we find *Peter* called the *apostle of circumcision*,<sup>1</sup> and *the apostles sending him to Samaria*,<sup>2</sup> and *Paul in the right hand of fellowship with Peter*;<sup>3</sup> which had been certainly dishonourable to *Peter*, had he been invested with such an universal supreme power over the apostles and the whole church. Such pretences then as these are for such an extravagant power in the church of God, from such miserably weak foundations, for the upholding a corrupt interest, have given the occasion to that tart sarcasm, *In papatu sub Petro nudo nomine Satan non amplius larva*, "In the papacy, under the mere name of Peter, Satan is not larger than a sprite." But that which would seem sufficient to awaken any out of this dream of *St. Peter's* power over the rest of the apostles, is, the frequent contendings of the twelve apostles, one among another, who should be the greatest;<sup>4</sup> and that even after that Christ had said, "Upon this Rock will I build my church," as we may see *Matthew* xx. 24. If Christ had conferred such a power on *St. Peter*, what little ground had there been for the request of *James* and *John*? and would not our Saviour rather have told them, the chiefest place was conferred on *Peter* already, than have curbed their ambition in seeking who should be greatest; and would have bid them be subject to *Peter* as their head and ruler. We see not then the least foundation for an universal *monarchy* in the church of God; and so this form of government is not determined by any actions or commands of Christ.

§ 7. We come now to consider the pleas of others, who join in renouncing any supreme power under Christ, over the church of God; but differ as to the particular forms of government in the church; those who are for an *inequality*, usually fix on the *impairity between the apostles and the Seventy*; those that are for a *parity*, upon *Matth.* xx. 25, and *Matth.*

<sup>1</sup> Gal. ii. 7.<sup>2</sup> Acts viii. 14.<sup>3</sup> Gal. ii. 9.<sup>4</sup> Mat. xviii. 1; ix. 34. Luke ix. 46.

xviii. 17. I shall here proceed in the former method, to show that none of those can prove the form they contend for as only *necessary*, for their adversaries prove it *unlawful*. First, then, for the inequality between the apostles and the seventy disciples; by that inequality is meant, either only an *inequality of order*; or else, an *inequality carrying superiority and subordination*. It is evident that the *seventy disciples* were not of the same *order* with the *twelve apostles*, whom Christ had designed for the chief government of his church, after his *ascension*; and in this respect the comparison of the *twelve heads of the tribes*, and the *seventy elders*, seems parallel with the *twelve apostles*, and the *seventy disciples*; but if by imparity, be meant, that the twelve apostles had a *superiority of power and jurisdiction* over the seventy disciples, there is not the least evidence or foundation, in reason or scripture for it. For the seventy did not derive their power from the *apostles*; but immediately from *Christ*; they enjoyed the same privileges, were sent upon the same message,<sup>1</sup> (making way for Christ's entertainment in the several cities they went to,) yea, all things were parallel between them and the apostles in their mission, (unless any difference be made in the cities they went to, and their number.) So that there is no superiority of office in the apostles, above the seventy, nor of power and jurisdiction over them; their commissions being the same: and it seems most probable that both their missions were only temporary, and after this the seventy remained in the nature of private disciples, till they were sent abroad by a new commission after the resurrection, for preaching the gospel, and planting churches. For we see that the apostles themselves were only *probationers*, till Christ solemnly authorized them for their *apostolical employment*, *Matth.* xxviii. 18, *John* xx. 21, when their full commissions were granted to them, and then indeed they acted with a *plenitude of power*, as governors of the church, but not before. Nothing can be inferred then for any necessary standing rule for church government, from any comparison between the apostles and the seventy during the life of Christ, because both their missions were temporary and occasional. Only we see, that because Christ did keep up the number of the *twelve* so strictly, that as the *seventy* were a distinct number from them, so when one was dead, another was to be chosen in his stead, (which had been needless, if they had not been a dis-

<sup>1</sup> Luke x. 12.

tinct order and college by themselves,) it is thence evident that the apostolical power was a superior power to any in the church; and that such an inequality in church officers as was between them and particular pastors of churches, is not contrary to what our Saviour saith, when he forbids that dominion and authority in his disciples, which was exercised by the kings of the earth, *Matthew* xx. 25, *Luke* xxii. 25, which places, because they are brought by some to take away all inequality among church officers, I shall so far examine the meaning of them, as they are conceived to have any influence thereupon. *First*, then, I say, that it is not only the *abuse of civil power*, which our Saviour forbids his disciples, but the *exercise of any such power as that is*. And therefore the *papists* are mistaken, when from the words of *Luke*, *vos autem non sic*,<sup>1</sup> they conclude, *all power* is not forbidden, but only *such a tyrannical power*, as is there spoken of. For those words are not a *limitation* and *modification* of the *power* spoken of, but a *total prohibition* of it; for *first*, the comparison is not between the *aposles* and *tyrants*, but between *them* and *princes*, yea such as *Luke* calls *εὐεργεταί*, “benefactors.”<sup>2</sup> Indeed, had Christ said, the kings of the earth abuse their authority; *vos autem non sic*, “but ye shall not do so;” then it would have been only a limitation of the exercise of power; but the mere exercise of civil authority being spoken of before, and then it being subjoined, *but you not so*; it plainly implies a forbidding of the power spoken of, in the persons spoken to. But, *say they*, the words used in *Matthew*, are *κατακυριεύουσιν*, “rule,” and *κατεξουσιάζουσιν*, “exercise authority,” which import the abuse of their power, which is forbidden. But I answer, *first*, in *Luke* it is otherwise; for there it is the simple *κυριεύουσιν*, “to be lord over,” and *εξουσιάζοντες*, “exercise authority,” when it follows, *ὁμοίως δε ουχ ουτως*, “but ye shall not do so.” So that if the abuse be forbidden in one, the use is in the other: but, *secondly*, *κατακυριεύειν*, by the seventy is used frequently for *κυριεύειν*, and *ררה*, “he has the dominion,” is often rendered by that word; as *Psalms* lxxii. 8, “he shall have dominion,” *κατακυριεύσει*; *Psalms* cx. 2, *κατακυριεύει*, “rule thou in the midst of thine enemies;” in both which places, it is spoken of Christ’s kingdom.<sup>3</sup> So in *Genesis* i. 28, *πληρώσατε την γην και κατακυριεύσατε αὐτης*,

<sup>1</sup> The Greek is, *ὁμοίως δε ουχ ουτως*, which the vulgate renders as above. The English version supplying the ellipsis has, But ye shall not be so.

<sup>2</sup> *Luke* xxii. 25.

<sup>3</sup> *Psalms*. lix. *Jer.* iii. *Numb.* xiii. 32.



“replenish the earth, and have dominion over it.” In all which places, it is used simply for dominion, and not for tyrannical power.

It is not then the abuse of civil power, but the use of it, which is here forbidden: which will be more evident *secondly*, from the importance of the phrase *οὐχ οὕτως*, “not so,” which answers to the Hebrew *לֹא כֵן*, and simply denies what went before; as when *Cain* expresseth his fear of being killed, *Genesis* iv. 14. The *Septuagint* render God’s answer by *οὐχ οὕτως*, whereby is not denied, only the manner of his death, to be as *Abel’s* was, but it is simply denied; and so *Psalms* i. 4, the seventy render *לֹא כֵן הַרְשָׁעִים* by *οὐχ οὕτως, οὐ ἀσεβεις οὐχ οὕτως*, “the wicked are not so.” So, when Christ saith, *Matthew* xix. 8, *ἀπ’ ἀρχῆς δεὸς οὕτως γεγενεσθαι*, “from the beginning it was not so;” it imports an absolute denial of giving bills of divorce from the beginning. *Thirdly*, This no ways answers to the scope of the apostles’ contention, which was merely about primacy and power, and not at all about the abuse of this power. So that by this place, all affectation and use of a civil, co-active, external power is forbidden to the officers of the church; the power of the church being only a directive, voluntary power; and is rather a *ministry* than a *power*, as our Saviour expresseth there, *Matthew* xx. 26; *Luke* xxii. 26. But having thus excluded all civil power from the governors of the church, as such: I say, *secondly*, that this place doth no ways imply a prohibition of all inequality among the governors of the church; which is abundantly cleared by this reason, because by the acknowledgement of all parties, the apostles had a superior power over the ordinary pastors of churches. Now if the exercise of all superiority had been forbidden, this must have been forbidden too; as implying plainly an exercise of authority in some over others in the church. And therefore *Musculus* thus explains the place; “But Christ did not require that all in his kingdom should be equal, but that none should desire to be accounted, or appear to be great.”<sup>1</sup> It is not an inequality of order, but ambition, which Christ forbids; and therefore he observes that Christ saith not, Let none be great among you, and none first; which should have been, if all primacy and superiority had been forbidden, and a necessity of an equality among church officers; “but he that will be great

<sup>1</sup> Non exigit hoc Christus ut omnes in regno suo sint æquales, sed nè quispam cupiat magnus et primus haberi et videri.

among you, let him be your minister." Let those that are above others look upon themselves as the servants of others, and not as their masters. For God never bestows any power on any, for the sake of those that have it, but for the sake of those for whom they are employed. When men seek then their own greatness, and not the service of the church, they flatly contradict this precept of Christ, "But with you it shall not be so." But however an inequality of power and order for the church's good is not thereby prohibited: which is sufficient for my purpose.

§ 8. The next place to be considered, is that in *Matthew* xviii. 15, 16, 17. "If thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone; if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it to the church; but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican." It seems a very strange thing to consider, that this one place hath been *pressed* by all parties to *serve* under them, for the maintenance of their own particular form of government: so that, (as the *Jews'* fable of the *manna*,) it hath had a different taste, according to the diversity of the palates of men. Those that are for a *congregational church*, being the first receptacle of church power, set this place in the front of their arguments; those who plead for *standing presbyteries*, *lay elders*, *subordination of courts*, fetch all these out of this place; those that are for a *power of church discipline* to be only lodged in a *higher order of church officers* succeeding the apostles, derive the succession of that power from this place; nay lest *quidlibet* should not be proved *à quodlibet*, "lest anything you like should not be proved from anything you like," the papists despair not of proving the *constant visibility of the church*, the *subordination of all to the pope*, the *infallibility of general councils*, all out of this place. Methinks then it might be argument enough of the incompetency of this place to determine any one particular form, when it is with equal confidence on all sides brought to prove so many; especially if it be made appear that the general rule laid down in these words, may be observed under a diversity of forms of government. For whether by the *church*, we mean the community of the faithful in a particular congregation, or the standing officers of such a church,

or a consistorial court, or synodical assembly, or higher church officers, it is still the duty of men in case of offences, to tell the church for redress of grievances, or vindication of the person himself, that he hath discharged his duty.

This place then determines not what this church is, nor what the form of its government should be, when the sense of it holds good and true under such diversity of forms. But we shall further inquire what influence this place can have upon the modelling the government in the church of God. For *Chamier*<sup>1</sup> tells us, the *prima politix ecclesiasticæ origo*,<sup>2</sup> "the origin of the ecclesiastic polity," is to be found in these words; it will be then worth our inquiry to see what foundation for church government can be drawn out of these words. In which the variety of expositions, (like a multitude of physicians to a distempered patient,) have left it worse than they found it; I mean more difficult and obscure. We shall therefore endeavour to lay aside all preconceptions by other men's judgments and opinions, and see what innate light there is in the text itself to direct us to the full sense and meaning of it. Two things the great difficulty of the place lies in, *What the offences are here spoken of? What the church is which must be spoken to?* For the *First*, I conceive it evident to any unprejudiced mind, that the matter our Saviour speaks of, is a matter of private offence and injury, and not a matter of scandal, as such considered in a church society; which I make appear thus. *First*, From the parallel place to this, *Luke* xvii. 3, "If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him." This can be nothing else but a matter of private injury, because it is in the power of every private person to forgive it; which it was not in his power to do, were it a matter of scandal to the whole church; unless we make it among Christians, (as it was among the Jews,) that every private person might excommunicate another, and to release him afterward. *Secondly*, It manifestly appears from *St. Peter's* words next after this paragraph, *Matth.* xviii. 20, "Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him, till seven times?" &c. Christ answers him, "till seventy times seven," that is, as often as he doth it. And thence Christ brings the parable of the king forgiving his servants, verse 23. *Thirdly*, Were it meant of any scanda-

<sup>1</sup> Tom. 2, l. 10, c. 5, s. 2.

<sup>2</sup> "*Prima origo*" is evidently a pleonasm, and such in the ancient languages often elegantly render the phrase intensive.—*Am. Ed.*

lous sin committed with the privacy of any particular person, (as many understand trespassing *against thee*, that is, *te conscio*, "thee knowing, or conscious of it,") then this inconvenience must necessarily follow, that matters of scandal must be brought to the church's cognizance when there can be no way to decide them; that is, when one offends, and only one person knows it; here will be a single affirmation on one side, and denial on the other side, and so there can be no way to decide it; the matter here spoken of then is somewhat only relating to the offence or injury of some particular person, and not a matter of scandal to the whole church.

The question then as propounded to be spoken to by our Saviour is, "What is to be done in case of private offences between man and man?" and not in case of secret sins against God, and scandalous to the church? Now to this our Saviour lays down his answer gradually: first, there must be *private admonition*; if that succeed not, *admonition before witnesses*; if not that, *telling the church*; if not that either, *reputing him as a heathen and publican*. Now in this answer, we must conceive our Saviour speaks as to an ordinary case, so in a way easy to be understood by all that heard him: and therefore he must speak in allusion to what was at that time among the Jews in such cases, which is freely acknowledged both by *Calvin* and *Beza*<sup>1</sup> upon that place.<sup>2</sup> "For this certainly appears to be said, as if to the Jews; at least from what he adds: let him be to thee as a heathen, and as a Roman tax-gatherer."<sup>3</sup> We must then see what the custom was among the Jews in such cases, and how far our Saviour doth either approve the custom received, or appoint new. The law was very strict in case of offences, "for every man in any wise to rebuke his neighbour, and not to suffer sin upon him,"<sup>4</sup> *Arguendo argues*, "reproving thou shalt reprove;" our old translation renders it, "Thou shalt plainly rebuke thy neighbour." Now this piece of necessary discipline our Saviour endeavours to recover among them, which it seems was grown much out of use with them. For *Rabbi Chanina*, as Mr. *Selden*<sup>5</sup> observes, gave this as one reason of the destruc-

<sup>1</sup> Beza in loc.

<sup>2</sup> Nam certè tanquam de Judæis hæc dici apparet, saltem ex eo quod addit, sit tibi sicut ethnicus et publicanus.

<sup>3</sup> The vulgate translated *τελωνης* by publicanus, hence publican in our version; but in both languages it signified a tax-gatherer; and it is easy to perceive how odious a Roman tax-gatherer must have been to the Jews whilst they had "to pay tribute to Cæsar."—*Am. Ed.*

<sup>4</sup> Lev. x. 17.

<sup>5</sup> De Syned. l. 1, c. 9. In Gemar. Babyl. ad tit. Rhabbath. c. 16, fo. 119.



tion of *Jerusalem*, "because they left off reprov- ing one another:" *Non excisa fuissent Hierosolyma, nisi quoniam alter alterum non coarguebat*, "Jerusalem had not been destroyed, had one not neglected to reprove the other." Our Saviour therefore enforceth this law upon them in case of offences; first, to deal plainly with their neighbour in reprov- ing him: but our Saviour rests not here, but being himself a pattern of meekness and charity, he would not have them to rest in a bare private admonition, but to show their own readiness to be reconciled, and willingness to do good to the soul of the offending party thereby, he adviseth further to take two or three witnesses with them, hoping thereby to work more upon him: but if still he continues refractory, and is not sensible of his miscarriage, *tell it the church*. What the church here is, is the great controversy. Some, as *Beza* and his followers, understand an ecclesiastical *sanhedrim* among the Jews,<sup>1</sup> which had the proper cognizance of ecclesiastical causes; but it will be hard to prove any such *sanhedrim* in use among them; the priests and Levites indeed were very often chosen into the *sanhedrim*,<sup>2</sup> (which it may be is the ground of the mistake, but there was no such *sanhedrim* among them, which did not respect matters criminal and civil. So we must understand what *Josephus*<sup>3</sup> speaks of the priests among the Jews: "The priests were always very studious of the law, and other matters of concernment. These were appointed as the overseers of all things, judges of controversies, and the punishers of condemned persons."<sup>4</sup> Thus we see, he is so far from attributing a distinct ecclesiastical court to them, that he seems to make them the only judges in civil and criminal causes. Others by the *church*, understand the Christian church; but herein they are divided; some understanding by it only the officers of the church: so *Chrysostom*, τοῖς προσεδρενουσι, or "those diligently occupied about any concern or place." *Euthemius ecclesiam nunc vocat præsides sideliū ecclesiæ*, "calls a church, the chief of the faithful of a church." Others understand it not in its representative notion, but in its diffusive capacity, as taking in all the members. But our Saviour speaking to a present case, must be supposed to lay down a present remedy, which could not be, if he gave only

<sup>1</sup> V. Grotium in Matth. v. 12.

<sup>2</sup> Selden de Syned. l. 2, c. 8.

<sup>3</sup> Joseph. l. 2, cont. Appion.

<sup>4</sup> Τουτοις και ην και του νομου και των ἄλλων πιτηδευματων ακρεβης επιμελεια, και γαρ εποπται παντων, και δικασαι των αμφισβητουμενων, και μελασαι των κατεγνωσμενων οι ιερεις εταχθησαν.

rules for governing his church which was not as yet gathered nor formed, there being then no *court ecclesiastical* for them to appeal unto. Suppose then this case to have fallen out immediately after our Saviour's speaking it, that one brother should trespass against another, either then notwithstanding our Saviour's speech, (which speaks to the present time, "go and tell the church,") the offended brother is left without a power of redress; or he must understand it in some sense of the word *church*, which was then in use among the Jews. And these, who tell us, "That unless *ἐκκλησία* be understood for a *church* as we understand it, it would be no easy matter for us now to conceive what the Holy Ghost meant by it,"<sup>1</sup> would do well withal to consider how those to whom Christ spoke should apprehend his meaning if he spoke in a sense they never heard of before. And, certainly, our best way to understand the meaning of scripture is to consider *what, of whom, to whom*, the scripture speaks; for although the scripture, as a rule of faith for us, be supposed to be so written, as to be easily understood by us, yet as the parcels of it were spoken upon several occasions, they must be supposed to be so spoken, as to be apprehended by them to whom they were spoken in the common sense of the words, if nothing peculiar be expressed in the speech, whereby to restrain them to another sense. And therefore the *church* must be understood in the same sense wherein the word *קהל*, "*kahal*, an assembly or congregation," or the *Syriac* answering to it, was apprehended among the Jews in our Saviour's time. Which could not be for any new consistory or *sanhedrim* to be erected under the gospel. Thence others conceiving that Christ did speak according to the custom of the Jews, by the *church*, understand nothing else but the *sanhedrim*, and so make the sense of the words to be this: The case our Saviour speaks to, is that of private quarrels, wherein our Saviour lays down two directions in a way of charity, *private admonition*, and *before witnesses*; but if the party continues refractory, then it may be lawful to summons him before the courts of judicature among them, the *triumvirate*, the *twenty-three*, or the great *sanhedrim*; for although the *Romans* had taken away the power of the Jews in capital matters, yet they allowed them liberty of judging in the case of private quarrels; but if he neglect to hear the *sanhedrim*, then it may be lawful to implead him before the *governor* of the *province* in his court of

<sup>1</sup> Gelespy, Aaron's Rod, l. 3, c. 2, p. 552, l. 2, c. 9, p. 296.

judicature, by which heathens and publicans were to be judged: which is meant by *let him be to thee*, not as a brother Jew, but *as a heathen and a publican*. This exposition is said to be first broached by *Erastus*, but much improved and enlarged by Reverend Bishop *Bilson*,<sup>1</sup> who spends a whole chapter upon it. But this exposition, though it seems fair and plausible, yet there are several things in it which keep me from embracing it; as, *first*, it seems not very probable that our Saviour should send his disciples to whom he speaks, to the Jewish *sanhedrim* for the ending any controversies arising among themselves; knowing how bitter enemies they were to all the followers of Christ. *Secondly*, it seems not very agreeable with the scope of our Saviour's speech, which was to take up differences as much as may be among his disciples, and to make them show all lenity and forbearance towards those that had offended them, and to do good to the souls of those that had injured and provoked them; whereas this command of telling the *sanhedrim*, and impleading offenders before heathen courts, tends apparently to heighten the bitterness and animosities of men's spirits one against another: and lays religion so open to obloquies, which makes *Paul* so severely reprove the "Christians at Corinth for going to law before heathen magistrates;"<sup>2</sup> therefore to say that Christ allows there going to law before heathens, and *Paul* to forbid it, were, instead of finding a way to end the differences among Christians, to make one between *Christ* and *Paul*. *Thirdly*, the thing chiefly aimed at by Christ, is not a man's vindication of himself, or recovering losses by injuries received, but the recovering and *gaining the offending brother*; which evidently appears by what our Saviour adds to the using admonition in private, "if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother." Now *κερδαίνειν*, "to gain," in the New Testament is used for the conversion and turning others from sin. "That I might gain them that are under the law," 1 *Corinth.* ix. 19, 20, &c. So 1 *Peter* iii. 1, explained by *James* v. 20. Our Saviour then speaks not to the manner of proceeding as to civil injuries, which call for *restitution*, but to such as call for *reconciliation*. And so the case I conceive is that of *private differences and quarrels* between men, and not *lawsuits nor civil causes*: I mean such *differences* as respect *persons* and not *things*; for the ending of which our Saviour lays down these rules. And therefore I cannot but wonder to see some

<sup>1</sup> Thes. 412, Perpetual Government, c. 4.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. vi. 6.



men insist so much on that place against such an exposition of *Luke* xii. 14, where Christ saith, "Who made me a judge, and a divider among you?" For doth it any ways follow, because Christ would not take upon him to be a temporal judge among the Jews, therefore he should take no course for the ending differences among his disciples, and the taking away all animosities from among them? Nay, on the contrary, doth not our Saviour very often designedly speak to this very purpose, to root out all bitterness, malice, envy, and rancor from men's spirits, and to persuade them to forgive injuries, even to pray for persecutors, and by any means to be reconciled to their brethren. Which he makes to be a duty of so great necessity, "that if a man had brought his gift to the altar, and remembered his brother had aught against him, he bids him leave his gifts there, and go, be reconciled to his brother, and then offer up his gift."<sup>1</sup> We see hereby how suitable it was to our Saviour's doctrine and design to lay down rules for the ending of any differences arising among his disciples; and this being now cleared to be the state of the case, it will not be difficult to resolve what is meant by *telling the church*. Which I make not to be any *appeal* to a *juridical court*, acting *authoritatively* over the persons brought before it, but the *third* and *highest step of charity* in a man towards a person that hath offended him, viz. that when neither private admonition, nor before two or three witnesses would serve to reclaim the offender, *then to call a select company together*, (which is the natural import of the word *ἐκκλησία*),<sup>2</sup> and before them all to lay open the cause of the breach and difference between them, and to refer it to their arbitration to compose and end it. Which sense of the place, I humbly conceive to have the least violence in it, and in every part of it to be most genuine and natural, and fully agreeable to the received practice among the Jews: which the author of the book *Musar*,<sup>3</sup> cited by *Drusius*, fully acquaints us with, whose words I shall transcribe, as being a plain paraphrase on these of our Saviour. "He who reproves his fellow, should do it, at first calmly, with gentle words, between himself and him alone, so that he expose him not to shame. If he repent, it is well; otherwise he should between themselves, keenly reprove, and make him ashamed. If he have

<sup>1</sup> Matth. v. 23, 24.

<sup>2</sup> From *ἐκ καλεῖν*, to call out of; therefore *ἐκκλησία*, which we translate *church*, is a company called out of the world.

<sup>3</sup> *Præterit.* lib. 1, p. 43.



no remorse, he should call his fellows, and put him to the blush before them. But in the event that nothing avails, he must expose him before many, and publish his fault. For certainly hypocrites should be unmasked.”<sup>1</sup> That which this author calls *pudescere eum coram multis*, “to put him to shame before many,” is that which our Saviour means when he bids him *tell the church*, or the *congregation*, as our old translation renders it. This the Jews called reproving of men, *ברבים*, before “a multitude,” as the *Vulg. Latin* though falsely renders that place, *Leviticus* xix. 17, *publice argue eum*, “publicly reprove him:” and to this the apostle may allude when he speaks of the *ἡ ἐπιτιμία ἡ πρὸς τῶν πλειονων*, *2 Corinth.* ii. 6, “*censure of many*,” and the reproof *ἐνώπιον παντῶν*, “*before all*,” *1 Tim.* v. 20, which was to be in matters of public scandal *upon religion*, before the *ברבים*, “wild beasts,” *i. e.* barbarians, or *שׂוֹמְרִים*, “robbers,” as the Jews call them; but in case the offender should still *παράκουσεν*, “refuse to hear,” or *slight this overture of reconciliation*, before the company selected for hearing the case; then saith our Saviour, look upon him as an obstinate refractory creature, and have no more to do with him, than with a *heathen* and a *publican*; by which terms the most wilful obstinate sinners were set out among the Jews, and by which our Saviour means a man’s withdrawing himself, as much as in him lies, from all familiar society with such a person. And thus saith Christ, “whatsoever you bind on earth shall be bound in Heaven, and whatsoever you loose on earth shall be loosed in Heaven,”<sup>2</sup> that is, if after all your endeavours of reconciliation, the offender will hearken to no agreement, it is an evidence and token that man’s sin is bound upon him, (that is, *shall not be pardoned* so long as he continues impenitent,) but if he repent of his offence, and you be reconciled, as the offence is removed on earth thereby, so the sin is *loosed in Heaven*, that is, *forgiven*.<sup>3</sup> The guilt of sin that *binds*, it being an obligation to punishment; and so the pardon of sin that *looseth*, as it cancels that obligation. And so *Grotius* observes, that *δεῖν*, “to bind,” is the same with *κρατεῖν*, “to hold,” and *λῦειν*, “to loose,” with

<sup>1</sup> Qui arguit socium suum, debet primum hoc facere placide inter se, et ipsum solum, verbis mollibus, ita ut non pudefaciat eum. Si respiscit, bene est; sin, debet cum acriter arguere et pudefacere inter se et ipsum. Si non respiscit, debet adhibere socios, ipsumque coram illis pudore afficere; si nec modo quicquam proficit, debet eum pudefacere coram multis, ejusque delictum publicare. Nam certe detegendi sunt hypocritæ.

<sup>2</sup> Matth. xviii. 18.

<sup>3</sup> V. Rainold’s Conf. with Hart. cap. 2, div. 3, Grot. in Mat. 16.

ἀφίεσθαι, "to release from punishment," what is called *retaining* in one place, is *binding* in another: and what is *loosing* in one place, is *remitting* in the other. But now although I assert this to be the true, proper, genuine meaning of this difficult place, yet I deny not but that this place hath influence upon church government; but I say the influence it hath, is only by way of accommodation, and by analogy deduced from it. According to which, these things I conceive have foundation in these words: *First, gradual appeals* from the method here laid down by our Saviour. *Secondly, church censures*, and the duty of submitting to church authority; for although before any church power was actually set up, (as when our Saviour spake these words then there was none,) yet after that church government was fixed and set up, it must in reason be supposed that all matters of the nature of scandals to the church must be decided here. *Thirdly, the lawfulness of the use of excommunication* in Christian churches; for if every particular person might withdraw from the society of such a one as continues refractory in his offences, then much more may a whole society, and the officers of it declare such a one to be avoided both in religious and familiar civil society, which is the formal nature of excommunication. Herein we see the wisdom of our Saviour, who in speaking to a particular case, hath laid down such general rules as are of perpetual use in the church of God for accommodating differences arising therein. Thus have we hitherto cleared that our Saviour hath determined no more of church government than what is applicable to a diversity of particular forms, and so hath not by any law or practice of his own determined the necessity of any one form.

## CHAPTER VI.

The next thing pleaded for determining the form of government, is apostolical practice; two things inquired into concerning that, What it was? How far it binds? The apostles invested with the power and authority of governing the whole church of Christ by their commission, *Jo.* xx. 21; *Matth.* xxviii. 18. What the apostles did in order to the church government before Pentecost, *κληρος αποστολης, τοπος ιδιος* explained. How the apostles did divide provinces; whether *Paul* and *Peter* were confined to the circumcision and uncircumcision, and different churches erected by them in the same cities? What the apostles did in order to settling particular churches? The names and offices of bishops, presbyters, deacons, considered. Four general considerations laid down about the apostles' practice. First, It cannot be fully known what it was. Second, Great probability, they observe no one certain form in settling churches; proved from *Epiphanius*, *Jerome*, *Ambrose* or *Hilary*. Third, Their case different from ours in regard of the paucity of believers. Fourth, If granted for any form, yet proves not the thing in question. For, 1, Offices appointed by them are ceased. Widows, deaconesses abolished. 2, Rites and customs apostolical grown out of use. 1, Such as were founded upon apostolical precepts, *Acts* xv. 29, considered. 2, Such as were grounded on their practice, holy kiss, love feasts, dipping in baptism, community of goods, with several others.

§ 1. HAVING found nothing, either in our Saviour's practice, or in the rules laid down by him, (conceived to respect church government,) which determines any necessity of one particular form; the only argument remaining which can be conceived of sufficient strength to found the necessity of any one form of government, is *the practice of the apostles*, who were by their employment and commission entrusted with the government of the church of God. For our Saviour after his resurrection taking care for the planting and governing of his church after his ascension to glory, doth at two several times call his apostles together, and gives now their full *charter* and commission to them; *the first*, containing chiefly the power itself conferred upon them, *John* xx. 21. The other, the extent of that power, *Matth.* xxviii. 19. In the former

our Saviour tells them, *As the father had sent him, so did he send them.* Which we must not understand of a parity and equality of power, but in a similitude of the mission: that as Christ before had managed the great affairs of his church in his own person, so now, (having according to the prophecies made of him at the *end of seventy weeks*, "made reconciliation for iniquity by his death, and brought in everlasting righteousness by his resurrection,) he despatcheth abroad his gospel heralds to proclaim the *jubilee*<sup>1</sup> now begun, and the *act of indemnity* now past upon all penitent offenders, which is the sense of the other part of their commission: "Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained," *John* xx. 23; i. e. as many as upon the preaching the gospel by you, shall come in and yield up themselves to the tenders of grace proclaimed therein, shall have their former rebellions pardoned; but such as will still continue obstinate, their former guilt shall still continue to bind them over to deserved punishment. And to the end the *apostles* might have some evidence of the power thus conferred upon them, "He breathes the Holy Ghost on them, and said, receive ye the Holy Ghost;"<sup>2</sup> which we are not to understand of the extraordinary gifts of the *Holy Ghost*, which were not received till the day of *Pentecost*, *Act.* ii. 1; but of the *authoritative power* of preaching the gospel, which was now conferred upon them, by the solemn rite of breathing the Holy Ghost on the apostles. In which sense the *church of England* understands that expression in the ordination of ministers, as it implies only the conferring thereby an authority for the preaching of the gospel, which being conveyed by ordination,<sup>3</sup> is fitly expressed by the same words which our Saviour used in the conferring the same power upon his apostles at his sending them forth to be gospel preachers.

After this comes the solemn appointed meeting of Christ with his disciples at the mountain of *Galilee*,<sup>4</sup> (where in probability, besides the eleven, were present the five hundred brethren at once.<sup>5</sup>) And here Christ more solemnly inaugurates the apostles in their office, declaring all power to be in his hands; and therefore appoints the apostles "to preach the gospel to every creature,"<sup>6</sup> that is, to all men indefinitely, Gentiles as well as Jews, which *Matthew*<sup>7</sup> fully expresseth by

<sup>1</sup> Dan. ix. 24, with Rom. iv. 15.

<sup>3</sup> Capiendum cum grano salis.

<sup>5</sup> 1 Cor. xv. 6.

<sup>7</sup> Mat. xviii. 19.

<sup>2</sup> John xx. 12.

<sup>4</sup> Mat. xxviii. 13.

<sup>6</sup> Mark xvi. 15.



all *nations*. Now are the apostles left as chief governors of the church under Christ; and in this last commission wherein the extent of the apostles' power is more fully expressed, there is nothing mentioned of any order for the government of the church under them, nor what course should be taken by the church after their decease. All that remains then to be inquired into, is what the apostles' practice was, and how far they acted for the determining any one form of government as necessary for the church.

The apostles being thus invested in their authority, we proceed to consider the exercise of this authority for the governing of the church. And here we are to consider, that the apostles did not presently upon their last commission from Christ go forth abroad in the world to preach, but were commanded by Christ to go first to *Jerusalem*, and there to expect the coming of the Holy Ghost according to our Saviour's own appointment, *Luke* xxiv. 49. And therefore what *Mark* adds, *Mark* xvi. 20, that after Christ's appearance to them, "the apostles went abroad and preached everywhere, working miracles," must either be understood of what they did only in their way returning from *Galilee* to *Jerusalem*, or else more probably of what they did indefinitely afterwards. For presently after we find them met together at *Jerusalem*, whence they came from Mount *Olivet* where Christ's ascension was. Here we find them employed ἐν τῷ ἱερῷ, "in a sacred place,"<sup>1</sup> saith Saint *Luke* in his gospel, which we render the *temple*; but I understand it rather as referring to the action than the place, and is best explained by what *Luke* saith in *Acts* i. 14, they were προσκαρτεροῦντες τῇ προσευχῇ καὶ τῇ δεήσει, "continuing in prayer and supplication." And that it cannot be meant of the temple, appears by the mention of the ὑπερῶν, "an upper room,"<sup>2</sup> where they continued together. For that it should be meant of any of the ὑπερῶα about the temple, is most improbable to conceive, because not only those ninety *cells* about the temple were destined and appointed for the priests in their several ἡμέραι, or times of ministration;<sup>3</sup> and it is most unlikely the chief priests and masters of the temple should suffer those whom they hated so much to continue so near them without any molestation or disturbance. While the apostles continue here

<sup>1</sup> *Luke* xxiv. 52; *Acts* i. 12; *Luke* xxiv. 53.

<sup>2</sup> *Acts* i. 13.

<sup>3</sup> V. L. Empor. in Cod. Middoth. c. 4, sect. 5.

they proceed to the choice of a new apostle instead of *Judas*, thereby making it appear how necessary that number was to the first forming of churches, when the vacant place must be supplied with so great solemnity. Which office of apostleship, (which *Judas* once had, and *Matthias* was now chosen into,) is called by *Peter* κληρος διακονίας και ἀποστολῆς, “the portion, or lot, of the ministry and apostleship,” *Acts* i. 25, which a learned interpreter renders, *the portion of his apostleship*,<sup>1</sup> or the *province* which fell to *Judas*, or his lot in the distribution among the apostles, which, saith he, is called ὁ τοπος ὁ ἰδιος, “his proper place,” into which *Matthias* did πορευθῆναι, “go, and from which *Judas* fell by his sin.” This exposition is very often suggested by that learned author: but, (with all due reverence to his name and memory,) I cannot see any such evidence either from scripture or reason, to enforce any such exposition of either phrase, yielding us sufficient ground to forsake the received sense of both of them. For κληρος ἀποστολῆς is plainly nothing else but “that office of the apostleship” which belonged to *Judas*, without any relation to a *province*; and ὁ τοπος ὁ ἰδιος, is that proper place which belonged to *Judas*, as he is called υἱὸς ἀπωλείας, “the son of perdition,” and no other. But the very foundation of this mistake, is, that the several *provinces*, into which the apostles were to go for preaching the gospel, were distributed among them before they were filled with the *Holy Ghost*, which is an *hypothesis* that will not easily be granted by any that do but impartially consider these things. That if the *provinces* were so distributed among them, it must be either before the death of Christ, or after; and it must be before, if *Judas* had a peculiar province assigned to him, which this exposition necessarily implies; but how *provinces* could be divided among them before they had their commission given them to preach to all nations, is somewhat hard to understand. It must be then immediately after Christ had bid them preach to every creature, that they thus distributed the *provinces* among them; but several things make this very improbable. *First*, The gross mistake of the apostles concerning the very nature of Christ’s kingdom, as we read in *Acts* i. 6, when they jointly asked Christ, “Lord, wilt thou at this time restore the kingdom to Israel?” They dreamed still of a temporal kingdom, according to the common opinion of the Jews; and, is it probable they should distribute

<sup>1</sup> Annot. in loc. Dissert. 3, c. 4. Schism. c. 4, sect. 13. Answ. to the Cath. c. 4, s. 2. Schism disarmed, Ans. c. 3, s. 4.

among themselves the several *provinces* for preaching the gospel, who thought that Christ's kingdom would have been established by other means than going up and down the world? They looked that Christ himself should do it by his own power, "Wilt thou at this time," &c. and did not think it must be done by their means; much less by their singly going into such vast parts of the world, as the twelve divisions of the world would be. *Secondly*, It appears very improbable any such division of *provinces* should be made then, when they were commanded to stay at *Jerusalem*, and not to stir thence till the promise of the spirit was fulfilled upon them. "Tarry ye in the city of *Jerusalem* till ye be endued with power from on high," *Luke* xxiv. 49. "And being assembled together with them, he commanded them not to depart from *Jerusalem*, but wait for the promise of the Father," *Acts* i. 4. Is it likely, when the apostles were thus straightly charged not to leave *Jerusalem*, till they were endued with the power of the Holy Ghost, they should contrive the dispersing themselves abroad all over the world? especially when Christ told them that it should be after the coming of the Spirit that they should go abroad, *Acts* i. 8, and that the Spirit should fit them for their work, (*John* xv. 26, 27; *John* xvi. 13,) "by teaching them, and testifying of Christ." *Thirdly*, If such a distribution of *provinces* had been made so early among the apostles, how comes it to pass, that after they were endued with the Holy Ghost, they did not every one betake himself to his several *province*? there could have been then no plea nor excuse made for their stay any longer at *Jerusalem* after the promise of the Spirit was fulfilled upon them. And yet after the persecution raised at *Jerusalem*, when most of the church were dispersed abroad, we find the apostles remaining still at *Jerusalem*, *Acts* viii. 1, 14. Would they have been so long absent from their charge, if any such distribution had been made among themselves? *Fourthly*, The apostles' occasional going to places as they did, argues there was such set division of *provinces* among them. The first departure of any of the apostles from *Jerusalem* was that of *Peter* and *John*, who were sent by common order of the apostles to *Samaria*, after they heard that by *Philip's* preaching they had received the word of God.<sup>1</sup> Not the least mention of any peculiar *province* of theirs which they were sent to. So *Peter's* going from Joppa to

<sup>1</sup> *Acts* viii. 14.

Cæsarea, was occasioned by *Cornelius's* sending for him.<sup>1</sup> *Fifthly*, That *provinces* were not divided, appears, the frequent mention of many of the apostles being together in one place: first the whole twelve at Jerusalem, after that *Peter* and *John* together at Samaria; about four years after *Paul's* conversion we meet with *James* and *Peter* together at Jerusalem; fourteen years after this, we find *James*, *Peter* and *John* there.<sup>2</sup> Is it any ways probable, if all these had their distinct *provinces* assigned them, that they should be so often found together at Jerusalem, which certainly must belong but to the province of one of them? *Sixthly*, It seems evident that they divided not the world into provinces among them, because it was so long before they thought it to be their duty to preach unto the Gentiles; *Peter* must have a vision first before he will go to *Cornelius*,<sup>3</sup> and as yet we see they retained that persuasion, "that it is unlawful for a Jew to keep company, or come unto one that is of another nation," *Acts* x. 28. Nay, more than this, *Peter* is accused for this very action before the apostles at Jerusalem, *Acts* xi. 2, 3, and they laid this as the ground of their quarrel, that he went unto men uncircumcised, and did eat with them; how this is reconcilable with the whole world's being divided into *provinces* so early among the apostles, is not easy to conceive: unless some of them thought it unlawful to go to their own *provinces*, most of which certainly must have been of the Gentiles. *Seventhly*, Another evidence that *provinces* were not divided so soon, is, that *Peter's* province so much spoken of, "That of the circumcision," fell not to his share, till nearly twenty years after the time we now speak of, on the agreement between *Paul* and *Peter* at Jerusalem. If provinces had been so soon divided, how happened it that the apostleship of the circumcision is now at last attributed to *Peter*?<sup>4</sup> Was it not known what *Peter's* province was before this time? and if it was, how came *Paul* and he now to agree about dividing their provinces? Nay further: *eighthly*, these provinces after all this time were not so divided, as to exclude one from another's province, which was requisite for a distribution of them, much less were they so at first; for as to this division of the Jews and Gentiles between *Paul* and *Peter*, it cannot be understood *exclusively*

<sup>1</sup> Acts x. 5, 32.<sup>2</sup> Gal. i. 18, 19; ii. 1, 9.<sup>3</sup> Acts x. 11.<sup>4</sup> Gal. ii. 7, 8, 9. Answ. to Cathol. Gentl. chap. 4, s. 3, numb. 7.



of others; for, what work then had the rest of the apostles to do? Neither taking them distributively, was *Paul* excluded from preaching to the Jews, or *Peter* to the Gentiles. We see *Paul* was at first chosen "to be a vessel to bear Christ's name before the Gentiles and kings, and the children of Israel."<sup>1</sup> We see hereby he was appointed an apostle as well to Jews as Gentiles: and accordingly we find him presently "preaching Christ in the synagogues, and confounding the Jews."<sup>2</sup> So in all places where *Paul* came, he first preached to the Jews in the synagogues, and when they would not hearken to him, then he turned to the Gentiles.<sup>3</sup> Neither was this done only before the apostles' meeting at Jerusalem, supposed to be that spoken of *Acts* xv. but afterwards at Ephesus, we find him entering into the synagogues there, and preaching to the Jews.<sup>4</sup> So likewise he did at Corinth, *Acts* xviii. 4. "And he reasoned in the synagogue every sabbath, and persuaded the Jews and the Greeks."<sup>5</sup> We then see that *Paul* thought not himself excluded from preaching to the Jews, because they were of St. *Peter's* province. Neither did *Peter* think himself excluded from the Gentiles; he was the first that opened the door of faith to them by preaching to them;<sup>6</sup> in which respect it is not altogether improbably conceived by some, that the power of the keys was peculiarly given to him.<sup>7</sup> And afterwards in the open council at Jerusalem, he owns himself as the apostle to the Gentiles: "God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the gospel and believe."<sup>8</sup> 'This then evidently destroys any such early distinction of provinces; when *Peter's* province seemed most express in scripture, viz. the *circumcision*, yet we find him acting as an apostle to the Gentiles too. I deny not but at the meeting of *Paul* and *Peter* at Jerusalem, when they observed how God did bless the one most in the circumcision, the other in the uncircumcision, there was an agreement between them, for the one to lay out his work chiefly upon the Jews, and the other upon the Gentiles; and in probability where they met in any city, the one gathered a church of the Jews, and the other of the Gentiles; but this makes no such distinction of provinces, as to exclude the one from the other's charge: and further, this agreement between *Paul* and *Peter* then after both had preached so

<sup>1</sup> Acts ix. 15.<sup>3</sup> Acts xiii. 5, 14.<sup>5</sup> Acts xviii. 19.<sup>7</sup> Matth. xvi. 19.<sup>2</sup> Acts ix. 20, 22.<sup>4</sup> Acts. xix. 8.<sup>6</sup> Acts x. 28.<sup>8</sup> Acts xv. 7.

many years, makes it fully clear that the pretended division of provinces so early among the apostles, is only the wind-egg of a working fancy, that wants a shell of reason to cover it. As for the division of provinces mentioned in ecclesiastical writers, though as to some few they generally agree; as that *Thomas* went to Parthia, *Andrew* to Scythia, *John* to the less Asia, &c.<sup>1</sup> yet as to the most they are at a loss where to find their provinces, and contradict one another in reference to them; and many of them seem to have their first original from the fable of *Dorotheus*, *Nicephorus*, and such writers.

§ 3. Having showed that the apostles observed no set order for distributing *provinces*, we come to show what course they took for the settling of churches in the places they went to. In the clearing of which, nothing is more necessary than to free our judgments of those prejudices and prepossessions, which the practice either of the former ages of the church, or our own have caused within us. For it is easy to observe, that nothing hath been a more fruitful mother of mistakes and errors, than the looking upon the practice of the primitive church through the glass of our own customs; especially when under the same name, (as it is very often seen,) something far different from what was primarily intended by the use of the word, is set forth to us. It were no difficult task to multiply examples in this kind, wherein men meeting with the same names, do apprehend the same things by them, which they now through custom signify, without taking notice of any alteration in the things themselves signified by those names. Thus since the name *missa* was appropriated by the *papists* to that which they call the sacrifice of the altar, wherever they meet among ancient writers with that name, they presently conceive the same thing was understood by it then. Whereas it was then only taken for the public service of the church,<sup>2</sup> so called from the dismissal of the people after it, with an *Ite, missa est*;<sup>3</sup> and from the different forms of Christians, they had two several services, the one called *Missa catechumenorum*, because at the end of that the *catechumens* were dismissed from the assembly; the other *Missa fidelium*, at which they received the Lord's supper; which afterwards, (the former discipline of the church decay-

<sup>1</sup> Euseb. lib. 3, cap. 1.

<sup>2</sup> V. Picherellum de Missa, cap. 1. Casaub. Exercit. 16, sect. 58.

<sup>3</sup> Doubtless, an abbreviation of, *Ite, ecclesia, missa est*; "go, the congregation is dismissed."

ing,) engrossed the name *Missa* to itself; and when the sacrifice of the altar came up among the papists, it was appropriated to that. For though they innovated things ever so much, yet it hath been always the policy of that church not to innovate names, that so the incautious might be better deceived with a pretence of antiquity; and thus under the anciently simple name of *Missa*, lies at this day couched a mass of errors. So after the word λειτουργειν "to perform the functions of a public office, to minister," was applied by them to that sacrifice, wherever they meet that word in scripture, they interpret it in that sense; and hence when we only read of the teachers at *Antioch*, λειτουργουντων αυτων, "as they ministered," no other rendering of the words will be taken but *sacrificantibus illis*, "as they sacrificed,"<sup>1</sup> although it be not only contrary to the sense of the word in the New Testament, but to the exposition of *Chrysostom*, *Theophylact*, and *Oecumenius*, who expound it by κηρυττοντων, "they invoking." Thus when public liturgies were grown into use in the church after the decay of the gifts of the first primitive church, *Eusebius* barely calling *St. James* λειτουργος, "a minister," (though he relates only to his *ministry* in the church of Jerusalem,) is enough to entitle him to be father to a *liturgy*, which soon crept forth under his name: by an argument much of the same strength with that which some have brought for reading homilies, because it is said of *St. Paul*, Acts xx. 11, ἐμίλησας αχρὶς αὔρης, "discoursed until day-break." Of the same stamp is *Bellarmino's* argument for invocation of saints, because of *Jacob's* saying, *Invocetur super eos nomen meum*, "the Vulgate's version for Gen. xlviii. 16, let my name be named on them." But we need not go far for examples of this kind. The business we are upon, will acquaint us with some of them. As the argument for popular election of pastors, from the grammatical sense of the word χειροτονια, "voting by a show of hands," for lay elders from the name πρεσβυτεροι, "elders, recently presbyters," and modern episcopacy from the use of the word ἐπισκοπος, "an overseer," in the scriptures, but in modern times a bishop. Names and things must then be accurately distinguished, and the sense of the names must neither be fetched from the custom now used, nor from the etymology of the word, but from the undoubted practice of apostolical times, if that can be made appear what it was. Which will be best done, if we can once find out what course

<sup>1</sup> Acts xiii. 2.

and order the apostles took in the forming and modeling the churches by them planted.

§ 4. That which we lay then as a foundation, whereby to clear what apostolical practice was, is, that the apostles in forming churches did observe the customs of the Jewish synagogues. "The whole government of the churches of Christ was conformed to the pattern of the synagogues,"<sup>1</sup> saith *Grotius* truly. "It is evident that the governors and overseers of the churches were constituted, according to the likeness of the elders of the Jewish synagogues,"<sup>2</sup> as *Salmasius* often affirms. In which sense we understand that famous speech of the author of the commentary on *St. Paul's* epistles, which goes under the name of *Ambrose*,<sup>3</sup> but now judged by most to be done by *Hilary*, a deacon of the church of *Rome*, under which name *St. Augustine* quotes some words on the fifth to the *Romans*, which are found still in those commentaries. "For certainly, amongst all nations age is accounted honourable. Hence, both the synagogue and afterwards the church had elders, without whose advice, nothing in the church was done,"<sup>4</sup> which words are not to be understood of a distinct sort of presbyters from such as were employed in preaching the word, but of such presbyters as were the common council of the church, for the moderating and ruling the affairs of it; which the church of Christ had constituted among them, as the Jewish synagogue had before. And from hence we observe that the *Ebionites*, who blended Judaism and Christianity together, (whence *Jerome* saith of them, "whilst they desire to be both Jews and Christians, they are neither Jews nor Christians,"<sup>5</sup>) made a *linsey-woolsey* religion, which was neither *Judaism* nor *Christianity*.<sup>6</sup> These, as *Epiphanius* tells us, called their public meeting place συναγωγή, "the synagogue," and the pastors of their churches Ἀρχισυναγωγους, "rulers of the synagogue." Thereby implying the resemblance and analogy between the form of government in both

<sup>1</sup> Totum regimen ecclesiarum Christi conformatum fuit ad synagogarum exemplar.—V. Bezam. in Acts xiii. 15; in Acts xi. 30; vi. 3; xiv. 12; xx. 28.

<sup>2</sup> Præsides et curatores ecclesiarum ad instar presbyterorum synagogæ judaicæ constitutos fuisse constat.—Apparat. ad lib. de Prim. Papæ, p. 151, 220.

<sup>3</sup> In 1 Tim. v. 1, v. etiam in 1 Cor. xii. 28.

<sup>4</sup> Nam apud omnes utique gentes honorabilis est senectus, unde et synagoga et postea ecclesia seniores habuit, sine quorum consilio nihil agebatur in ecclesiâ.—Aug. lib. 4, ad Bonif. cap. 4.

<sup>5</sup> Dum volent et Judæi esse et Christiani, nec Judæi sunt nec Christiani.—Ep. ad. Aug.

<sup>6</sup> C. Ebion.



of them. But this will best be made appear by comparing them both together. For which we are to take notice, how much our Saviour in the New Testament did delight to take up the received practices among the Jews only, with such alterations of them as were suitable to the nature and doctrine of Christianity, as hath been abundantly manifested by many learned men, about the rites of the Lord's supper, taken from the *post cœnam*, "after the supper," among the Jews;<sup>1</sup> the use of baptism, from the baptism used in initiating proselytes; excommunication from their putting out of the synagogue. As to which things it may be observed, that those rites which our Saviour transplanted into the gospel soil, were not such as were originally founded on *Moses's* law, but were introduced by a confederate discipline among themselves. And thus it was in reference to the government of the synagogues among them; for although the reason of erecting them was grounded on a command in the Levitical law, Levit. xxiii. 3, where holy convocations are required upon the sabbath days; yet the building of synagogues in the land, was not, as far as we can find, till a great while after. For although *Moses* required the duty of assembling, yet he prescribes no orders for the place of meeting, nor for the manner of spending those days in God's service, nor for the persons who were to superintend the public worship performed at that time. These being duties of a moral nature, are left more undetermined by *Moses's* law, which is most punctual in the ceremonial part of divine service. And therefore even then when God did determine the positives of worship, we see how much he left the performance of morals to the wisdom and discretion of God's people, to order them in a way agreeable to the mind and will of God. We shall not here discourse of the more elder customs and observations of the synagogues, but take the draught of them by the best light we can about our Saviour's time, when the apostles copied out the government of Christian churches by them.

About the time of Christ, we find synagogues in very great request among the Jews; God so disposing it, that the moral part of his service should be more frequented now the ceremonial was expiring; and by those places so erected, it might be more facile and easy for the apostles to disperse the gospel by preaching it in those places, to which it was the custom for

<sup>1</sup> V. Scaliger. de Emend. temp. l. 6, et Lud. Capelli vind. c. Buxtorsii diss. Selden Com. in Eutychium, p. 25.

the people to resort. And as *Paul* at *Athens* observing the altar inscribed *Αγνώστῳ Θεῷ*, "To the unknown God," takes his text from thence, and begins to preach God and Christ to them;<sup>1</sup> so the apostles in every synagogue meet with a copy of the law, from whence they might better take their rise to discover him "who was the end of the law for righteousness to all that believe." "For Moses of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath day."<sup>2</sup> It was their constant custom then every sabbath day to have the law publicly read; for which every synagogue was furnished with a most exact copy; which was looked upon as the great treasure and glory of their synagogue;<sup>3</sup> in the copying out of which, the greatest care and diligence was used. In their synagogues they read only the law and the prophets, the כְּתוּבִים, "emphatically the writings," or *Hagiographa*, "the holy writings,"<sup>4</sup> were not ordinarily read in public; the law, for the more convenient reading it, was distributed into fifty-four פְּרָשִׁיּוֹת, "sections," every week one section being read, (joining twice two less sections together,) the whole law was read through twice every year.

But here I cannot say that the Jews were absolutely bound to read the several sections appointed for the days, as it is commonly thought (from which *paraschæ*, "sections," and the times prefixed of reading them, *Cloppenburgh*<sup>5</sup> fetched a new interpretation of the Σαββατον δευτεροπρωτον,<sup>6</sup> which is, that the first *sabbath* was that of the civil year which began with the section בְּרֵאשִׁית<sup>7</sup> upon the twenty-fourth of the month *Tisri*; but the *second sabbath after the first*, was the first sabbath of the sacred year, which began with הָרֵשׁ, from חֹרֶשׁ, "keep silence," the section on the calends of *Nisan*;) but I do not see any such evidence of so exact and curious a division of the several sections, so long since as the time of our Saviour,<sup>8</sup> which appears by our Saviour's reading in the *synagogue* at *Nazareth*, where it seems he read after the *synagogue* custom, as one of the seven called out by the חֹזֵן, "seer," to read before the people, but we find no section assigned him by

<sup>1</sup> Acts xvii. 23.

<sup>2</sup> Acts xv. 21.

<sup>3</sup> V. Buxtorf. *Synag. Jud.* c. 9, p. 216.

<sup>4</sup> V. Lud. de Dieu in Acts xiii. 15.

<sup>5</sup> V. Cloppenb. tract. de Sabb. deuteroprototo and Lud. Capelli ep. ad Clopp. p. 74, eum resp. Clopp. p. 143.

<sup>6</sup> The Sabbath which follows a great festival.

<sup>7</sup> Berasheeth, the first word of the Hebrew Bible, (in the beginning,) and the first word of the section.

<sup>8</sup> Luke iv. 17.

him that delivered the book to him (the office of the כֹּהֵן, "president,") but it is said of him ἀναπλῆξας το βιβλίον εὗρε τον τοπον, "when he had unfolded the book he found out that place" in *Isaiah*. So that then it seems there was no such precise observation of the several sections to be read. And our Saviour's reading the book of the prophets in the synagogue, puts us in mind of the הפטרות, "the sections of the prophets," answerable to those of the law; which *Elias Levita*<sup>1</sup> tells us came up after the time of *Antiochus Epiphanes*, who so severely prohibited the Jews the reading of their law, but from that time hath been observed ever since: of which we read in *Paul's* sermon at *Antioch* in *Pisidia* speaking of Christ: "For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor the voices of the prophets which are read every sabbath day."<sup>2</sup> *Benjamin Tudelensis*<sup>3</sup> in his *Itinerary*, tells us, that the same custom was not observed among all the Jews for the reading the sections of the law. For in *Mitsraim*<sup>4</sup> (which he there takes not for *Egypt* itself, as it is commonly taken, but for *Grand Cairo*), where there were near two thousand Jews, there were two *synagogues*, the one of *Syrian*, the other of *Babylonian Jews*. The latter read over every week an entire section of the law, (as the Jews in *Spain* in his time did,) and so finished the law in a year's space. The *Syrian* Jews, or those that were born in *Judea*, divided every section into three parts, and read not the law through, but in three years' time. These *synagogues* were very much multiplied, both in *Jerusalem* and elsewhere, about the time of our Saviour's being in the world. When the common tradition of the Jews is, that in *Jerusalem*<sup>5</sup> itself, there were four hundred and eighty-one *synagogues*, which they ridiculously observe by their *Gemetry*,<sup>6</sup> from the word טמאת, "it was full," used *Isa.* i. 21, whose numeral letters being put together, amount to that number; but a clearer evidence of the multitude of *synagogues*<sup>7</sup> is our *Saviour's* so often appearing in them; and so likewise the apostles<sup>8</sup> when they went abroad to preach the gospel, we find in most places that they first entered into the *synagogues* which were, by the liberty given to the Jews, allowed them in all the cities where they

<sup>1</sup> Ia. Thisbi v. פטרי

<sup>2</sup> Acts xiii. 27.

<sup>4</sup> V. L'Emper. in Not. p. 220.

<sup>6</sup> Rabb prior. cap. 32.

<sup>7</sup> Matth. iv. 9; Mark i. 23; Luke iv. 17. John vi. 59, xviii. 20.

<sup>8</sup> Acts xiii. 14, xiv. 1, xvii. 10, xviii. 4, xix. 8.

<sup>3</sup> Itiner. p. 114, ed. L'Emper.

<sup>5</sup> V. Serrarium.

inhabited, by the *Roman* governors. And so in all their dispersions both in *Babylon*, *Egypt*, and the *Western* parts, we read of the synagogues which the Jews enjoyed, and the liberty they had therein for exercise of their own way of worship and discipline. And therefore even at *Rome*, we read of their *proseuchæ*,

Ede ubi consistas, in quâ te quæro proseucha?<sup>1</sup>

Which by the old scholiast upon *Juvenal* is said to be the place *ad quem convenire solebant mendici ad stipem petendam*, “to which the mendicants were accustomed to resort to ask alms,” of which *Turnebus* gives this account: “*Proseuchæ* were Jewish temples, as at *Rome*, *Alexandria*, and elsewhere. They obtained the name, either because they were places where certain divine answers were given, or as the Christians express it, they were places for prayer. But since the Jews were very prone to give alms, hither a crowd of mendicants resorted. But as both the Jews and the beggars themselves were hated by all, and the latter sometimes occupied those places as guests, because they had no abodes, and lodged in the same, therefore those places sank into the name of *proseuchæ*, begging places, by way of contempt.”<sup>2</sup> *Scaliger*<sup>3</sup> thinks that the *proseuchæ* differed from the synagogue; for which he is checked by *Grotius* from that place of *Philo*, where he speaks of *Augustus* giving the Jews the liberty of their *proseucha* for the learning the religion of their country, which in brief is that the “*Proseuchæ*, in the different cities, were the schools of all religion, learning, wisdom, fortitude, justice, piety, prudence, and of every virtue,”<sup>4</sup> by which words he seems to confound not only the *synagogue* and the *proseuchæ* together, but the synagogue and the בית מדרש, “temple for expounding and divinity school too,” whither they used to repair after dinner on sabbath days, and where the questions about their law were discussed; but though I

<sup>1</sup> Tell me where thou dwellest, in what *proseucha* may I seek thee?—*Juvenal*, sat. 3.

<sup>2</sup> *Proseuchæ* fana *Judæorum* erant, ut *Alexandriæ* et *Romæ*, alibique; sic nomen adeptæ quod oracula quædam essent, vel (ut *Christiani* loquuntur) oratoria. Cum autem ad eleemosynam *Judæi* dandam essent propensissimi, cò cœu mendicorum conventus coibat; sed et *Judæi* et ipsi mendici, invisi erant omnibus, et mendici ea loca quod domicilia non haberant, diversores interdum occupabant, in iisque cubabant, ideoque *proseuchæ* nomen in contemptum abierat.—*Advers.* l. 1, cap. 19.

<sup>3</sup> Not. in *Frag. Græca*, p. 25, in *Matt.* iv. 23. *Leg.* ad *Caium*.

<sup>4</sup> Τα γὰρ κατὰ πολλοὺς προσηυκτηρία τι ἕτερον ἐστὶν ἡ διδασκαλεῖα φρονήσεως καὶ ἀνδρείας καὶ σοφροσύνης καὶ δικαιοσύνης, εὐσεβείας τε καὶ ὁσιότητος καὶ συμπάσης ἀρετῆς.



cannot say these were always distinguished, yet in some places they were. Such seems the *school of Tyrannus* to be, where *Paul*<sup>1</sup> taught, having withdrawn himself from the synagogue. And so sometimes the *proseuchæ* were distinguished from the *synagogues*, as *Grotius*<sup>2</sup> himself elsewhere acknowledgeth, viz. either where there was not a competent number of Jews, (for ten students in the law were required to make a synagogue,) or else where the magistrate would not permit the use of them, in which case the poor Jews were fain to content themselves with a place remote from the city, either by some river, as that *πρὸς ἐνχρῆ*, mentioned *Acts* xvi. 13, or by some grove or wood, whence that of *Juvenal*,

Nunc sacri fontis nemus, et delubra locantur  
Judæis, quorum cophinus sænumque suppellex.<sup>3</sup>

Which fountain, as *Vossius*<sup>4</sup> observes, was *extra portam Capenam in luco quem medium irrigabat*, "was without the gate Capena, in the grove whose midst it waters;" and from hence *Scaliger*<sup>5</sup> gathers, *Judæos in nemoribus proseuchas collocasse*, "the Jews placed their proseuchæ in groves." Thus it appears now what privileges the Jews generally enjoyed in their dispersion for their synagogues and public places to meet, pray, and discourse in.

§ 6. We now come to inquire after what manner the government of the synagogue was modelled. Wherein we must first inquire whether there was any peculiar government belonging to the synagogue distinct from the civil consistories which were in use among them. This is often left untouched by learned men in their discourse of synagogues: some<sup>6</sup> indeed make the least consistory or *sanhedrim* in use among the Jews, viz. the *triumvirate*, to be the rulers of the synagogue, and part of the *ten* who were to be wherever there was a synagogue. But although I cannot see sufficient evidence for a great ecclesiastical *sanhedrim* founded by *Moses*, answering to the great *sanhedrim* of seventy, yet I conceive it probable, that when synagogues were so multiplied both at home and abroad, there was a distinct *bench* of officers who did particularly belong to the synagogue to superintend the affairs of that, which I shall now endeavour to make out by these fol-

<sup>1</sup> Acts xix. 9.

<sup>2</sup> Annot. in Acts xvi. 13.

<sup>3</sup> Now the grove of the consecrated fountain and temples, (*proseuchæ*), are placed amongst the Jews, whose furniture is panniers and hay.

<sup>4</sup> De Idol. l. 2, cap. 80, p. 715.

<sup>5</sup> In Fragm. Gr. p. 25.

<sup>6</sup> D. Lightfoot *Horæ Hebr.* in Mat. ii. 23, p. 70.

lowing reasons: *First*, Because the *ten* required for the synagogue are set down by the Jewish writers as distinct from the number required for the civil consistory. For in the *Gemara Babylonia* (cited by *Selden*<sup>1</sup>) the account given why there must be one hundred and twenty inhabitants where there was to be a *sanhedrim* of twenty-three, is this: *There must be twenty-three to make up the sanhedrim, and three orders of twenty-three*, (who sat in a hemicycle under the *sanhedrim* in the same form as they sat,) *and besides these the ten who were to be employed wholly in the affairs of the synagogue*, (for the Gloss there explains them to be מכל מלאכה מכל אדם בטלין עשרה בני אדם בטרין, *decem filii hominis vacantes ab omni opere, ut parati sint*, “ten sons, men at leisure, from every kind of work, that they might be ready,” שחרית וערבית לבית הכנסת *domui synagogæ manè et vesperi*, “at the house of the synagogue, morning and evening,” and there adds, that every city, though it be walled, where ten such persons are wanting, is looked on only as a village, and thought unworthy to have a *sanhedrim* of twenty-three;) so that by this it appears the number of the *decemvirate* for the synagogue, was distinct from the persons employed in the civil courts. To the same purpose *Maimonides*<sup>2</sup> gives the account of the number of one hundred and twenty, who likewise requires the ten for the synagogue as a distinct and peculiar number. “And these were men who were at leisure for sacred things, that is, for the reading of the law, and for the sessions of the synagogue,”<sup>3</sup> as *Mr. Selden*<sup>4</sup> quotes it from another place in him. Whereby it is evident that those who were employed in the synagogue, did make a peculiar bench and consistory, distinct from the civil judicature of the place. And therefore the Ἀρχισυναγωγοί, “chiefs of the synagogue,” are not the civil rulers, but some peculiar officers belonging to the service of the synagogue: and thence when all civil power and government was taken from the Jews, yet they retained their *archisynagogues* still. Whence we read of *archisynagogues, patriarchs and presbyters* among the Jews in the time of *Arcadius* and *Honorius*,<sup>5</sup> when all civil power and jurisdiction was taken from them. The *second* reason is from the peculiar ordination of those who were the rulers of the synagogues. This I know is denied by many: because, say they, ordination was proper only to the

<sup>1</sup> De Syned. l. 2, c. 5, s. 4.

<sup>2</sup> In Jud. tit. Sanhed. c. 1, sect. 6.

<sup>3</sup> Atque hi erant viri qui vacabant tantum rebus divinis, nimirum lectioni legis et sessioni in synagoga.

<sup>4</sup> Ad Misn. tit. Sanhed. c. 1, sect. 6.

<sup>5</sup> Cod. Theod. l. 16, tit. 8, l. 13 and 14.

*presbyters* among the Jews, who were thereby made capable of being members of the *sanhedrim*, thence it was called סמיכה וקנים, *ordinatio presbyterorum*, "ordination of presbyters," i. e. *impositio manuum quâ presbyteri fiunt*, "the imposition of hands, by which presbyters are made." This ordination was, I grant, primarily used in order to the making men members of the great *sanhedrim*, and therefore the Jews derive the custom of ordaining them, from *Moses* first constituting the seventy elders, which, say they, was done by imposition of hands: which was seconded by the example of *Moses*<sup>1</sup> laying his hands on *Joshua*, from whence the custom was continued down among them till the time of *Adrian*, who severely prohibited it by an edict, that whosoever should ordain another should forfeit his life,<sup>2</sup> and so every one that was so ordained. Thence the Jews tell us that *R. Jehuda Ben Baba* is called הסוֹכֵךְ, "the ordainer," because in the time of that edict he ordained five *presbyters*, without which they had wholly lost their succession of presbyters for courts of judicature. But though it be thus evident that their ordination was chiefly used in order to the fitting men to be members of the *sanhedrim*, yet that besides this there was a peculiar ordination for persons not employed in civil matters, will appear; *First*, From the different *forms* of their ordination; some were general without any restriction or limitation at all: which power was conferred in words to this purpose: "Be thou now ordained, and have authority of judging also in criminal causes."<sup>3</sup> He that was thus ordained, was fit for any court of judicature;<sup>4</sup> but there was another form of ordination which was more particular and restrained; a form limiting the general power, either to pecuniary cases, or criminal, or only to the power of binding and loosing, without any judiciary power at all. Now those that were thus ordained, were the Jewish casuists, resolving men only *in foro conscientiæ*, "in the court of conscience," of the lawfulness and unlawfulness of things propounded to them. This they called באסר והתר רשות לחירות *Facultas decernendi circa ligatum et solutum*, that is, "a power of decreeing what was lawful or unlawful." For in that sense binding and loosing is used by the Jewish writers. In which sense they tell us commonly that one

<sup>1</sup> Numb. xiii., xxxvii. 18.

<sup>2</sup> Gem. Babyl. ad tit. Sanhed. c. 1, s. 13, 14. Scaliger Elench. Triber. c. 10. Tzemach. David. p. 1, md. 4, An. 880.

<sup>3</sup> Ordinatus jam sis, et sit tibi facultas judicandi etiam causas pœnales.

<sup>4</sup> Selden ad Eutyech. p. 19, de Syned. l. 2, c. 7, s. 2.

school, as that of *Hillel* אומר, “binds,” that is, judgeth a thing unlawful; another כותר, “looseth,” (as that of *Schammai*,) that is, judgeth it lawful and free to be done. Now the persons thus ordained with this power only, were thereby no member of any civil court of judicature, nor thereby made capable of it: it appears then that this ordination was peculiar to a particular function, which exactly answers to the ministerial office under the gospel. And that those who were thus ordained, either might not, or did not exercise that office of theirs in the synagogue, I can see no reason; I am sure it was most suitable to that place, or at least to the בית סדרש, “divinity school,” where there was such a one distinct from the synagogue.

But a clearer evidence of the particular ordination of those employed in the synagogue, we have from *Benjamin* in his *Itinerary*; for granting his palpable mistakes about the civil powers of the Jews in his time, (which was about the middle of the twelfth century,) sufficiently discovered by the learned *L'Empereur*,<sup>2</sup> yet as to the ordaining of persons for the several synagogues, we have no ground to suspect his testimony, which is very plain and evident. For speaking of *R. Daniel Ben Hasdai*, who was the ראש הגולה or the αιχμαλωτάρχης, “the head of the Captivity” then residing at *Bagdad*, he tells us, the synagogues of Babylon, Persia, Choresan, Sheba, Mesopotamia, and many other places,<sup>3</sup> derived power from him על כר קהל וקהל רב וחזן, “of ordaining a Rabbi and preacher over every synagogue,” which he tells us was done by laying on his hands upon them. These two, the Rabbi and the חזן, seer, he makes to be the fixed officers of every synagogue, and the office of the latter lay chiefly in expounding the scriptures. The like he hath of *R. Nathaniel*, the ראש חשיבה, “the resident chief,” in Egypt, to whose office it belonged to ordain in all the synagogues in Egypt, רבנים ודוקנים, the Rabbis and lecturers of the synagogue: by which we see clearly, that there was a peculiar ordination for the ministers belonging to the synagogue.<sup>4</sup> Thence Scaliger wonders how Christ at twelve years old should be permitted to sit among the doctors, asking questions when he was not an ordained Rabbi, to whom that place belonged.<sup>5</sup> But although ἐν μέσῳ τῶν διδασκάλων may possibly mean no more than in the midst of the teachers,

<sup>1</sup> V. Lightfoot *Horæ Hebr.* in *Matth.* xvi. 19.

<sup>2</sup> *Dissertat. ad Lectorem* and in not. 193, &c.

<sup>3</sup> P. 73, cd. *L'Empereur. Heb. Lat.*

<sup>4</sup> *Elench. Triherc.* 10.

<sup>5</sup> *Luke* ii. 46.



or sitting on one of the lower seats belonging to those who were yet in their קטנות or "minority," where they sat at the feet of their teachers, which was not within the temple itself, but, as *Arias Montanus*<sup>1</sup> thinks, was at the east gate of the temple where the doctors sat; yet this is evident by *Scaliger*, that he looked on an ordination for that end, as necessary to those who sat in the synagogues, as the doctors there: which is likewise affirmed by *Grotius*, who tells us, that among the Jews, not only all public civil offices were conferred by imposition of hands:<sup>2</sup> "But likewise all the rulers and elders of the synagogue were so ordained, from whence the custom was translated into Christianity," (of which afterwards.) Thus now we have cleared that there was a peculiar government belonging to the synagogue, distinct from the civil judicatures.

Having thus far proceeded in clearing that there was a peculiar form of government in the synagogue, we now inquire what that was, and by what law and rule it was observed. The government of the synagogue, either relates to the public service of God in it, or the public rule of it as a society. As for the service of God to be performed in it, as there were many parts of it, so there were many officers peculiarly appointed for it. The main part of public service lay in the reading and expounding the scriptures: for both, the known place of *Philo* will give us light for understanding them. "Coming to their holy places called synagogues, they sit down in convenient order according to their several forms, ready to hear, the young under the elder; then one taketh the book and readeth, another of those best skilled comes after and expounds it."<sup>3</sup> For so *Grotius* reads it, ἀναδιδάσκει, "he instructs," for ἀναγινώσκει, "he reads," out of *Eusebius*.<sup>4</sup> We see two several offices here, the one of the reader in the synagogue, the other of him that did interpret what was read. Great difference I find among learned men about the ἡγούμενος of the synagogue: some by him understand the ἀναγνώστης, "a reader," called sometimes in scripture ὑπηρέτης, a "servant or attendant," and so make him the under reader in the syna-

<sup>1</sup> In Appar. de Templo.

<sup>2</sup> Sed et in Archisynagogis et senioribus synagogæ, idem observatum, unde mos χειροθεσίας ad Christianos transit.—Annot. in Evang. p. 32.

<sup>3</sup> Εἰς ἱεροῦς ἀφικνύμενοι τόπους οἱ καλοῦνται συναγωγαὶ καθ' ἡλικίας ἐν τάξεσιν ἀπο πρεσβυτέρους νεοὶ καθεζόνται μετὰ κοσμοῦ προσηκόντος, ἔχοντες ακροατικῶς εἰδὼς, ὁ μὲν τὰς βίβλους ἀναγινώσκει λαβὼν, ἕτερος δὲ τῶν ἐμπειροτάτων, ὅσα μὲν γινώσκει, παρελθὼν ἀναγινώσκει.—Lib. omnium probum liberum esse.

<sup>4</sup> In Luc. iv. 16.

gogue;<sup>1</sup> and hence I suppose it is, (and not from looking to the poor, which was the office of the Parnasim,) that the office of deacons in the primitive church is supposed to be answerable to the *הוֹנִים*, “seers, overseers,” among the Jews; for the deacon’s office in the church was the public reading of the scriptures: and hence *Epiphanius*<sup>2</sup> parallels the *ἀρχιεπισκοπάρχους*, *πρεσβυτέρους*, and *ἀζανίτας*,<sup>3</sup> among the Jews, to the bishop, presbyters and deacons, among the Christians. But others make the office of the *הוֹן* to be of a higher nature not to be taken for the reader himself, (for that was no office, but upon every sabbath day seven were called out to do that work, as *Buxtorf* tells us,<sup>4</sup> first a priest, then a Levite, and after, any five of the people; and these had every one their set parts in every section to read; which are still marked by the numbers in some Bibles.) But the *הוֹן*, *chezen*, was he that did call out every one of these in their order to read, and did observe their reading, whether they did it exactly or not. So *Buxtorf*, speaking of the *הוֹן*, “He especially took the lead in the prayers and singing of the church; he presided over the reading of the law, teaching what, and in what manner it ought to be read; and over similar matters pertaining to sacred ceremonies.”<sup>5</sup> So that according to him, the *הוֹן*, *chezen*, or seer, was the superintendant of all the public service; thence others make him parallel to him they called *שְׁלִיחַ צִיבור*, “the angel of the church, Legatus Ecclesiæ.” *L’Empereur*<sup>6</sup> renders it, as though the name were imposed on him as acting in the name of the church, which could only be in offering up public prayers; but he was *Angelus Dei*, as he was *inspector ecclesiæ*, because the angels are supposed to be more immediately present in, and supervisors over the public place, and duties of worship; see 1 Cor. xi. 10. This *הוֹן* is by *L’Empereur* often rendered *Concionator synagogæ*, “the expounder,” as though it belonged to him to explain the meaning of what was read in the synagogue; but he that did that was called *ררש* from *דרש* “to inquire;” thence *σὺζητητής του κόσμου τουτου*, “the inquirer, or disputer of this world,”<sup>7</sup> thence *R. Moses Haddarsan*: but it is in vain to seek for several offices from

<sup>1</sup> Luke iv. 20.<sup>2</sup> C. Ebeonites.<sup>3</sup> Not Greek, but from the Hebrew *הוֹנִים*, explained before.<sup>4</sup> Synag. Jud. lib. 11.<sup>5</sup> Hic maxime oratione sive precibus et cantu Ecclesiæ præibat, præerat lectioni legali, docens quod et quomodo legendum, et similibus quæ ad sacra pertinebant. —Lex. Rabb. ad verb.<sup>6</sup> In Benjam. not. p. 149.<sup>7</sup> Cor. i. 28.

several names; nay, it seems not evident, that there were any set officers in the Jewish church for expounding scriptures in all synagogues, or at least not so fixed, but that any one that enjoyed any repute for religion or knowledge in the law, was allowed a free liberty of speaking for the instruction of the people, as we see in Christ and his apostles;<sup>1</sup> for the rulers of the synagogue sent to *Paul* and *Barnabas* after the reading of the law, that if they had any word of exhortation, they should speak on.

From hence it is evident, there were more than one who had rule over the synagogues, they being called *rulers* here. It seems very probable, that in every city where there were *ten wise men*, (as there were supposed to be in every place, where there was a synagogue,) that they did all jointly concur for the ruling the affairs of the synagogue. But what the distinct offices of all these were, it is hard to make out, but all joining together seem to make the *consistory*, or *bench* as some call it, which did unanimously moderate the affairs of the synagogue, whose manner of sitting in the synagogues, is thus described by Mr. *Thorndike* out of *Maimonides*,<sup>2</sup> whose words are these: "How sit the people in the synagogue? The elders sit with their faces towards the people, and their backs towards the *hecall*, (the place where they lay the copy of the law,) and all the people sit rank before rank, the face of every rank towards the back of the rank before it, so the faces of all the people are towards the sanctuary, and towards the elders, and towards the ark; and when the minister of the synagogue standeth up to prayer, he standeth on the ground before the ark with his face to the sanctuary, as the rest of the people." Several things are observable to our purpose in this testimony of *Maimonides*: First, that there were so many elders in the synagogue, as to make a bench or consistory, and therefore had a place by themselves, as the governors of the synagogue. And the truth is, after their dispersion we shall find little government among them, but what was in their synagogues, unless it was where they had liberty for erecting schools of learning. Besides this college of presbyters, we here see the public minister of the synagogue, the *חזן הגבחה*, *i. e. episcopus congregationis*, "the superintendent over the congregation," whose peculiar office it was to pray for, and to bless the people. We are here further to take notice of the form of their sitting in the synagogues; the presbyters sat

<sup>1</sup> Act. xiii. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Service of God at Rel. Ass. c. 3, p. 56.

together upon a bench by themselves, with their faces towards the people, which was in an *hemicycle*, the form wherein all the courts of judicature among them sat; which is fully described by Mr. *Selden*,<sup>1</sup> and Mr. *Thorndike*<sup>2</sup> in the places above cited. This was afterwards the form wherein the bishops and presbyters used to sit in the primitive church, as the last named learned author largely observes and proves. Besides this college of presbyters, there seems to be one particularly called *the ruler of the synagogue*, ראש הקהל, “*raish haquahal*, the ruler of the synagogue,” in the New Testament,<sup>3</sup> ἀρχισυναγωγος, ὁ ἀρχὼν τῆς συναγωγῆς, which is of the same import, and following the idiom of the Alexandrine Jews in the version of the Old Testament, implies no more than a primacy of order in him above the rest he was joined with. And thence sometimes we read of them in the plural number, ἐν ἀρχισυναγωγαῖς, *Acts* xiii. 15, implying thereby an equality of power in many; but by reason of the necessary primacy of one in order above the rest, the name may be appropriated to the president of the college. *Acts* xviii. 8, 17, we read of two, viz. *Crispus* and *Sosthenes*, and either of them is called ἀρχισυναγωγος, which could not be, did the name import any peculiar power of jurisdiction lodged in one exclusive of the rest, unless we make them to be of two synagogues, for which we have no evidence at all; I confess, *Beza*’s<sup>4</sup> argument from εἰς τὴν ἀρχισυναγωγὴν, “one of the rulers of the synagogue,” *Mark* v. 22, for one of a multitude of those so called in the same synagogue, is of no great force, where we may probably suppose there were many synagogues. But where there is no evidence of more than one in a place, and we find the name attributed to more than one, we have ground to think that there is nothing of power or jurisdiction in that one, which is not common to more besides himself. But granting some peculiarity of honour belonging to one above the rest in a synagogue, which in some places, I see no great reason to deny, yet that implies not any power over and above the bench of which he was a member, though the first in order; much as the נשיא, the “*prince of the sanhedrim*,” whose place imported no power peculiar to himself, but only a priority of dignity in himself above his fellow senators: as the *princeps senatûs*; or “prince of the senate,” in the Roman republic answering to the אב בית דין, the “father of the house of judgment,” in the great *sanhedrim*,

<sup>1</sup> De Syned. l. 2, c. 6, s. 2.<sup>2</sup> Thorndike, Rel. Assem. cap. 3.<sup>3</sup> Mark v. 35; Luke viii. 49, xiii. 14.<sup>4</sup> Annot. in Luc. 13, 14.



who was next to the *Nasi*, as the *princeps senatûs* to the consuls, which was only an honorary dignity and nothing else: under which disguise that politic prince *Augustus* ravished the Roman commonwealth of its former liberty. The name ἀρχισυναγωγος may, I suppose in propriety of speech, be rendered in Latin by *magister ordinis*, “master of the order,” he being by his office *præsul*, “chief,” a name not originally importing any power, but only dignity: those whom the Greeks call ἀρχιερεας, the Latins render *magistros sui ordinis*, “chiefs of their own order;” and so *Suetonius* interprets ἀρχιεροσύνην by *magisterium sacerdotii*, “the chieftainship of the priesthood, the pontificate.” They who meet then with the name *archisynagogues*, either in *Lampridius*, *Vopiscus*, *Codex Theodosii*, *Justinian’s Novels*,<sup>1</sup> in all whom it occurs, and in some places as distinct from presbyters, will learn to understand thereby only the highest honour in the synagogue; considering how little, yea nothing of power the Jews enjoyed under either the heathen, or Christian emperors.

One thing more we add, touching this honour of the rulers of the synagogue among the Jews, that whatever honour, title, power or dignity is imported by that name, it came not from any law enforcing or commanding it, but from mutual confederation and agreement among the persons employed in the synagogue, whose natural reason did dictate, that where many have an equality of power, it is most convenient, (by way of accumulation upon that person, of a power more than he had, but not by deprivation of themselves of that inherent power which they enjoyed,) to entrust the management of the executive part of affairs of common concern to one person specially chosen and deputed thereunto. So it was in all the *sanhedrims* among the Jews, and in all well ordered senates and councils in the world. And it would be very strange, that any officers of a religious society, should upon that account be outlawed of those natural liberties, which are the results and products of the free acts of reason. Which things, as I have already observed, God hath looked on to be so natural to man, as when he was most strict and punctual in ceremonial commands, he yet left these things wholly at liberty. For we read not of any command, that in the *sanhedrim* one should have some peculiarity of honour above

<sup>1</sup> In Caligulâ. Lampr. vit. Alex. Sever. Vopiscus in Saturn. Cod. de Jud. Colic. et Eam. l. 13. Cod. Jud. l. 17, c. de Judæis.

the rest; this men's natural reason would prompt them to, by reason of a necessary priority of order in some above others; which the very instinct of nature hath taught irrational creatures, much more should the light of reason direct men to it. But yet all order is not power, nor all power juridical, nor all juridical power a sole power; therefore it is a mere paralogism<sup>1</sup> in any from order to infer power, or from a delegated power by consent, to infer a juridical power by divine right; or lastly, from a power in common with others, to deduce a power excluding others. All which they are guilty of, who merely from the name of an *archisynagogue*, would fetch a perpetual necessity of jurisdiction in one above the elders joined with him, or from the *הנשיא*, "the prince" in the *sanhedrim*, a power of a sole ordination in one without the consent of his fellow senators. But of these afterwards. Thus much may suffice for a draught in miniature of the government of the Jewish synagogue.

§ 8. Having thus far represented the Jewish synagogue, that the idea of its government may be formed in our understandings, we now come to consider how far, and in what the apostles in forming Christian churches did follow the pattern of the Jewish synagogue. Which is a notion not yet so far improved as I conceive it may be, and I know no one more conducive to the happy end of composing our differences, touching the government of the church than this. I shall therefore for the full clearing of it, premise some general considerations to make way for the entertainment of this *hypothesis*, at least as probable; and then endeavour particularly to show how the *apostles* did observe the model of the synagogue; *in its public service, in ordination of church officers, in forming presbyteries in the several churches, and in ruling and governing those presbyteries*. The general consideration I premise, to show the probability of what I am asserting, shall be from these things: *from the community of name and customs between the believing Jews and others, at the first forming of churches: from the apostle's forming them out of synagogues in their travelling abroad; from the agreeableness of that model of government to the state of the Christian churches at that time*. I begin with the first, *From the community of names and customs between the believing and unbelieving Jews at the first forming churches*. All the while our blessed Saviour was living in

<sup>1</sup> False argument; from *παρά*, against, and *λογος*, reason.

the world, Christ and his disciples went still under the name of Jews; they neither renounced the name, nor the customs in use among them; our Saviour goes up to the *feasts* at Jerusalem, conforms to all the rites and customs in use then; not only those commanded by God himself, but those taken up by the Jews themselves, if not contrary to God's commands, as in observing the feast of dedication, in going into their synagogues, and teaching so often there, in washing the feet of the disciples, (a custom used by them before the pass-over,) in using baptism for the proselyting men to the profession of Christianity, &c. In these and other things our Saviour conformed to the received practice among them, though the things themselves were no ways commanded by the law of *Moses*. And after his resurrection, when he took care for the forming of a church upon the doctrine he had delivered, yet we find not the apostles withdrawing from communion with the Jews, but on the contrary, we find the disciples frequenting the temple, *Acts* ii. 46; iii. 1; v. 20, 21, 26. Whereby it appears how they owned themselves as Jews still, observing the same both time and place for public worship which were in use among the Jews. We find *Paul* presently after his conversion in the synagogues, preaching that Christ whom he had before persecuted;<sup>1</sup> and wherever he goes abroad afterwards, still entering into the synagogues to preach; where we cannot conceive he would have had so free and easy admission, unless the Jews did look upon him as one of their own religion, and observing the same customs in the synagogues with themselves, only differing in the point of the coming of the Messiah, and the obligation of the ceremonial law,<sup>2</sup> the least footsteps of which were seen in the synagogue worship. But that which yet further clears this, is the general prejudice of the disciples against the Gentiles, even after the giving of the *Holy Ghost*, as appears by their contending with *Peter* for going to men uncircumcised.<sup>3</sup> It is evident then, that the apostles themselves did not clearly apprehend the extent of their commission; for else what made *Peter* so shy of going to *Cornelius*? But by *every creature*, and *all nations*, they only apprehended the Jews in their dispersions abroad,<sup>4</sup> or at least, that all others who were to be saved, must by being *proselyted* to the Jews, and observing the law

<sup>1</sup> Acts ix. 20.

<sup>2</sup> Acts xiii. 5, 14; xvii. 10; xviii. 4; xix. 8.

<sup>3</sup> Acts xi. 3.

<sup>4</sup> Acts x. 28.

of *Moses*, together with the gospel of Christ. And therefore we see the necessity of circumcision much pressed by the believing Jews, which came down from Jerusalem, that raised so high a dispute, that a convention of the apostles together at Jerusalem was called for the ending of it; and even there we find great heats before the business could be decided,<sup>1</sup> πολλης δε συζυτησεως γενομενης, “after there had been much disputing.” Nay after this council, and the determination of the apostles therein, all the ease and release that was granted, was only to the Gentile converts, but the Jews still adhered close to their old principles, and were as zealous of the customs of the Jews as ever before. For which we have a pregnant testimony in *Acts* xxi. 20, 21, 22; where the elders of the church of Jerusalem tell *Paul* there were many *myriads* Ιουδαιων των πεπιστευκοτων, “of believing Jews,” who were παντες ζηλωται του νομου, “all very zealous for the law,” and therefore had conceived a sinister opinion of *Paul*, as one that taught a defection from the law of *Moses*, saying, “they might not circumcise their children, nor walk after the customs.” One copy reads it as *Beza* tells us, τοις ἔθεσι τοῖς πατρωοις πορευεσθαι, “to follow the customs of their fathers.” We see how equally zealous they are for the customs obtaining among them, as for the law itself. And is it then any ways probable that these who continued such zealots for the customs among them, should not observe those customs in use in the synagogues for the government of the church? Might not they have been charged as well as *Paul* with relinquishing *the customs*, if they had thrown off the model of the Jewish synagogue, and taken up some customs different from that? And that which further confirms this, is, that this church of Jerusalem continued still in its zeal for the law, till after the destruction of the temple; and all the several pastors of that church, (whom ecclesiastical writers call *bishops*,) were of the circumcision. For we have the testimony of *Sulpitius Severus*, speaking of the time of *Adrian*. “And because the Christians were generally supposed to be of the Jews, for at that time the church, except it had a minister of the circumcision, was not at Jerusalem, he ordered his troops to keep them constantly under military custody, and to drive all Jews from every approach to that city. But this was not a little serviceable to the Christian faith, since then nearly all, under the observances of the law, believed that Christ was

<sup>1</sup> Acts xv. 1, 7.



God.”<sup>1</sup> We see hereby that the Christians observed still the law with the gospel; and that the Jews and Christians were both reckoned as one body, which must imply an observation of the same rites and customs among them. For those are the things whereby societies are distinguished most. Now it is evident, that the Romans made no distinction at first between the Jews and Christians. Thence we read in the time of *Claudius*, when the edict came out against the Jews, *Aquila* and *Priscilla*, though converted to Christianity, were forced to leave Italy upon that account,<sup>2</sup> being still looked on as Jews; yet these are called by *Paul*, “his helpers in Christ Jesus.”<sup>3</sup> For which *Onephrius* gives this reason, “For as yet, no difference was known between Jews and Christians;”<sup>4</sup> which account is likewise given by *Alphonsus Ciaconius*, “For Christians as well as Jews were thought, by the Gentiles, to be of the same kindred and religion.”<sup>5</sup> The edict of *Claudius* we may read still in *Suetonius*, “He expelled the Jews from Rome, continually producing some disorder, Christ, (as they thought,) being the instigator!”<sup>6</sup> We find here the edict fully expressed for banishing the Jews, and the occasion set down; which most interpret of the doctrine of Christ, as the occasion of the stir between the Jews and Christians. For the Romans called Christ *Chrestus*,<sup>7</sup> and Christians, *Chrestiani*, as the authors of the Christians’ *apologies* against the heathens often tell us.<sup>8</sup> But *Marcellus Donatus* conjectures this *Chrestus* to have been some seditious Jew called by that name; for which he brings many *inscriptions* wherein the name occurs, but none wherein it is given to a Jew; which should be first produced, before we

<sup>1</sup> Et quia Christiani ex Judæis potissimum putabantur, (namque tum Hierosolymæ, non nisi ex circumcissione habebat ecclesia sacerdotem) militum cohortem custodias in perpetuum agitare jussit, quæ Judæos omnes Hierosolymæ aditu arecret. Quod quidem Christianæ fidei proficiebat; quia tum pene omnes Christum Deum, sub legis observatione, credebant. Euscb. hist. l. 4, c. 6, et Chronic. Hist. sacr. l. 2, p. 381, ed. Horn.

<sup>2</sup> Acts xviii. 2.

<sup>3</sup> Rom. xvi. 3.

<sup>4</sup> Nullum adhuc inter Judæos et Christianos discrimen noscebatur.—Annot. in vit. Petri. ap. Platin. in vit. Petri.

<sup>5</sup> Congeneres et comprofessores ejusdem religionis gentilibus censebantur (Christiani pariter ac Judæi.)

<sup>6</sup> Judæos impulsore Christo assidue tumultuantes Roma expulit.—In Claud. cap. 25.

<sup>7</sup> “The most usual sense of *χρηστος*, is *good, excellent*; but *χριστος*, Christ, i. e. the *anointed*, is from *χρίω* to anoint. Pronounce the English *e* in *Chrestus* long, as *Chreestus*.”

<sup>8</sup> Lactant. l. 4, c. 7. Tertul. Apolog. cap. 3, V. Pet. Pithæum Hor. subseciv. l. 2, c. 3. Donatus Dilucid. in Sueton. in Claud. c. 25.

leave the received interpretation of it. However that be, we see the Jews and Christians equally undergo the punishment without any difference observed in them; and therefore when *Paul* was brought before *Gallio* the *proconsul* of Achaia, he looked upon the difference between the Jews and *Paul* to be only "a question of words and names, and of their law," and thereupon refused to meddle with it.<sup>1</sup> And so *Celsus* upbraids both Jews and Christians, as though their contentions were about a matter of nothing. By all this we may now consider, how little the Christians did vary from the customs and practice of the Jews, when they were thought by those who were equally enemies to both to be of the same body and community. Which consideration will make the thing I aim at seem more probable, when withal we observe that the Jewish customs in their synagogues, were those whereby they were most known among the Romans; and therefore when they looked on the Christians as of the same religion with the Jews, it is evident they observed no difference as to their public practices in their religious societies. Which is the first consideration, to show how probable it is that Christians observed the same form in government with what they found in the synagogues.

§ 9. To which I add a *second* consideration; which is the apostles forming Christian churches out of Jewish synagogues. We have already showed how much their resort was to them in their preaching from the constant practice of *Paul*, although he was in a more peculiar manner the *apostle of the uncircumcision*; much more then is it probable that the others, especially *Peter*, *James*, and *John* did resort to the circumcision. And in the settling things at first, we see how fearful the apostles were of giving offence to the Jews, how ready to condescend to them in anything they lawfully might. And can we think that *Paul* would yield so far to the Jews as to circumcise *Timothy*,<sup>2</sup> rather than give offence to the Jews in those parts where he was, (and that in a thing which seemed most immediately to thwart the design of the gospel;<sup>3</sup> as circumcision did, witness the apostle himself;) that yet he would scruple the retaining the old model of the synagogue, when there was nothing in it at all repugnant to the doctrine of the gospel, or the nature and constitution of Christian churches? When the apostles; then, did not only gather churches out of

<sup>1</sup> Acts. xviii. 15. Apud. Orig. lib. 3, cont. Cels.

<sup>2</sup> Acts xvi. 3.

<sup>3</sup> Gal. v. 2.

synagogues, but at some places in probability whole synagogues were converted as well as whole churches formed; what show of reason can be given why the apostles should slight the constitution of the Jewish synagogues, which had no dependence on the Jewish hierarchy, and subsisted not by any command of the ceremonial law? The work of the synagogue not belonging to the priest as such, but as persons qualified for instructing others, and the first model of the synagogue government is with a great deal of probability derived from the *schools of the prophets* and the government thereof. This consideration would be further improved, if the notion of distinct *cœtus* "assemblies" of the Jewish and Gentile Christians in the same places could be made out by any irrefragable testimony of antiquity, or clear evidence of reason drawn from scripture; because the same reason which would ground the distinction of the Jewish church from the Gentile, would likewise hold for the Jewish church to retain her old form of government in the synagogue way. For it must be some kind of peculiarity supposed by the Jews in themselves as distinct from the Gentiles, which did make them form a distinct congregation from them; which peculiarity did imply the observing those customs among them still, by which that peculiarity was known to others; among which those of the synagogue were not the least known or taken notice of. But I must freely confess, I find not anything brought by that learned person, who hath managed this *hypothesis*<sup>1</sup> with the greatest dexterity, to have that evidence in it which will command assent from an unprejudiced mind. And it is pity that such an infirm *hypothesis* should be made use of for the justifying our separation from Rome, which was built upon reasons of greater strength and evidence, than those which have been of late pleaded by some assertors of the protestant cause, though men of excellent abilities and learning. For there are many reasons convincing enough, that *Peter* had no universal power over the church, supposing that there was no such thing as a distinction between the Jewish and Gentile *cœtus*, "assemblies." I deny not but at first, before the Jews were fully satisfied of the Gentiles' right to gospel privileges, they were very shy of communicating with them, especially the believing Jews of the church of Jerusalem: upon the occasion of some of whom coming down to Antioch from *James*, it was, that *Peter withdrew and separated him-*

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Ham, of Schism, ch. 4, sect. 6, 7, &c.

*self from the Gentiles*,<sup>1</sup> with whom before he familiarly conversed. Which action of his is so far from being an argument<sup>2</sup> of the settling any distinct church of the Jews from the Gentiles there, that it yields many reasons against it. For *first*, *Peter's* withdrawing was only occasional, and not out of design; whereas, had it been part of his commission to do it, we cannot conceive *Peter* so mindless of his office, as to let it alone till some Jews came down from Jerusalem to tell him of it. *Secondly*, It was not for the sake of the Jews at Antioch that he withdrew, but for the Jews which came down from Jerusalem; whereas, had he intended a distinct church of the Jews, he would before have settled and fixed them as members of another body; but now it evidently appears, that not only *Peter* himself, but the Jews with him, did before those Jews coming to Antioch associate with the Gentiles, which is evident by verse 13, "And other Jews dissembled likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation." Whereby it is clear, that these Jews did before join with the Gentile Christians, or else they could not be said to be led away with the dissimulation of *Peter*. *Thirdly*, *St. Paul* is so far from looking upon this withdrawing of *Peter*, and the Jews from the Gentiles' society to be a part of *St. Peter's* office, that he openly and sharply reproves him for it. What then, was *Paul* so ignorant, that there must be two distinct churches of Jews and Gentiles there, that he calls this action of his *dissimulation*? In all reason then, supposing this notion to be true, the blame lights on *Paul*, and not on *Peter*: as not understanding, that the Jews were to be formed into distinct bodies from the Gentile Christians. And therefore it is observable that the same author who is produced, as asserting, that "They were accounted to be of the church, who were separately of the Jews, nor were intermixed with those who were of the Gentiles,"<sup>3</sup> is he, who makes this reproof of *Peter* by *Paul*, to be a mere matter of dissimulation between them both; to which sense of that action whoever will be so favourable as to embrace it, (as some seem inclinable to do,) will never be able to answer the arguments brought by *St. Augustine* against it.<sup>4</sup> This place then was unhappily selected to prove a distinction of the several distinct churches of Jews and Christians at

<sup>1</sup> Gal. ii. 12.

<sup>2</sup> Schism, sect. 8.

<sup>3</sup> Scorsim quæ ex Judæis erant ecclesiæ habebantur, nec his quæ erant ex Gentibus miscebantur.—Answ. to Schis. Dis. ch. 2, s. 5. Hieronym. in Gal. 1. 22.

<sup>4</sup> Reply to Cath. Gent. ch. 4, s. 6, n. 6. Aug. ep. 8. 9, 19, Hier.



Antioch. But, it may be, more evidence for it may be seen in the *rescript* of the council of Jerusalem, which is directed *τοῖς κατ' Ἀντιοχείαν*—*ἀδελφοῖς τοῖς ἐξ ἐθνῶν*, “To the brethren of Antioch,” those of the Gentiles.<sup>1</sup> But lest some hidden mysteries should lie in this *curtailing* the words, let us see them at large. “Unto the brethren who are of the Gentiles in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia.” There was nothing then peculiar to those of the Gentiles at Antioch more than in Syria and Cilicia; and if those words *τοῖς ἐξ ἐθνῶν*, “to those of the Gentiles,” imply an assembly distinct of Gentile Christians, from the Jews at Antioch, it must do so through all Syria, and Cilicia; which was *Paul's* province, and not *Peter's*, as appears by his travels in the Acts.<sup>2</sup> Either then the apostle of the uncircumcision must form distinct churches of Jews and Gentiles in his preaching through Syria and Cilicia, (which is irreconcilable with the former pretence of distinct provinces, asserted by the same author, who pleads for distinct congregations,) or the *τοῖς ἐξ ἐθνῶν*, “to those of the Gentiles,” can imply no such thing as a distinct church of Gentiles to whomsoever it is spoken; and so not at Antioch more than through all Syria and Cilicia. The plain ground then of the apostles inscribing the order of the council to the *brethren of the Gentiles*, was, because the matter of that order did particularly concern them, and not the Jews, as is obvious to any that will but cast an eye upon the 23, 24, 29, verses of the xv. chapter of Acts. As well might then an order supposed from the apostles to the several pastors of the churches in things concerning them as such, imply that they make distinct churches from their people, as this order concerning the *Gentile brethren*, being therefore directed to them, doth imply their making distinct churches from the Jewish brethren in the cities where they lived together. What is further produced out of *antiquity* to this purpose, hath neither evidence nor pertinency enough, to stop the passage of one who is returning from this digression to his former matter. Although then we grant not any such distinct *cætus* of the Jews from the Christians, yet that hinders not, but that both Jews and Christians joining together in one church, might retain still the synagogue form of government among them; the use of which there was no reason at all, why the Christians should scruple, either as Jews or Gentiles, because it imported nothing either typical and ceremonial, nor heavy

<sup>1</sup> Acts xv. 23. Schism. p. 75.

<sup>2</sup> Acts xv. 41; xviii. 18; xxi. 3.

and burdensome, which were the grounds why former customs in use among the Jews were laid aside by the Christians. But instead of that, it was most suitable and agreeable to the state of the churches in apostolical times, which was the *third consideration* to make it probable, that the synagogue form of government was used by the Christians. And the suitability of this government to the churches, lay in the convenience of it for the attaining all ends of government in that condition wherein the churches were at that time. For church officers acting then either in gathering or governing churches, without any authority from magistrates, such a way of government was most suitable to their several churches, whereby the churches might be governed, and yet have no dependency on the secular power, for which the way of government in the synagogues was most convenient; for the Jews, though they enjoyed a bare permission from the civil state where they lived, yet by the exercise of their synagogue government, they were able to order all affairs belonging to the service of God, and to keep all members belonging to their several synagogues in unity and peace among themselves. The case was the same as to synagogues and churches; these subsisted by the same permission which the others enjoyed; the end of these was the service of God, and preserving that order among them which might best become societies so constituted; there can be no reason then assigned, why the apostles in settling particular churches should not follow the synagogue in its model of government. These things may suffice to make it appear probable that they did so, to which point all these considerations tend.

§ 10. Having thus prepared the way by making it probable, I now further inquire into the particular part of government, and what orders in the synagogue were, which there is any evidence for, that the apostles did take up and follow. Here I begin with the thing first propounded, *the orders of public worship*, which did much resemble those of the synagogue; only with those alterations which did arise from the advancing of Christianity. That the Christians had their public and set meetings for the service of God, is evident from the first rising of a society constituted upon the account of Christianity. We read of the *three thousand* converted by *Peter's* sermon, "that they continued in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and breaking of bread, and prayers."<sup>1</sup> Where we have all

<sup>1</sup> Acts ii. 42.

that was observed in the synagogue, and somewhat more; here there is public joining together, implied in the word *κοινωνία*, "mutual participation, companionship, fellowship," their solemn prayers expressed, which were constantly observed in the synagogue; instead of reading the sections of the law and prophets, we have the apostles teaching by immediate inspiration; and to all these as the proper service of Christianity, is set down the celebration of the Lord's supper, without which we shall seldom if ever in the primitive church read that the public service on Lord's days was performed. During the apostles' times, in which there was such a land-flood of extraordinary gifts overflowing the church, in the public meetings we find those persons who were indued with those gifts, to be much in exercising them, (as to the custom, agreeing with the synagogue; but concerning the ordering of the gifts, exceeding it,) for which the apostle *Paul*, for the edification of the church, lays down so many rules in the fourteenth chapter to the Corinthians. But as soon as this flood began to abate, the public service began to run in its former channel, as is apparent from the unquestionable testimonies of *Justin Martyr* and *Tertullian*, who most fully relate to us the order of public worship used among the Christians at that time. *Justin Martyr*, the most ancient next to *Clemens*, (whose epistle is lately recovered to the Christian world,) of the unquestionable writers of the primitive church, gives us a clear narration of the public orders observed by the church in his time: "Upon the day called Sunday, all the Christians whether in town or country assemble in the same place, wherein the memoirs or commentaries of the apostles and the writings of the prophets are read as long as the time will permit; then the reader sitting down, the president of the assembly stands up and makes a sermon of instruction and exhortation to the following so good examples. After this is ended, we all stand up to prayers; prayers ended, the bread, wine, and water, are all brought forth; then the president again praying and praising to his utmost ability, the people testify their consent by saying *amen*."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Τῇ τοῦ ἡλίου λεγόμενῃ ἡμέρᾳ πάντων κατὰ πόλεις ἢ ἀγροὺς μενοντων ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτὸ συνέλευσις γίνεται, καὶ τὰ ἀπομνημονεύματα τῶν ἀποστόλων, ἢ τὰ συγγράμματα τῶν περὶφητῶν ἀναγινώσκεται μέχρις ἐγχορῆς, εἰτα παύσαμενον τοῦ ἀναγινώσκοντος, πρὸς τῶς διὰ λόγου τὴν νοουθεσίαν καὶ περικλησὶν τὴν τῶν καλῶν τούτων μιμήσεως ποιεῖται; ἔπειτα ἀνὰ ζαμεδα κοινῇ πάντες, καὶ εὐχὰς πέμπομεν καὶ ὡς προεφημεν, παύσαμενον ἡμῶν τῆς εὐχῆς ἄρτος πρὸς-φέρεται καὶ οἶνος καὶ ὕδωρ, καὶ ὁ πρὸς τῶς εὐχὰς ὁμοίως καὶ εὐχαριστίας ὅση δύναμις αὐτῷ ἀναπεμπῶει, καὶ ὁ λαὸς ἐπευφημεῖ λεγὼν τὸ Ἀμήν.—Just. Mart. Apol. 2, p. 98, ed. Par.

What could have been spoken with greater congruity or correspondency to the synagogue, abating the necessary observance of the eucharist, as proper to Christianity?

Here we have the scriptures read by one appointed for that purpose, as it was in the synagogue; after which follows the word of exhortation in use among them by the president of the assembly, answering to the ruler of the synagogue, after this, the public prayers performed by the same president, as among the Jews by the public minister of the synagogue, (as is already observed out of *Maimonides*,) then the solemn acclamation of *amen* by the people, the undoubted practice of the synagogue. To the same purpose *Tertullian*, who, if he had to set forth the practice of the synagogue, could scarcely have made choice of words more accommodated to that purpose. "We go together," saith he, "to the assembly and congregation, that we may, as if praying with hands joined, by our supplications, importune God. We are collected for the remembrance of the sacred writings; and if there be any thing that the nature of the present times induces us to make a matter of admonition or acknowledgement, we then with these holy words strengthen our faith, elevate our hope, establish our confidence, and no less by reiterated instructions, bind together the discipline of our teachers, and also at the same time, by church authority, we strengthen their exhortations and reproof. For as it is, with great propriety, judged by certain fathers, that if any one should be so delinquent, that he be banished from all intercourse of public prayer, church fellowship, and from every sacred privilege, that in the sight of God, it is a judgment going beforehand to his final sentence. They who are tried elders preside, having obtained that honour, not by price, but by testimony."<sup>1</sup> Where we have the *same orders for prayers, reading the scriptures according to occasions, and sermons made out of them for increase of faith, raising hope, strengthening confidence.* We have *the discipline of the church* answering the admo-

<sup>1</sup> Coimus in cœtum et congregationem, ut ad Deum quasi manu factâ præcationibus ambiamus orantes.—Cogimur ad divinarum literarum commemoracionem, si quid præsentium temporum qualitas aut præmonere cogit aut recognoscere. Certè fidem sanctus vocibus pascimus, spem erigimus, fiduciam figimus, disciplinam præceptorum nihilominus inculcationibus densamus; ibidem etiam exhortationes, castigationes, et censura divina. Nam et iudicatur magno cum pondere, ut apud certus de Dei conspectu, summumque futuri iudicii præjudicium est, si quis ita deliquerit, ut à communicatione orationis et conventû et omnis sancti commercii relegatur. Præsident probati quique seniores, honorem istum non pretio sed testimonio adepti.—Apologet. cap. 39.



nitions, and excommunication of the synagogue: and last of all, we have the *bench of elders sitting in these assemblies, and ordering the things belonging to them.*

Thus much for the general correspondency between the public service of the church and synagogue; they that would see more particulars, may read our learned *Mr. Thorndike's discourse of the service of God in religious assemblies*, whose design throughout is to make this out more at large; but we must only touch at these things by the way; as it were, look into the synagogue, and go on our way.

§ 11. We therefore proceed from their service, to their *custom of ordination*, which was evidently taken up by the Christians from a correspondency to the synagogue. For which we are first to take notice, that the rulers of the church under the gospel, do not properly succeed the priests and Levites under the law, whose office was ceremonial, and who were not admitted by any solemn ordination into their function, but succeeded by birth into their places; only the great *sanhedrim* did judge of their fitness, as to birth and body, before their entrance upon their function. So the Jewish doctors tell us, "In the stone parlour, the great *sanhedrim* of Israel sat, and did there judge the priests. The priest that was found defective, put on mourning garments, and so went forth; he that was not, put on white, and went in and ministered with the priests his brethren. And when no fault was found in the sons of *Aaron*, they observed a festival solemnity for it."<sup>1</sup> Three things are observable in this testimony: *First*, That the inquiry that was made concerning the priests was chiefly concerning the purity of their birth, and the freedom of their bodies from those defects which the law mentions, unless in the case of grosser and more scandalous sins, as *idolatry, murder, &c.*, by which they were excluded from the priestly office.<sup>2</sup> The *Second* is, That the great *sanhedrim* had this inspection over, and examination of the priests before their admission; for what that learned man *Const. L'Empereur* there conjectures, that there was an *ecclesiastical sanhedrim*<sup>3</sup> which did pass judgment on these things, is overthrown by the very words of the *Talmudists* already cited. The last thing observable is, the garments which the priests

של ישראל ישבת ורנהאת הכהנוה לשכת הגזיה כה היתה סנהדרין גרולה 1

—Cod. Middoth. c. 5, s. 3.

<sup>2</sup> V. Selden, de succes. ad. Pontiff. Ebre. l. 2, c. 2, 3, 5, & 6.

<sup>3</sup> Not in Cod. Middoth. p. 187, 188.

put on, viz. *white raiment* upon his approbation by the *sanhedrim*, and soon after they were admitted into the temple with great joy; to which our Saviour manifestly alludes, *Revelation* iii. 4, 5; "Thou hast a few names even in Sardis which have not defiled their garments, and they shall walk with me in white, for they are worthy. He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment." But the priests under the law, were never ordained by imposition of hands, as the elders and rulers of the synagogue were; and if any of them came to that office, they as well as others had peculiar designation and appointment to it. It is then a common mistake to think that the ministers of the gospel succeed by way of correspondency and analogy to the priests under the law; which mistake hath been the foundation and original of many errors. For when in the primitive church, the name of priests came to be attributed to gospel ministers from a fair compliance, (as was thought then,) of the Christians only to the name used both among Jews and Gentiles; in process of time, corruptions increasing in the church, those names that were used by the Christians by way of analogy and accommodation, brought in the things themselves primarily intended by those names; so by the metaphorical names of priests and altars, at last came up the sacrifice of the mass; without which, they thought the names of priests and altar were insignificant.

This mistake we see run all along through the writers of the church, as soon as the name priests was applied to the elders of the church, that they derived their succession from the priests of *Aaron's*<sup>1</sup> order. "The order of elders, (or presbyters,) took its beginning from the sons of Aaron. For they, who in the old testament were called priests, are now called presbyters; and they who were termed chiefs of the priests, are now called bishops, as Isidore and Ivo tell us."<sup>2</sup> So before them both, *Jerome*<sup>3</sup> in his known epistle to *Evagrius* says: "And that we may know that the apostolical traditions were taken from the Old Testament, we see, that what Aaron, his sons, and the Levites were in the temple, the bishop, presbyters and deacons claimed for themselves in the church."<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Isid. Hisp. de Ecclesia offic. l. 2, c. 7; Ivo Carnot. decret. p. 6, c. 11.

<sup>2</sup> Presbyterorum ordo exordium sumpsit à filiis Aaron. Qui enim sacerdotes vocabantur in veteri testamento, hi sunt qui nunc appellantur presbyteri: et qui nuncupabantur principes sacerdotum, nunc episcopi nominantur; as Isidorus and Ivo tell us.

<sup>3</sup> Ep. 85.

<sup>4</sup> Et ut sciamus traditiones apostolicas sumptas de veteri testamento, quod

From which words a learned Doctor, and strenuous assertor of the *jus divinum* of prelacy, questions not but to make *Jerome*, either apparently contradictory to himself, or else to assert, that the superiority of bishops above presbyters was by his confession an apostolical tradition. For saith he, "Nothing more evident can be said," and s. 2. "I confess myself unable to divine what can be replied to this, or with what device of sophistry an affirmation so plain can be perverted. But on the contrary, by those arguments which D. Blondell, Walo and Lewis Capell have made good, I have persuaded myself that nowhere can anything be opposed to a light so manifest."<sup>1</sup> In a case then so desperate as poor *Jerome* lies in, by a wound he is supposed to have given himself; when the priest and the Levite had passed him by, it will be a piece of charity in our going that way to consider a little his case, to see whether there be any hopes of recovery. We take it then for granted, that *Jerome* hath already said, that "the apostle taught clearly that presbyters and bishops were the same,"<sup>2</sup> in the same epistle which he proves there at large; and in another place: "Therefore as presbyters know that they, from the custom of the church, are subject to him who hath been placed over them, so bishops know that they, more from that usage, than from the fact of the Lord's setting it in order, are superior to presbyters, and ought to govern the church for the common welfare."<sup>3</sup> The difficulty now lies in the reconciling this with what is before cited out of the same author; some solve it by saying, that, in *Jerome's* sense, *apostolical tradition* and *ecclesiastical custom* are the same; as *Marcellus* saith the observation of lent is *apostolica traditio*, "apostolical tradition," and on the contrary *Luciferian* saith, it is *ecclesiæ consuetudo*, "the custom of the church;" so that by apostolical tradition, he meant not an apostolical institution, but an ecclesiastical custom. And if *Jerome* speak

Aaron et filii ejus atque Levitæ in templo fuerunt: hoc sibi episcopi et presbyteri atque diaconi vendicent in ecclesia.—Dissert. cap. 28.

<sup>1</sup> Nihil manifestius dici postuit. Quid ad hoc responderi possit, aut quo σοφου φαρμακον artificio deliniri aut deludi tam diserta affirmatio fateor ego me divinando assequi non posse; sed è contra ex iis quæ D. Blondellus, quæ Walo, quæ Ludov. Capellus hæc in re præstiterunt, mihi persuasissimum esse, nihil uspiam contra apertam lucem obtendi posse.

<sup>2</sup> Apostolus perspicuè docet, eosdem esse presbyteros quos et episcopos.

<sup>3</sup> Sicut ergo presbyteri sciunt se ex ecclesiæ consuetudine, ei qui sibi præpositus fuerit, esse subjectos; ita episcopi noverint se magis consuetudine, quam dispositionis dominica veritate presbyteris esse majores, et in commune debere ecclesiam regere.—Comment. in 1 Tit.

according to the general vogue, this solution may be sufficient notwithstanding what is said against it: for, according to that common rule of *Austin*, "Things that were generally in use, and no certain author assigned of them, were attributed to the apostles." Two things therefore I shall lay down for reconciling *Jerome* to himself: The *first* is, the difference between *traditio apostolica*, and *traditio apostolorum*, "apostolical tradition and the tradition of the apostles;" this latter doth indeed imply the thing spoken of to have proceeded from the apostles themselves; but the former may be applied to what was in practice after the apostles' times; and the reason of it is, that whatever was done in the primitive church, supposed to be agreeable to apostolical practice, was called apostolical.<sup>1</sup> Thence the bishop's see was called *sedes apostolica*, "the apostolic see," as *Tertullian* tells us, *ob consanguinitatem doctrinæ*, "on account of the affinity of doctrine." So *Sidonius Appollinaris* calls the see of *Lupus* the bishop of *Tricassium* in France, *sedem apostolicam*. And the bishops of the church were called *virī apostolici*, "apostolic men," and thence the *constitutions* which go under the apostles' names, "were so called," saith *Albaspinæus*,<sup>2</sup> "from antiquity. For when some of them were made by the successors of the apostles, who according to the testimony of *Tertullian*, were named apostolical men, at first they were called the canons of the apostles; then through the ignorance of certain men of the Latin church, and by taking away certain letters, were termed apostolical."<sup>3</sup> By which we see whatever was conceived to be of any great antiquity in the church, though it was not thought to have come from the apostles themselves, yet it was called *apostolical*; so that in this sense, *traditio apostolica* is no more than *traditio antiqua*, or *ab apostolicis viris profecta*, "ancient tradition, or tradition proceeding from apostolic men," which was meant rather of those that were conceived to succeed the apostles, than of the apostles themselves. But I answer, *secondly*, that granting *traditio apostolica* to mean *traditio apostolorum*, yet *Jerome* is far from contradicting himself, which is obvious to any that will read the words before, and consider their coherence. The scope and

<sup>1</sup> De præscrip. adv. hæret. c. 32; Epist. lib. 6; Ep. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Observat. lib. 1, c. 13.

<sup>3</sup> Ab antiquitate; nam cum eorum aliquot ab apostolorum successoribus (qui teste *Tertulliano* apostolici viri nominabantur,) facti essent, apostolicorum primum canones, deinde nonnullorum Latinorum ignorantia, aliquot literarum detractone, apostolorum dicti sunt.



drift of his epistle, is to chastise the arrogance of one who made deacons superior to presbyters. "I hear that a certain one hath broken out into such folly, that he ranks deacons before presbyters, that is, before bishops,"<sup>1</sup> and so spends a great part of the epistle, to prove that a bishop and presbyter are the same; and at last brings in these words, giving the account, why *Paul* to *Timothy* and *Titus* mentions no presbyters:<sup>2</sup> "Because an elder<sup>3</sup> is comprised in a bishop, either, therefore, a deacon is ordained from amongst the elders, as an elder is proved to be inferior to a deacon, to whom he advances from a less; or if an elder is ordained by a deacon, he is aware that in emolument he is inferior, but in the priesthood the more important character." And then presently adds, "that we may know that the apostolical traditions were taken from the old testament, we see that what Aaron, his sons, and the Levites were in the temple, the bishops, presbyters and deacons claimed for themselves." Is it imaginable that a man who had been proving all along the superiority of a presbyter above a deacon, because of his identity with a bishop in the apostles' times, should at the same time say, that a bishop was above a presbyter by the apostles' institution, and so directly overthrow all he had been saying before? Much as if one should go about to prove that the *præfectus urbis*, "governor or mayor of the city," and the *curator urbis*, "a police officer," in *Alexander Severus'* times, were the same office, and to that end should make use of the constitution of that emperor whereby he appointed fourteen *curatores urbis*, and set the *præfectus* in an office above them. Such an incongruity is scarce incident to a man of very ordinary esteem for intellectuals, much less to such a one as *Jerome* is reputed to be. The plain meaning, then, of *Jerome* is no more but this: "That as *Aaron* and his sons in the order of priesthood were above the Levites under the law: so the bishops

<sup>1</sup> Audio quendam in tantam erupisse vecordiam ut diaconos presbyteris, id est, episcopis anteferet.

<sup>2</sup> Quia in episcopo presbyter continetur. Aut igitur ex presbyterio ordinatur diaconus, ut presbyter minor diacono comprobetur, in quem crescat ex parvo; aut si ex diacono ordinatur presbyter, noverit se lucris minorem, sacerdotio esse majorem. And then presently adds, Et ut sciamus traditiones apostolicas sumptas de veteri testamento, quod Aaron et filii ejus atq. Levitæ in templo fuerunt, hoc sibi episcopi et presbyteri atque diaconi vendicent in ecclesia.

<sup>3</sup> Every one acquainted with church history, is aware that the same word *πρεσβυτερος*, was translated either an elder or presbyter; because originally they were considered to be the same. More recently some consider *πρεσβυτερος* to be a presbyter, or priest: though priest, more strictly speaking, signifies one who offers a sacrifice. See Parkhurst and Schleusner, in loc.—*Am. Ed.*

and presbyters in the order of the evangelical priesthood are above the deacons under the gospel." For the comparison runs not between *Aaron* and his sons under the law, and bishops and presbyters under the gospel; but between *Aaron* and his sons as one part of the comparison under the law, and the Levites under them as the other; so under the gospel, bishops and presbyters make one part of the comparison, answering to *Aaron* and his sons in that wherein they all agree, viz. *the order of priesthood*; and the other part under the gospel is that of deacons answering to the Levites under the law. The opposition is not then in the power of jurisdiction between bishops and priests, but between the same power of order, which is alike both in bishops and presbyters, (according to the acknowledgement of all,) to the office of deacons which stood in competition with them. Thus I hope we have left *Jerome* at perfect harmony with himself, notwithstanding the attempt made to make him so palpably contradict himself; which having thus done, we are at liberty to proceed in our former course; only hereby we see how unhappily those arguments succeed which are brought from the analogy between the *Aaronical* priesthood, to endeavour to set up a *jus divinum* of a parallel superiority under the gospel. All which arguments are taken off by this one thing we are now upon, viz. that the orders and degrees under the gospel, were not taken up from analogy to the temple, but to the synagogue: which we now make out as to ordination, in three things: *the manner of conferring it, the persons authorized to do it, the remaining effect of it upon the person receiving it.*

§ 12. *First*, For the manner of conferring it: that under the synagogue was done by laying on of hands; which was taken up among the Jews as a significative rite in the ordaining the elders among them, and thereby qualifying them either to be members of their *sanhedrim*, or teachers of the law. A twofold use I find of this symbolical rite, beside the solemn designation of the person on whom the hands are laid. The *first* is to denote the delivery of the person or thing thus laid hands upon, for the right, use, and peculiar service of God. And that I suppose was the reason of laying hands upon the beast under the law,<sup>1</sup> which was to be sacrificed, thereby noting their own parting with any right in it, and giving it up to be the *Lord's* for a sacrifice to him. Thus in the civil law this delivery is requisite in the transferring do-

<sup>1</sup> Levit. xvi.

minion, which they call *translatio de manu in manum*, "transferring from hand to hand." The *second* end of laying on of hands was the solemn invocation of the *Divine presence* and *assistance* to be upon, and with the person upon whom the hands are thus laid. For the hands with us being the instruments of action, they did by stretching out their hands upon the person, represent the efficacy of Divine power which they implored in behalf of the person thus designed. "For then they prayed that as the hand, the symbol of energy, was placed on that person, the Divine power might rest on him,"<sup>1</sup> as *Grotius* observes. Thence in all solemn prayers, wherein any person was particularly designed, they made use of this custom of imposition of hands: from which custom *Augustine* speaks, *Quid aliud est manuum impositio nisi oratio super hominem?* "What else is the imposition of hands, except praying over a man?" Thence when *Jacob* prayed over *Joseph's* children, he laid his hands upon them;<sup>2</sup> so when *Moses* prayed over *Joshua*.<sup>3</sup> The practice likewise our Saviour used in blessing children, healing the sick, and the apostles in conferring the gifts of the Holy Ghost; and from thence it was conveyed into the practice of the primitive church, who used it in any more solemn invocation of the name of God in behalf of any particular persons, *as over the sick, upon repentance and reconciliation to the church, in confirmation, and in matrimony*; which, (as *Grotius* observes,) is to this day used in the Abyssinian churches. But the most solemn and peculiar use of this imposition of hands among the Jews was in the designing of any persons for any public employment among them. Not as though the bare imposition of hands did confer any power upon the person, (no more than the bare delivery of a thing in law gives a legal title to it, without express transferring dominion with it,) but with that ceremony they joined those words whereby they did confer that authority upon them. Which were to this purpose *הִרָא אַתָּה כֹּהֵן, Ecce es tu Ordinatus*, "Behold, thou art ordained;" or *אֲנִי סוֹכֵךְ אוֹתָךְ, ego ordino te*, "I ordain thee," or *הִרָהוּ כֹהֵן, sis ordinatus*, "Be thou ordained," to which they added according to the authority they ordained them to, something peculiarly expressing it; whether it was for causes pecuniary, or binding and loosing, or

<sup>1</sup> Tunc enim orabant ut sic Dei efficacia esset super illum, sicut manus efficaciam symbolum, ei imponebatur.—Ep. ad Gallos ep. 154, et 166. Joh. Cord. et V. in Mat. ix. 19.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. xlviii. 14.

<sup>3</sup> Numb. xxvii. 23.

ruling in the synagogue. Which is a thing deserving consideration by those who use the right of imposing hands in ordination, without anything expressing that authority they convey by that ordination. This custom being so generally in use among the Jews in the time when the apostles were sent forth with authority for gathering and settling churches, we find them accordingly making use of this, according to the former practice, either in any more solemn invocation of the presence of God upon any persons, or designation and appointing them for any peculiar service or function. For we have no ground to think that the apostles had any peculiar command for laying on their hands upon persons in prayer over them, or ordination of them. But the thing itself being enjoined them, viz. the setting apart some persons for the peculiar work of attendance upon the necessities of the churches by them planted, they took up and made use of a laudable rite and custom then in use upon such occasions. And so we find the apostles using it in the solemn designation of some persons to the office of deacons,<sup>1</sup> answering to the פרוסן, "distributers," in the synagogue, whose office was to collect the moneys for the poor, and to distribute it among them. Afterwards we read it used upon an occasion not heard of in the synagogue, which was for the conferring the gifts of the Holy Ghost;<sup>2</sup> but although the occasion was extraordinary, yet supposing the occasion, the use of that rite in it was very suitable, inasmuch as those gifts did so much answer to the שכנה, "*Shekinah*, or Divine presence," and the רוח הקודש, "*Rooach Haquodesh*; the Holy Spirit, or the spiritual glory, and gifts," which the Jews conceived did rest upon those who were so ordained by imposition of hands. The next time we meet with this rite, was upon a peculiar designation to a particular service of persons already appointed by God for the work of the *ministry*, which is of *Paul* and *Barnabas* by the prophets and teachers at Antioch;<sup>3</sup> whereby God doth set forth the use of that rite of ordination to the Christian churches. Accordingly we find it after practised in the church, *Timothy* being ordained "by the laying on of the hands of the presbytery."<sup>4</sup> And *Timothy* hath direction given him for the right management of it afterwards, "Lay hands suddenly on no man."<sup>5</sup> For they that would interpret that

<sup>1</sup> Acts vi. 6.<sup>2</sup> Acts viii. 17.<sup>3</sup> Acts xiii. 3.<sup>4</sup> 1 Tim. iv. 4.<sup>5</sup> 1 Tim. v. 22.



of reconciling men to the church by that rite, must first give us evidence of so early an use of that custom, which doth not yet appear. But there is one place commonly brought to prove that the apostles in ordaining elders in the Christian churches, did not observe the Jewish form of laying on of hands, but observed a way quite different from the Jewish practice, viz. appointing them by the choice, consent and suffrages of the people. Which place is *Acts* xiv. 23, where it is said of *Paul* and *Barnabas* χειροτονησαντες δε αυτοις πρεσβυτερους κατα εκκλησιαν. We render it "ordaining them elders in every church;" but others, from the signification of the word χειροτονειν, would have it rendered, When they had "appointed" elders "by the suffrages of the people." But how little the people's power of ordination can be inferred from these words, will be evident to any one that shall but consider these things. First, that though χειροτονειν, "to vote by extending the hands, or by a show of hands," did originally signify the choosing by way of suffrage among the Greeks, yet before the time of *Luke's* writing this, the word was used for simple designation without that ceremony. So *Hesychius* interprets it by καθισειν, "to appoint," the word used of *Titus* for ordaining elders in every city;<sup>1</sup> and in *Demosthenes*<sup>2</sup> and others it occurs for νομοθετειν, and διαταττειν, "to decree and appoint;" and that sense of the word appears in Saint *Luke* himself, *Acts* x. 41, μαρτυροι τοις προεχειροτονημένοις απο του θεου, "Witnesses foreappointed of God." Many examples of this signification are brought by learned men of writers, before, and about the time when *Luke* wrote, from *Philo* *Judæus*, *Josephus*, *Appian*, *Lucian* and others.<sup>3</sup> But secondly, granting it used in the primary signification of the word, yet it cannot be applied to the people, but to *Paul* and *Barnabas*; for it is not said that the people did χειροτονειν, but that *Paul* and *Barnabas* did χειροτονειν: now wherever that word is used in its first signification, it is implied to be the action of the persons themselves giving suffrages, and not for other persons appointing by the suffrages of others; Thirdly, χειροτονειν may import no more than χειροθετειν, "to lay hands upon," and in that laying on of the hands must suppose the stretching them out. Which is only a common figure in scripture for the antecedent to be put for the consequent, or

<sup>1</sup> Titus i. 5.

<sup>2</sup> V. Demost. Phil. 1, et advers. Simon. et Ulpian in Schol.

<sup>3</sup> V. Selden, de Syned. l. 1, cap. 14. Grot. de Imp. Sum. Potest. c. 10, s. 5.

one part for the whole action; and concerning this sense of the word in ecclesiastical writers, see the large quotations in Bishop *Bilson*<sup>1</sup> to this purpose. *Fourthly*, It seems strangely improbable that the apostles should put the choice at that time into the hands of the people, when there were none fitted for the work the apostles designed them for; but whom the apostles did lay their hands on, by which the Holy Ghost fell upon them, whereby they were fitted and qualified for that work. The people then could no ways choose men for their abilities when their abilities were consequent to their ordination. So much to clear the manner of ordination to have been from the synagogue.

The *second* thing we consider, is, *the persons authorized to do it*: whom we view under a double respect, *before their liberties were bound up by compact among themselves*; and *after*. *First*, before they had restrained themselves of their own liberty, then the general rule for ordinations among them was *כל ב"י שנכנס כוהן להלכין*, "every one regularly ordained, himself had the power of ordaining his disciples," as *Maimonides*<sup>2</sup> affirms. To the same purpose is that testimony of the *Gemara Babylonia* in Master Selden, "Rabbi Abba Bar Jonah said, that in times of old, every one was wont to ordain his own disciples,"<sup>3</sup> to which purpose many instances are there brought. But it is generally agreed among them, that in the time of *Hillel* this course was altered, and they were restrained from their former liberty; in probability finding the many inconveniences of so common ordinations; or, as they say, out of their great reverence to the house of *Hillel*, they then agreed that none should ordain others without the presence of the *הנשיא*, "the prince of the *sanhedrim*," or a license obtained from him for that end; and it was determined that all ordinations without the consent of the prince of the *sanhedrim* should be looked upon as null and void; which is attested by the former authors. The same distinction may be observed under the gospel in reference to the fixed officers of the church; for we may consider them in their first state and period, as *Hierom*<sup>4</sup> tells us, *communi presbyterorum concilio ecclesiæ gubernabantur*, that "the churches were ruled by the common council of the presbyters:" before the jurisdiction

<sup>1</sup> Perpet. Govern. of Christ's Church, c. 7.

<sup>2</sup> Tract. San. cap. 4, s. 5. Ad tit. Sanhed. c. 1. De Syned. l. 2, c. 7. s. 1.

<sup>3</sup> חלמיריו אח ממנה ואחד אחד כל היה אמר רבי אב בראשונה.

<sup>4</sup> Hieronym. in 1 Tit.

of presbyters was restrained by mutual consent, in this instance doubtless, the presbyters enjoyed the same liberty that the presbyters among the Jews did, of ordaining other presbyters by the power with which they were invested at their own ordination. To which purpose we shall only at present take notice of the confession of two canonists, who are the highest among the papists, for defence of a distinct order of episcopacy. Yet *Gratian* himself confesseth, "We say, that deaconships and presbyterships are sacred orders: and it is reported that the primitive church had these for its only officers."<sup>1</sup> And *Johannes Semeca* in his *Gloss* upon the *canon law*: "they say, indeed, that in the first primitive church, the office of bishops and priests were the same; but in the second primitive church," (*i. e.* in the second epoch of the primitive church,) "both the names and the offices began to be distinguished."<sup>2</sup> Here we have a distinction of the primitive church very agreeable both to the opinion of *Hierom*, and the matter we are now upon; in the first primitive church, the presbyters all acted in common for the welfare of the church, and either did or might ordain others to the same authority with themselves; because the intrinsical power of order is equally in them, and in those who were after appointed governors over presbyteries. And the collation of orders doth come from the power of order, and not merely from the power of jurisdiction. It being likewise fully acknowledged by the schoolmen,<sup>3</sup> that bishops are not superior above presbyters, as to the power of order. But the clearest evidence of this, is in the church of Alexandria, of which *Hierom* speaks: "For at Alexandria, from *Mark* the evangelist to *Heracles* and *Dionysius*, bishops, that the presbyters always elected one from amongst themselves, and having placed him in a higher rank, named him bishop: after the manner that an army chooses its general, the deacons select one from amongst themselves, whom they know to be industrious, and him they call archdeacon."<sup>4</sup> That *learned*

<sup>1</sup> Sacros ordines dicimus diaconatum et presbyteratum; hos quidem solos ecclesia primitiva habuisse dicitur.—Dist. 60, c. Mull. ex urb. Pap.

<sup>2</sup> Dicunt quidem quod in ecclesia prima primitiva commune erat officium episcoporum et sacerdotum, et nomina erant communia.—Sed in secundâ primitivâ cœperunt distingui et nomina et officia.—Dist. 95, Gloss.

<sup>3</sup> V. Francis Mason's Defence of Ordination of Presbyters.

<sup>4</sup> Nam Alexandria à Marco evangelistâ usq; ad Heraclum et Dionysium episcopos, presbyteri semper unum ex se electum, in excelsiori gradu collocatum, episcopum nominabant; quomodo si exercitus imperatorem faciat, aut diaconi eligant de se quem industrium noverint, et archidiaconum vocent.—Ep. 85, ad Evagrium.

*doctor* who would persuade us that the presbyters did only make choice of the person, but the ordination was performed by other bishops, would do well *first* to tell us, who and where those bishops in Egypt were, who did consecrate or ordain the bishop of Alexandria<sup>1</sup> after his election by the presbyters, especially, while Egypt remained but one province, under the government of the *præfectus Augustalis*. *Secondly*, how had this been in the least pertinent to *Hierom's* purpose to have made a particular instance in the church of Alexandria, for that which was common to all other churches besides? For the old rule of the *canon law*<sup>2</sup> for bishops was, *electio clericorum est, consensus principis, petitio plebis*, "the election of the clergy is the consent of the prince and the petition of the people." *Thirdly*, this election in *Hierom* must imply the conferring the power and authority whereby the bishop acted. For, *first*, the first setting up of his power is by *Hierom* attributed to this choice, as appears by his words: "For after one was elected, who was set over the rest, a remedy was established against schism, lest one drawing to himself a party, should rend the church of Christ."<sup>3</sup> Whereby it is evident *Hierom* attributes the first original of that *exsors potestas*, "power granted by choice," as he calls it elsewhere, in the bishop above presbyters, not to any apostolical institution, but to the free choice of the presbyters themselves, which doth fully explain what he means by *consuetudo ecclesiæ*, "the custom of the church," before spoken of, viz. that which came up by a voluntary act of the governors of churches themselves. *Secondly*, it appears that by election, he means conferring authority, by the instances he brings to that purpose: as the Roman armies choosing their emperors, who had then no other power but what they received by the length of the sword; and the deacons choosing their arch-deacon, who had no other power but what was merely conferred by the choice of the college of deacons. To which we may add what *Eutychius*, the patriarch of Alexandria, saith in his *Origines Ecclesiæ Alexandrinæ*,<sup>4</sup> published in Arabic by our most learned *Selden*, who expressly affirms, "that the twelve presbyters constituted by *Mark* upon the vacancy of

<sup>1</sup> V. Selden. ad Eutych. n. 22, p. 143.

<sup>2</sup> Dist. 62, sect. hæc.

<sup>3</sup> Quod autem postea unus electus est, qui cæteris præponeretur, in schismatis remedium factum est, ne unusquisque ad se trahens Christi ecclesiam rumperet. —Advers. Lucil.

<sup>4</sup> Origin. p. 29, 30.



the see, did choose out of their number one to be head over the rest, and the other eleven did lay their hands upon him, and blessed him, and made him patriarch." Neither is the authority of *Eutychius* so much to be slighted in this case, coming so near to *Hierom* as he doth, who doubtless, had he told us that *Mark* and *Anianus*, &c. did all there without any presbyters, might have had the good fortune to have been quoted with as much frequency and authority as the anonymous author of the martyrdom of *Timothy* in *Photius*,<sup>1</sup> (who there unhappily follows the story of the seven sleepers,) or the author of the *Apostolical constitutions*, whose credit is everlastingly blasted by the excellent *Mr. Duillè De Pseudepigraphis Apostolorum*; "on the counterfeited writings of the apostles," so much doth men's interest tend to the enhancing or abating the esteem and credit both of the dead and the living. By these we see, that where no positive restraints from consent and choice, for the unity and peace of the church, have restrained men's liberty as to their external exercise of the power of order or jurisdiction, every one being himself advanced into the authority of a church governor, hath an internal power of conferring the same on persons fit for it. To which purpose "the laying on of the hands of the presbytery,"<sup>2</sup> is no ways impertinently alleged, although we suppose *St. Paul* to concur in the action, (as it is most probable he did,) because, if the presbytery had nothing to do in the ordination, to what purpose were their hands laid on him? Was it only to be witnesses of the fact, or to signify their consent? both those might have been done without their use of that ceremony; which will scarcely be instanced in, to be done by any but such as had power to confer what was signified by that ceremony. We come, therefore, to the *second* period or state of the church, when the former liberty was restrained, by some act of the church itself, for preventing the inconveniences which might follow the too common use of the former liberty of ordinations, so *Antonius de Rosellis* fully expresseth my meaning in this; "Every presbyter and presbyters did ordain indifferently, and thence arose schisms:"<sup>3</sup> thence the liberty was restrained and reserved peculiarly to some persons who did act in the several presbyteries, as the *הנשיא* or "Prince" of the *sanhedrim*, without whose presence

<sup>1</sup> Biblioth. Cod. 254.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Tim. iv. 14.

<sup>3</sup> Quilibet presbyter et presbyteri ordinabant indiscretè, et schismata oriebantur.—Rosellis de pot. Imper. et Papæ. p. 4, c. 18.

no ordination by the church was to be looked on as regular. The main controversy is, when this restraint began, and by whose act; whether by any of the apostles, or only by the prudence of the church itself, as it was with the *sanhedrim*. But in order to our peace, I see no such necessity of deciding it, both parties granting that in the church such a restraint was laid on the liberty of ordaining presbyters; and the exercise of that power may be restrained still, granting it to be radically and intrinsically in them. So that this controversy is not such as should divide the church. For those that are for ordinations only by a superior order in the church, acknowledging a radical power for ordination in presbyters, which may be exercised in the case of necessity, do thereby make it evident, that none who grant that, do think that any positive law of God hath forbidden presbyters the full power of ordination; for then it must be wholly unlawful, and so in case of necessity it cannot be valid. Which doctrine I dare with some confidence assert to be a stranger to our church of England, as shall be largely made appear afterwards. On the other side, those who hold ordinations by presbyters lawful, do not therefore hold them necessary, but it being a matter of liberty, and not of necessity, (Christ having nowhere said that none but presbyters shall ordain,) this power then may be restrained by those who have the care of the church's peace; and matters of liberty being restrained, ought to be submitted to, in order to the church's peace. And therefore some have well observed the difference between the opinions of *Hierom* and *Arius*. For as to the matter itself, I believe upon the strictest inquiry *Medina's*<sup>1</sup> judgment will prove true, that *Hierom*, *Austin*, *Ambrose*, *Sedulius*, *Primasius*, *Chrysostom*, *Theodore*, *Theophylact*, were all of *Arius's* judgment, as to the identity of both name and order of bishops and presbyters in the primitive church: but here lay the difference, *Arius* from hence proceeded to separation from bishops and their churches, because they were bishops. And *Blondell* well observes that the main ground why *Arius*<sup>2</sup> was condemned, was for unnecessary separation from the church of *Sebastia*, and those bishops too who agreed with him in other things, as *Eustathius* the bishop did: whereas, had his mere opinion about bishops been the ground of his being condemned, there can be no reason assigned, why this heresy, if it was then thought so, was not

<sup>1</sup> Mich. *Medinas de sacr. hom. orig. et contin.* l. 1, cap. 5.

<sup>2</sup> *Præf.* p. 58.

mentioned either by *Socrates*, *Theodoret*, *Sozomen*, or *Eva-*  
*grius*, before whose time he lived; when yet they mention the  
*Eustathians*, who were cotemporaries with him. But for  
*Epiphanius* and *Augustine*, who have listed him in the roll  
of heretics, it either was for the other heretical opinions main-  
tained by him, or they took the name *heretic*, (as it is evident  
they often did,) for one, who, upon a matter of different  
opinion from the present sense of the church, did proceed to  
make separation from the unity of the catholic church, which  
I take to be the truest account of the reputed heresy of *Arius*.  
For otherwise it is likely that *Jerome*, who maintained so  
great correspondence and familiarity with *Epiphanius*, and  
thereby could not but know what was the cause why *Arius*  
was condemned for heresy, should himself run into the same  
heresy, and endeavour not only to assert, but to avouch and  
maintain it against the judgment of the whole church? *Jerome*  
therefore was not ranked with *Arius*, because, though he held  
the same opinion as to bishops and presbyters, yet he was far  
from the consequence of *Arius*, that therefore all bishops  
were to be separated from; nay, he was so far from thinking  
it necessary to cause a schism in the church, by separating  
from bishops, that his opinion is clear, that the first institution  
of them, was for preventing schisms, and therefore for peace  
and unity he thought their institution very useful in the church  
of God. And among all those fifteen testimonies produced by  
a learned writer out of *Jerome* for the superiority of bishops  
above presbyters, I cannot find one that doth found it upon  
any *divine right*, but only upon their convenience of such an  
order for the peace and unity of the church of God, which is  
his meaning in that place most produced to this purpose: "the  
safety of the church depends on the dignity of the chief minis-  
ter, to whom, if election and eminent power are not given by  
all, there will be as many schisms in the churches as there  
are ministers."<sup>1</sup> Where nothing can be more evident than  
that he would have some supereminent power attributed to  
the bishop for preventing schisms in the church. But granting  
some passages may have a more favourable aspect towards  
the superiority of bishops over presbyters in his other writings,  
I would fain know whether a man's judgment must be taken,  
from occasional and incidental passages, or from designed and

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesiæ salus in summi sacerdotis dignitate pendet, cui si non exors quæ-  
dam et ab omnibus eminens detur potestas, tot in ecclesis efficiuntur schismata,  
quot sacerdotes.—Dial. ad Lucifer.

set discourses; which is as much as to ask, whether the lively representation of a man by picture, may be best taken, when in haste of other business he passeth by us, giving only a glance of his countenance, or when he purposely and designedly sits, in order to that end that his countenance may be truly represented? Besides, it is well known that *Hierom* in his commentaries on scripture, (where he doth not expressly declare his own opinion,) doth often transcribe what he finds in others, without setting down the name of any author he had it from. For which we have this ingenuous confession in his epistle to *Augustine*: “I would simply confess, that I have read all these passages,” (speaking of former commentaries,) “and having preserved many in my mind, a scribe being sent for, I dictated, without remembering the order, the words, or exact meaning, either that which was my own, or what was another’s.”<sup>1</sup> A strange way of writing commentaries on scripture, wherein a man having jumbled other men’s notions together in his brain, by a kind of lottery, draws out what next comes to hand, without any choice: yet this we see was his practice, and therefore he puts *Austin* to this hard task of examining what all other men had written before him, and whether he had not transcribed out of them, before he would have him charge him with anything which he finds in his commentaries. How angry then would that hasty adversary have been, if men had told him he had contradicted himself in what he writes on the forty-fifth *Psalms* about bishops, if it be compared with his commentaries on *Titus*, where he professeth to declare his opinion, or his epistles to *Evagrius* and *Oceanus*! But yet something is pleaded even from those places in *Hierom*, wherein he declares his opinion more fully, as though his opinion was only, that Christ himself did not appoint episcopacy, which (they say) he means by *Dominica dispositio*, “the order designed by the Lord,” but that the apostles did it, which, in opposition to the former, he calls *ecclesiæ consuetudo*, but elsewhere explains it by *traditio apostolica*; and this they prove by two things; *First*, The occasion of the institution of episcopacy, which is thus set down by him, “before that through the instigation of the devil, fancies existed in religion, and it was said amongst the people, I am of Paul, I of Apollos, but I of Cephas, the

<sup>1</sup> Itaque ut simpliciter fatear, legi hæc omnia et in mente mea plurima conservans: accito notario, vel mea vel aliena dictavi, nec ordinis, nec verborum interdum, nec sensuum memor.—Ep. August. ep. 11.



churches were governed by a common council of the elders.”<sup>1</sup> Thence it is argued, that the time of this institution of bishops was when it was said at Corinth, *I am of Paul, I of Apollos, and I of Cephæ*; which was certainly in apostolical times. But to this it is answered: *First*, that it is impossible *Hierom’s* meaning should be restrained to that individual time, because the arguments which *Hierom* brings that the name and office of bishops and presbyters were the same, were from things done after this time. *Paul’s* first epistle to the Corinthians, wherein he reproves their schisms, was written according to *Ludovicus Cappellus*,<sup>2</sup> in the twelfth year of *Claudius*, of Christ fifty-one, after which *Paul* wrote his epistle to *Titus*, from whose words *Hierom* grounds his discourse; but most certainly *Paul’s* epistle to the Philippians was not written till *Paul* was prisoner at Rome; the time of writing of it is placed by *Cappellus* in the third of *Nero*; of Christ fifty-six; by *Blondell* fifty-seven; by our *Lightfoot* fifty-nine; by all, long after the former to the Corinthians; yet from the first verse of this epistle, *Heriom* fetcheth one of his arguments. So *Paul’s* charge to the elders at Miletus, *Peter’s* epistle to the dispersed Jews, were after that time too, yet from these are fetched two more of *Hierom’s* arguments. Had he then so little common sense, as to say, that episcopacy was instituted upon the schism at Corinth, and yet bring all his arguments for parity, after the time that he sets for the institution of episcopacy? But, *secondly*, *Hierom* doth not say, “when it was said amongst the Corinthians, I am of Paul, &c., but when it was said amongst the people, I am of Paul, &c;”<sup>3</sup> so that he speaks not of that particular schism, but of a general and universal schism abroad among most people, which was the occasion of appointing bishops; and so speaks of others imitating the schism and language of the Corinthians. *Thirdly*, had episcopacy been instituted on the occasion of the schism at Corinth, certainly of all places, we should the soonest have heard of a bishop at Corinth for the remedying of it; and yet almost of all places, those *heralds* that derive the succession of bishops from the apostles’ times, are the most plunged, whom to fix on at Corinth. And they that can find any one

<sup>1</sup> Antequam diaboli instinctu, studia in religione fierent, et diceretur in populis; ego sum Pauli, ego Apollos, ego autem Cephæ, communi presbyterorum consilio ecclesiæ gubernabantur.

<sup>2</sup> Hist. Apostolica. p. 70.

<sup>3</sup> Cum diceretur apud Corinthios, ego sum Pauli, etc. sed cum diceretur in populis, ego sum Pauli, etc.

single bishop at Corinth at the time when *Clemens* wrote his epistle to them, (about another schism as great as the former, which certainly had not been according to their opinion, if a bishop had been there before,) must have better eyes and judgment, than the deservedly admired *Grotius*, who brings this in his epistle to *Bignonius* as one argument of the undoubted antiquity of that epistle: "Because he nowhere makes mention of the authority of that free choice of bishops, which, according to the custom of the church, began after the death of *Mark*, at Alexandria, and from that example, elsewhere to be introduced; but evidently, as *Paul* the apostle shows, that the churches were governed by the common council of the presbyters, who, and the bishops themselves, are reported to have been governed by St. *Paul*."<sup>1</sup> What could be said with greater freedom, that there was no such episcopacy then at Corinth? *Fourthly*, They who use this argument, are greater strangers to St. *Jerome's* language than they would seem to be: whose custom it is upon incidental occasions to accommodate the phrase and language of scripture to them: as when he speaks of *Chrysostom's* fall, *cecidit Babylon, cecidit*, "Babylon is fallen, is fallen;" of the bishops of Palestine, *multi utroque claudicant pede*, "many are lame of both feet;" of the Roman clergy, *pharisæorum conclamavit senatus*, "the senate of the Pharisees cried out;" but which is most clear to our purpose, he applies this very speech to the men of his own time; "when we all speak not the same thing, but one says one thing, and another another, I am of *Paul*, I of *Apollos*, and I of *Cephas*, we divide the unity of the spirit, and we rend it into parties and members."<sup>2</sup> All which instances are produced by *Blondell*,<sup>3</sup> but have the good fortune to be passed over without being taken notice of. But supposing, say they, that it was not till after the schism at Corinth, yet it must needs be done by the apostles, else how could it be said to be "decreed throughout the whole world, that one chosen from amongst the presbyters, should be placed over the rest? For how (saith a learned man) could it hap-

<sup>1</sup> Quod nusquam meminit exsortis illius episcoporum auctoritatis; quæ ecclesiæ consuetudine, post Marci mortem Alexandriæ, atq; eo exemplo alibi, introduci cœpit; sed planè, ut Paulus apostolus ostendit, ecclesias communi presbyterorum, qui iidem omnes et episcopi ipsi Paulo, dicuntur consilio fuisse gubernatas.—Ep. ad Gal. ep. 162.

<sup>2</sup> Quando non id ipsum omnes loquimur, et alius dicit, ego sum Pauli, ego Apollo, ego Cephæ, dividimus spiritus unitatem, et eam in partes et membra discerpimus.

<sup>3</sup> Apol. p. 4.

pen, that it should be decreed throughout the whole world, when to decree that, no general council had been assembled, if it had not been done by the apostles themselves, propagating the faith throughout the world, and with that faith appointing this rule for the government of churches?"<sup>1</sup> So that he conceives, so general an order could not be made, unless the apostles themselves at that time were the authors of it.

But *first, Jerome in toto orbe decretum est*, "it hath been decreed throughout the whole world," relates not to an antecedent order, which was the ground of the institution of episcopacy, but to the universal establishment of that order which came up upon the occasion of so many schisms, it is something therefore consequent upon the first setting up episcopacy, which is the general obtaining of it in the churches of Christ, when they saw its usefulness in order to the church's peace; therefore the emphasis lies not in *decretum est*, but *in toto orbe*; noting how suddenly this order met with universal acceptance, when it first was brought up in the church after the apostles' death. Which that it was *Jerome's* meaning, appears by what he saith after, "but by degrees, that the nurseries of dissensions might be plucked up, the care of this was transferred to one."<sup>2</sup> Where he notes the gradual obtaining of it: which I suppose was thus, according to his opinion; first in the college of presbyters appointed by the apostles, there being a necessity of order, there was a president among them who had *ἀνθεντιαν του πργαματος*, "an authority residing in himself over the affair," as the president of the senate, i. e. did moderate the affairs of the assembly, by proposing matters to it, gathering voices, being the first in all matters of concernment, but he had not *ἀνθεντιαν των συνεδρων*, "the inherent authority of the council," as *Casaubon*<sup>3</sup> very well distinguisheth them, i. e. had no power over his fellow presbyters, but that still resided in the college or body of them. After this when the apostles were taken out of the way, who kept the main power in their own hands of ruling the several presbyteries, or delegated some to do it, (who had a main hand in the

<sup>1</sup> *Toto orbe decretum, ut unus de presbyteris electus superponeretur cæteris? Quomodo enim (saith a learned man) fieri potuit, ut toto hoc orbe decerneretur, nullo jam œcumenico concilio ad illud decernendum congregato, si non ab apostolis ipsis, fidem toto orbe promulgantibus, et cum fide hanc regendi ecclesias formam constituentibus factum sit?*

<sup>2</sup> *Paulatim verò (ut dissensionum plantaria evellerentur) ad unum omnem solitudinum esse dclatam.*

<sup>3</sup> *Exercit. ad Annal. Eccles. 15, s. 12.*

planting churches with the apostles, and thence are called in scripture sometimes fellow-labourers in the Lord, and sometimes evangelists, and by *Theodore* apostles, but of a second order,) after, I say, these were deceased, and the main power left in the presbyteries, the several presbyters enjoying an equal power among themselves, especially being many in one city, thereby great occasion was given to many schisms, partly by the bandying of the presbyters one against another, partly by the sidings of the people with some against the rest, partly by the too common use of the power of ordinations in presbyters, by which they were more able to increase their own party, by ordaining those who would join with them, and by this means to perpetuate schisms in the church; upon this, when the wiser and graver sort considered the abuses following the promiscuous use of this power of ordination; and withal having in their minds the excellent frame of the government of the church under the apostles, and their deputies, and for preventing of future schisms and divisions among themselves, they unanimously agreed to choose one out of their number, who was best qualified for the management of so great a trust, and to devolve the exercise of the power of ordination and jurisdiction on him; yet so as that he act nothing of importance, without the consent and concurrence of the presbyters, who were still to be as the common council to the bishop. This I take to be the true and just account of the original of episcopacy in the primitive church according to *Jerome*; which model of government thus contrived and framed, sets forth to us a most lively character of that great wisdom and moderation, which then ruled the heads and hearts of the primitive Christians; and which, when men have searched and studied all other ways, (the abuses incident to this government, through the corruptions of men and times being retrenched,) will be found the most agreeable to the primitive form, both as asserting the due interest of the presbyteries, and allowing the due honour of episcopacy, and by the joint harmony of both carrying on the affairs of the church with the greatest unity, concord and peace. Which form of government I cannot see any possible reason can be produced by either party, why they may not with cheerfulness embrace it.

*Secondly*, another evidence that *Jerome* by *decretum est*, "it is or hath been decreed," did not mean an order of the apostles themselves, is by the words which follow the matter of the decree, viz. *Ut unus de presbyteris electus superponeretur cæteris*, "that one elected from amongst the presbyters,



should be placed over the rest," one chosen not only *out of*, but *by* the presbyters, should be set above the rest; for so *Jerome* must be understood; for the apostles could not themselves choose out of all presbyteries one person to be set above the rest; and withal the instance brought of the church of *Alexandria* makes it evident to be meant of the choosing by the presbyters, and not by the apostles. Besides, did *Jerome* mean choosing by the apostles, he would have given some intimations of the hand the apostles had in it: which we see not in him the least ground for. And as for that pretence, that *ecclesiæ consuetudo* is *apostolica traditio*, "the custom of the church is the apostolical tradition," I have already made it appear that *apostolica traditio* in *Jerome*, is nothing else but *consuetudo ecclesiæ*, which I shall now confirm by a pregnant and unanswerable testimony out of *Jerome*<sup>1</sup> himself: "Let every province abound in its own sense, and account of the ordinances of their ancestors as of apostolical laws."<sup>2</sup> Nothing could have been spoken more fully to open to us what *Jerome* means by apostolical traditions, viz. the practice of the church in former ages, though not coming from the apostles themselves. Thus we have once more cleared *Jerome* and the truth together; I only wish all that are of his judgment for the practice of the primitive church, were of his temper for the practice of their own; and while they own not episcopacy as necessary by a divine right, yet, (being duly moderated, and joined with presbyteries,) they may embrace it, as not only a lawful, but very useful constitution in the church of God. By which we may see what an excellent temper may be found out, most fully consonant to the primitive church for the management of ordinations, and church power, viz. by the presidency of the bishop and the concurrence of the presbytery. For the top-gallant of episcopacy can never be so well managed for the right steering the ship of the church, as when it is joined with the under sails of a moderate presbytery. So much shall suffice to speak here as to the power of ordination, which we have found to be derived from the synagogue, and the customs observed in it, transplanted into the church.

§ 14. There are yet some things remaining as to ordination, wherein the church did imitate the synagogue, which will

<sup>1</sup> Hieron. ep. 20, ad. Lucinum.

<sup>2</sup> Unaquæque provincia abundet in sensu suo, et præcepta majorum leges apostolicas arbitretur.

admit of a quick despatch, as *the number of the persons*, which under the synagogue were always to be at least *three*. This being a fundamental constitution among the Jews, as appears by their writings, כְּמִיכָה וְקִנִּים כְּשִׁלְשָׁה, “ordination of presbyters by laying on of hands must be done by three at the least.”<sup>1</sup> To the same purpose *Maimohides* ואֵין סִמְכִין אֶלָּא בְּשִׁלְשָׁה סְמִיכָה שֶׁהִיא מִנֵּי הַזִּקְנִים לְרִיבּוֹנוֹת, “They did not ordain any by imposition of hands into a power of judicature without the number of three.”<sup>2</sup> Which number *Peter Gallatinus* and *Postellus* conceive necessary to be all ordained themselves; but *Master Selden*<sup>3</sup> thinks it was sufficient if there were but one of that number so ordained, who was to be as principal in the action; whose opinion is favoured by *Maimonides*, who adds to the words last cited out of him; *of which three, one at the least must be ordained himself*. Let us now see the parallel in the church of God. The first solemn ordination of elders under the gospel, which some think to be set down as a pattern for the church to follow, is that we read of, *Acts* xiii. 1, 2, 3. Which was performed by three; for we read in the first verse, that there were in the church at Antioch, five prophets and teachers, *Barnabas, Simeon, Lucius, Manaen* and *Saul*; of these five, the Holy Ghost said, that *two must be separated for the work whereto God had called them*, which were, *Barnabas* and *Saul*; there remain only the other three, *Simeon, Lucius*, and *Manaen* to lay their hands on them, and ordain them to their work. Accordingly those who tell us that *James* was ordained bishop of Jerusalem, do mention the three apostles who concurred in the ordaining of him.<sup>4</sup> But most remarkable for this purpose is the canon of the *Nicene council*, wherein this number is set down as the regular number for the ordination of bishops, without which it was not accounted canonical. The words are these: “The ordination of a bishop should, if possible, be performed by all the bishops of the province, which if it cannot easily be done, either through some urgent necessity, or the tediousness of the way, three bishops at least must be there for the doing it, which may be sufficient for the ordination, if those that are absent do express their consent, and by letters approve of the doing of it.”<sup>5</sup> To the same purpose

<sup>1</sup> Misna et Gemar. tit. Sanhedr. c. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Tit. Sanhed. cap. 4, s. 3, Arcan. Cath. Veritat. l. 4, cap. 6.

<sup>3</sup> De Concord. orbis. p. 377.

<sup>4</sup> Euseb. hist. Eccles. lib 2, cap. 1.

<sup>5</sup> Επισκοπον προσηκει μαλιστα μεν απο παντων, των εν τη επαρχια καθισθαι ει δε

*Theodoret* says, "The canons enjoin all the bishops of the province to be present at the ordination of one: and forbid the ordination of any without three being present at it."<sup>1</sup> Thus we see how the constitution of the synagogue was exactly observed in the church, as to the number of the persons concurring to a regular ordination. The last thing as to ordination bearing analogy to the synagogue, is the *effect of this ordination upon the person*: it was the custom of the Jews, to speak of all that were legally ordained among them, ושרתה, שכנה עליהן "and the divine presence or Schekinah rested upon them," which sometimes they called רוח הקודש, *Rooach Haquodosh*, "the Holy Spirit," supposed to be in a peculiar manner present after this solemn separation of them from others in the world, and dedication of them unto God. Answerable to this may that of our Saviour be, when he gives his apostles authority to preach the gospel, he doth it in that form of words, "Receive ye the Holy Ghost,"<sup>2</sup> and then gives them the power of binding and loosing, usually conveyed in the Jewish ordinations. "Whose sins ye remit, they are remitted; and whose sins ye retain, they are retained."<sup>3</sup> So that as under the law, they by their ordination received a moral faculty or right to exercise that power they were ordained to: so under the gospel, all who are ordained according to gospel rules, have a right, authority and power conveyed thereby for the dispensing of the word and sacraments. Which right and power must not be conceived to be an internal indelible character, as the papists groundlessly conceive, but a moral legal right, according to the laws of Christ, because the persons ordaining do not act in it in a natural, but a moral capacity, and so the effect must be moral and not physical, which they must suppose it to be, who make it a character, and that indelible. Thus much may serve to clear how ordination in all its circumstances was derived from the Jewish synagogue.

§ 15. The other thing remaining to be spoken to, as to the correspondence of the church with the synagogue in its constitution is, what order the apostles did settle in the several churches of their plantation for the ruling and ordering the

δυσχερές εἰν το τοιούτων, ἢ δια καταπειγουσαν ἀναγκήν; ἢ δια μικροῦ ὁδοῦ, ἐξ ἅπαντος τρεῖς ἐπὶ το αὐτο συναγομένους; συμφηφῶν γινόμενων καὶ τῶν ἀπαντῶν καὶ συντιθεμένων δια γραμματικῶν, τότε τὴν χειροτονίαν ποιεῖσθαι.—Can. 4. Hist. Eccles. lib. 5, c. 23.

<sup>1</sup> Κανόνες πάντας συγκυλεῖσθαι τῆς ἐπαρχίας τοὺς ἐπίσκοπους κελεῦσθαι, καὶ αὐ παλιν διχα τειὼν ἐπίσκοπων ἐπίσκοποι χειροτονίαν ἀπαγορεύουσι γίνεσθαι.—V. Justell. not. in Canon. Universæ Eccles. p. 140.

<sup>2</sup> John xx. 21

<sup>3</sup> John xx. 29.

affairs of them. Before I come to speak so much to it as will be pertinent to our present purpose and design, we may take notice of the same name for church rulers under the gospel, which there was under the synagogue, viz. that of *presbyters*. The name *presbyter*, as the Hebrew וְקֵן, “an elder,” though it originally imported age, yet by way of connotation it hath been looked on as a name both of dignity and power. Because wisdom was supposed to dwell with a multitude of years; therefore persons of age and experience were commonly chosen to places of honour and trust, and thence the name importing age doth likewise carry dignity along with it. Thence we read in the time of *Moses* how often the *elders* were gathered together.<sup>1</sup> Thence *Eliezer* is called וְקֵן כֹּהֵן, *Gen.* xxiv. 2, which the Greek renders πρεσβύτερος της οικίας, the *seignior domo*, “the chief officer in his house;” and so we read *Gen.* l. 6, וְקֵן אֲרֵץ מִצְרַיִם, “the elders of the land of Egypt.” So the elders of Midian, the elders of Israel, the elders of the cities; so among the Greeks γερουσία, “or assembly of elders,” for their council of state: and among the Latins *senatus*, and our Saxon *aldermen*, in all importing both age and honour and power together. But among the Jews, in the times of the apostles, it is most evident that the name πρεσβύτεροι, imported not only dignity but power; the presbyters among the Jews, having a power both of judging and teaching given them by their *semicha* or “ordination.” Now under the gospel the apostles retaining the name and the manner of ordination, but not conferring that judiciary power by it, which was in use among the Jews, to show the difference between the law and the gospel, it was requisite some other name should be given to the governors of the church, which should qualify the importance of the word presbyters to a sense proper to a gospel state; which was the original of giving the name επισκοποι, “overseers” to the governors of the church under the gospel: a name importing duty more than honour, and not a title above presbyter, but rather used by way of diminution and qualification of the power implied in the name of presbyter. Therefore to show what kind of power and duty the name presbyter imported in the church, the office conveyed by that name is called επισκοπή, “a visitation, the office of superintendence,” and presbyters are said επισκοπεῖν, “to oversee, inspect,” 1 Pet. v. 2, where it is opposed to that κατακυριεύειν τῶν κληρῶν, “lording it over the

<sup>1</sup> Exod. iii. 16, 18; iv. 29; xii. 21; xvii. 5; xviii. 12, &c.



people," as was the custom of the presbyters among the Jews. So that if we determine things by importance of words and things signified by them, the power of ordination was proper to the name *πρεσβυτερος* and not *επισκοπος*, because the former name did not then import that power. We come therefore from the names to the things then implied by them; and the offices established by the apostles for the ruling of churches. But my design being not to dispute the arguments of either party, (viz. those who conceive the apostles settled the government of the church in an absolute parity; or else by superiority and subordination among the settled officers of the church,) but to lay down those principles which may equally concern both, in order to accommodation: I find not myself at present concerned to debate what is brought on either side for the maintaining their particular opinion any further than thereby the apostles' intentions are brought to have been to bind all future churches to observe that individual form they conceived was in practice then.

All that I have to say then, concerning the course taken by the apostles in settling the government of the churches, (under which will be contained the full resolution of what I promised, as to the correspondency to the synagogue in the government of churches,) lies in these three propositions, which I now shall endeavour to clear, viz: that neither can we have that certainty of apostolical practice which is necessary to constitute a divine right; nor, secondly, is it probable that the apostles did tie themselves up to any one fixed course in modelling churches; nor, thirdly, if they did, doth it necessarily follow that we must observe the same. If these three considerations be fully cleared, we may see to how little purpose it is to dispute the significancy and importance of words and names as used in scripture, which hitherto the main quarrel hath been about. I therefore begin with the first of these, that we cannot arrive to such an absolute certainty what course the apostles took in governing churches as to infer from thence the only divine right of that one form which the several parties imagine comes the nearest to it. This I shall make out from these following arguments: first, from the equivalency of the names, and the doubtfulness of their signification from which the form of government used in the New Testament should be determined. That the form of government must be derived from the importance of the names of bishop and presbyter, is hotly pleaded on both sides. But if there can be no certain way found out whereby to come to a determination of what the certain sense

of those names is in scripture, we are never like to come to any certain knowledge of the things signified by those names. Now there is a fourfold equivalency of the names bishop and presbyter taken notice of: 1. that both should signify the same thing, viz. a presbyter, in the modern notion, *i. e.* one acting in a parity with others for the government of the church.<sup>1</sup> And this sense is evidently asserted by *Theodore*t: "The apostle" (Acts xx. 28; Philip. i. 1; Titus i. 5; 1 Tim. iii. 1,)<sup>2</sup> "doth by bishops mean nothing else but presbyters; otherwise it were impossible for more bishops to govern one city."<sup>3</sup> 2. That both of them should signify promiscuously sometimes a bishop, and sometimes a presbyter: so *Chrysostom*, and after him *Oecumenius* and *Theophylact* in Phil. i. "Since then the custom," especially mentioned, "in the New Testament of calling many bishops elders, and elders bishops, is unknown; but to this end we may refer to the epistles to Titus, to the Philippians, and to the first to Timothy."<sup>4</sup> Where they assert the community and promiscuous use of the names in scripture, so that a bishop is sometimes called a presbyter, and a presbyter sometimes called a bishop. 3. That the name bishop always imports a singular bishop; but the name presbyter is taken promiscuously both for bishop and presbyter. 4. That both the names bishop and presbyter do import only one thing in scripture, viz. the office of a singular bishop in every church; which sense, though a stranger to antiquity, is above all others embraced by a late very learned man, who hath endeavoured by set discourses to reconcile all the places of scripture where the names occur to this sense; but with what success it is not here a place to examine. By this variety of interpretation of the equivalency of the names of bishop and presbyter, we may see how far the argument from the promiscuous use of the names is from the controversy in hand; unless some evident arguments be withal brought, that the equivalency of the words cannot possibly be meant in any other sense than that which they contend for. Equivocal words can never of themselves determine what sense they are

<sup>1</sup> Dissert. de jure Epis. 3, c. 6. Vindicat. cap. ii. s. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Theodore, in 1 Tim. iii. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Ἐπισκοπους τοὺς πρεσβυτέρους καλεῖ ἄλλως τε οὐδὲ οἷον τε ἢν πολλοὺς ἐπισκοποὺς μίαν πόλιν ποιμαίνειν.

<sup>4</sup> Ἐπισκοπους τοὺς πρεσβυτέρους καλεῖ, τότε γὰρ ἐκείνων οὖν τοῖς ὀνομασί, and in Acts xx. 28; ἐπεὶ δὴ τοὺς πολλοὺς λαμβάνει ἡ συνήθεια μάλιστα τῆς καινῆς διαθήκης τοὺς ἐπίσκοπους πρεσβυτέρους ὀνομαζούσα, καὶ τοὺς πρεσβυτέρους ἐπισκοποὺς, σημειώτεον τοῦτο ἐντεῦθεν, καὶ ἐν τῇ πρὸς Τίτον ἐπιστολῇ, ἐτι δὲ καὶ πρὸς Φιλιππησίους, καὶ ἐκ τῇ πρὸς Τιμόθεον πρώτῃς.

to be taken in, because they are equivocal, and so admit of different senses. And he that from the use of an equivocal word would infer the necessity only of one sense, when the word is common to many, unless some other argument be brought enforcing that necessity, will be so far from persuading others to the same belief, that he will only betray the weakness and shortness of his own reason. When *Augustus* would be called only *Princeps Senatus*,<sup>1</sup> could any one infer from thence, that certainly he was only the *πρωτοστως*, "chief or president," in the senate, or else that he had superiority of power over the senate, when that title might be indifferent to either of those senses? All that can be inferred from the promiscuous sense of the words, is, that they may be understood only in this sense; but it must be proved that they can be understood in no other before any one particular form of government as necessary can be inferred from the use of them.

If notwithstanding the promiscuous use of the name *bishop* and *presbyter*, either that *presbyter* may mean a *bishop*, or that *bishop* may mean a *presbyter*, or be sometimes used for one, sometimes for the other; what ground can there be laid in the equivalency of the words, which can infer the only divine right of the form of government couched in any one of these senses? So likewise, it is in the titles of *angels of the churches*; if the name *angel* imports no incongruity, though taken only for the *שליח צבור*, "the public minister," in the Jewish synagogue, called "the angel of the congregation," what power can be inferred from thence, any more than such an officer was invested with? Again, if the *πρωεδρος* or president of the assembly of *presbyters*, might be so called: what superiority can be deduced thence, any more than such a one enjoys? Nay, if in the prophetic style, an unity may be set down by way of representation of a multitude: what evidence can be brought from the name, that by it some one particular person must be understood? And by this means *Timothy* may avoid being charged *with leaving his first love*,<sup>2</sup> which he must of necessity be, by those that make him the angel of the church of Ephesus at the time of writing these epistles. Neither is this any ways solved by the answer given, that the name *angel* is representative of the whole church, and so there is no necessity, the angel should be personally guilty of it. For *first*, it seems strange that the whole diffusive body

<sup>1</sup> Tacitus, hist. lib. i.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. ii. 4.

of the church should be charged with a crime by the name of the *angel*, and he that is particularly meant by that name should be free from it. As if a prince should charge the mayor of a corporation as guilty of rebellion, and by it should only mean that the corporation was guilty, but the mayor was innocent himself. *Secondly*, If many things in the epistles be directed to the angel, but yet so as to concern the whole body, then of necessity the angel must be taken as representative of the body; and then, why may not the word *angel* be taken only by way of representation of the body itself, either of the whole church, or which is far more probable, of the *concessus* or order of presbyters in that church? We see what miserably unconcluding arguments those are, which are brought for any form of government from metaphorical or ambiguous expressions, or names promiscuously used, which may be interpreted in different senses. What certainty then can any rational man find, what the form of government was in the primitive times, when only those arguments are used which may be equally accommodated to different forms? And without such a *certainty*, with what confidence can men speak of a divine right of any one particular form? *Secondly*, The uncertainty of the primitive form is argued, from the places most in controversy about the form of government; because that without any apparent incongruity they may be understood of either of the different forms, which I shall make out by going through the several places. The controversy then on foot is this, (as it is of late stated,) whether the churches in the primitive times were governed by a bishop only and deacons, or by a college of presbyters acting in a parity of power? The places insisted on, on both sides, are these, *Acts* xi. 30, *Acts* xiv. 23, *Acts* xxviii. 17, 1 *Tim.* iii. 1, *Titus* i. 5. The thing in controversy, is, whether *bishops* with *deacons*, or *presbyters* in a parity of power, are understood in these places? I begin then in order with *Acts* xi. 30. The first place wherein the name *πρεσβυτεροι* occurs, as applied to the officers of the Christian church. Those that are for a college of presbyters, understand by these elders, those of the church of *Jerusalem*, who did govern the affairs of that church: those that are for a solitary episcopacy, by these elders understand not the local elders of Jerusalem, but the several bishops of the churches of Judea.

Let us now see whether there be any evidence from the place to determine which of these two must necessarily be understood. There is nothing at all mentioned in the place, but only that "upon the occasion of the famine, they sent



relief to the brethren of Judea, and sent it to the elders by the hands of *Barnabas* and *Paul*;" which might either be to the elders of the church at Jerusalem, to be distributed to the several churches of Judea, or else to the several pastors of those churches, either collectively as met together at Jerusalem to receive this contribution, or distributively as they were in their several churches. The relief might be sent to all the brethren of Judea, and yet either be conveyed to the particular elders of Jerusalem to send it abroad, or to the several elders of the churches within the circuit of Judea. But other places are brought by both parties for their particular sense in this, as *Acts* xv. 6; here indeed mention is made of the apostles and elders together at Jerusalem, but nothing expressed whereby we may know whether the fixed elders of that church, or else the elders of all the churches of Judea assembled upon this solemn occasion of the council of the apostles there. So *Acts* xxi. 11, when *Paul* went in to *James*, it is said, that "all the elders were present." No more certainty here neither; for, either they might be the fixed officers of that church, meeting with *James* upon *Paul's* coming; or else they might be the elders of the several churches of Judea met together, not to take account of *Paul's* ministry, (as some improbably conjecture,) but assembled together there at the feast of Pentecost, at which *Paul* came to Jerusalem, which is more probable upon the account of what we read, verse 20, of the "many thousand believing Jews then at Jerusalem, who were zealous of the law:" who in all probability were the believing Jews of Judea, who did yet observe the annual festivals of Jerusalem, and so most likely their several elders might go up together with them, and there be with *James* at *Paul's* coming in to him. No certainty then of the church of Jerusalem how that was governed; whether by apostles themselves, or other unfixed elders, or only by *James*, who exercised his apostleship most there, and thence afterwards called the bishop of Jerusalem. We proceed therefore to the government of other churches; and the next place is, *Acts* xiv. 23, "and when they had ordained them elders in every church." Here some plead for a plurality of elders as fixed in every church; but it is most evident, that the words hold true if there was but one in each church. For κατ' ἐκκλησίαν here, and κατὰ πόλιν, *Titus* i. 5, (for both places will admit of the same answer,) doth signify no more than *oppidatim*, "city by city," or *ecclesiaticim*, "church by church, or by churches," as κατὰ βαθμον, *gradatim*, "by degrees;" κατ' ἀνδρα, *viritim*, "man by

man;" *κατα μέρος, particulatim*, "particle by particle, or by particles;" *κατα κομην, vicatim*, "village by village." No more then is imported than that elders were ordained, *city by city*, or *church by church*, as we would render it, and thereby nothing is expressed, but that no church wanted an elder, but not that every church had more elders than one. But the place most controverted is, *Acts xx. 17*, "and from Miletus, *Paul* sent to Ephesus, and called the elders of the church." Those that say, these elders were those only of the church of Ephesus, seem to be most favoured by the phrase *της εκκλησιας*, as seeming to apply to that particular church of Ephesus, and by the Syriac version, which renders it, *venire fecit presbyteros ecclesiæ Ephesi*, "he caused the elders of the church of Ephesus to be present;" to the same purpose likewise *Hierom* understands it. On the contrary those that say, that these elders were those of the several churches of Asia, are favoured by verse 18; "that from the first day he came into Asia, he had been with them at all seasons." Now *Paul* did not remain all the time at Ephesus, as appears by *Acts xix. 10, 22, 26*, where he is said to preach the word abroad in Asia, and so in probability churches were planted, and rulers settled in them; and that these were at this time called to Miletus by *Paul*, is the express affirmation of *Irenæus*, "For the bishops and elders who were from Ephesus, and the other cities, being called together at Miletus, since he himself hastened to spend the Pentecost at Jerusalem."<sup>1</sup> Here is nothing then either in the text or antiquity, that doth absolutely determine whence these elders came; but there may be a probability on either side; and so no certainty or necessity of understanding it either way. And so for the other places in *Timothy* and *Titus*, it is certain the care of those persons did extend to many places, and therefore the elders or bishops made by them, are not necessarily to be understood of a plurality of elders in one place. Thus we see, that there is no incongruity in applying either of these two forms to the sense of the places in question. I dispute not which is the true, or at least more probable sense, but that we can find nothing in the several places which doth necessarily determine, how they are to be understood as to one particular form of government, which is the thing I now aim at proving. And

<sup>1</sup> In Mileto enim convocatis episcopis et presbyteris qui crant ab Epheso et à reliquis proximis civitatibus, quoniam ipse festinavit Hierosolymis Pentecostem agere.—Advers. hæres. l. 1, c. 14.

if neither form be repugnant to the sense of these places, how can any one be necessarily inferred from them? As if the several motions and *phenomena* of the heavens, may be with equal probability explained according to the *Ptolemaic* or *Copernican* hypothesis, viz. about the rest or motion of the earth; then it necessarily follows, that from those phenomena no argument can be drawn evincing the necessity of the one hypothesis, and overturning the probability of the other. If that great wonder of nature, the flux and reflux of the sea, might with equal congruity be solved according to the different opinions, of its being caused by subterraneous fires, or from the motion of the moon, or the depression of the lunar *vortex*, or, (which to me is far the most probable,) by a motion of consent of the sea with all the other great bodies of the world; we should find no necessity at all of entertaining one opinion above another, but to look upon all as probable, and none as certain. So likewise for the composition and motion of all natural bodies, the several hypotheses of the old and new *philosophy*, implying no apparent incongruity to nature, do make it appear that all or any of them, may be embraced as ingenious *romances* in philosophy, (as they are no more,) but that none of them are the certain truth; or can be made appear so to be to the minds of men. So it is in controversies in *theology*, if the matter propounded to be believed, may as to the truth and substance of it be equally believed under different ways of explication, then there is no necessity as to the believing the truth of the thing, to believe it under such an explication of it, more than under another. As for instance, in the case of Christ's descent εἰς ᾠδου, "into hades," if I may truly believe that Christ did descend εἰς ᾠδου, whether by that we understand the state of the dead, or a local descent to hell,<sup>1</sup> then there is no necessity in order to the belief of the substance of that article of the ancient creed, (called the apostles',) under that restriction of a local descent. By this time I suppose it is clear, that if these places of scripture may be understood in these two different senses of the word *elders*, viz. either taken

<sup>1</sup> Some, by the Paradise mentioned in the New Testament, (Luke xxiii. 43,) and by Hades, understand the two intermediate states, the former for the happy dead, the other for the miserable, prior to the resurrection of the body. Otherwise how shall Rev. xx. 14, be understood? ὁ θανάτου καὶ ὁ ἀδης ἐβλήθησαν εἰς τὴν λίμνην τοῦ πυρός; "and death," (all his powers and unredeemed consequences in man,) "and HADES were cast into the lake of fire." Surely not, *hell was cast into the lake of fire*, according to the common version, for that would be the same thing as to say, a lake of fire was cast into a lake of fire."—*Am. Ed.*

collectively in one city, or distributively in many, then there is no certainty which of these two senses must be embraced, and so the form of church government, which must be thence derived, is left still at as great uncertainty as ever, notwithstanding these places of scripture brought to demonstrate it, *ὁπες ἐδεε δεῖξαι*, “which it was incumbent on them to show.”

§ 16. *Thirdly*, The uncertainty of the primitive form of government will be made appear from the defectiveness, ambiguity, partiality and repugnancy of the records of the succeeding ages, which should inform us what apostolical practice was. When men are by the force of the former arguments driven off from scripture, then they presently run to take sanctuary in the records of succeeding ages to the apostles. Thus *Estius*, no mean schoolman, handling this very question of the difference of bishops and presbyters, very fairly quits the scriptures, and betakes himself to other weapons. “But that bishops by a divine right are superior to presbyters, although not so clear from the scriptures, nevertheless can, from other writings, be sufficiently proved.”<sup>1</sup> Ingenuously said, however; but all the difficulty is, how a *jus divinum* should be proved when men leave the scriptures, which makes others so loth to leave this hold; although they do it in effect, when they call in the help of succeeding ages to make the scripture speak plain for them. We follow therefore the scent of the game into this wood of antiquity, wherein it will be easier to lose ourselves than to find that which we are upon the pursuit of, a *jus divinum* of any one particular form of government. I handle now only the testimony of antiquity, (for the practice of it will call for a particular discourse afterwards,) and herein I shall endeavour to show the incompetency of this testimony, as to the showing what certain form of church government was practised by the apostles; for that, I shall make use of this fourfold argument; from the *defectiveness* of this testimony, from the *ambiguity* of it, from the *partiality* of it, and from the *repugnancy* of it to itself. First, then, for the *defectiveness* of the testimony of antiquity, in reference to the showing what certain form the apostles observed in settling the government of churches; a threefold defectiveness I observe in it, as to *places*, as to *times*, as to *persons*. First, defectiveness as to *places*; for him that would be satisfied what course the apos-

<sup>1</sup> Quod autem jure divino sint Episcopi Presbyteris superiores, et si non ita clarum est e sacris literis, aliunde tamen satis efficaciter probari potest.—In Sentent. lib. iv. dist. 4, sect. 25.



tles took for governing churches, it would be very requisite to observe the uniformity of the apostles' practice in all churches of their plantation. And if but one place varied, it were enough to overthrow the necessity of any one form of government, because thereby it would be evident, that they observed no certain or constant course, nor did they look upon themselves as obliged so to do. Now the ground of the necessity of such an universal testimony as to places, is this: we have already made it appear, that there is no law of Christ absolutely commanding one form, and forbidding all others. We have no way then left to know, whether the apostles did look upon themselves as bound to settle one form, but by their practice; this practice must be certain and uniform in them; this uniformity must be made known to us by some unquestionable way: the scriptures are very silent in it, mentioning very little more than *Paul's* practice, nor that fully and clearly; therefore we must gather it from antiquity, and the records of following ages; if these now fall short of our expectation, and cannot give us an account of what was done by the apostles in their several churches planted by them, how is it possible we should attain any certainty of what the apostles' practice was? Now that antiquity is so defective as to places, will appear from the general silence as to the churches planted by many of the apostles. Granting the truth of what *Eusebius* tells us, that *Thomas* went into Parthia, *Andrew* into Scythia, *John* into the less Asia, *Peter* to the Jews in Pontus, Galatia, Bithynia, Cappadocia, Asia;<sup>1</sup> besides what we read in scripture of *Paul*, what a pitiful short account have we here given of all the apostles' travels, and their several fellow-labourers! And for all these, little or nothing spoke of the way they took in settling the churches by them planted. Who is it will undertake to tell us what course *Andrew* took in Scythia, in governing churches? If we believe the records of after ages, there was but one bishop, viz. of Tomis, for the whole country; how different is this from the pretended course of *Paul*, setting up a single bishop in every city? Where do we read of the presbyteries settled by *Thomas* in Parthia or the Indies? what course *Philip*, *Bartholomew*, *Matthew*, *Simon Zelotes*, *Matthias* took. Might not they, for anything we know, settle another kind of government from what we read *Paul*, *Peter*, or *John* did, unless we had some evidence that they were all bound to

<sup>1</sup> Hist. Eccles. lib. iii. c. 1.

observe the same? Nay, what evidence have we what course *Peter* took in the churches of the circumcision? Whether he left them to their synagogue way, or altered it, and how or wherein? These things should be made appear, to give men a certainty of the way and course the apostles did observe in the settling churches by them planted. But instead of this, we have a general silence in antiquity, and nothing but the forgeries of latter ages to supply the vacuity: whereby they filled up empty places, as *Plutarch* expresseth it,<sup>1</sup> as geographers do maps, with some fabulous creatures of their own invention. Here is work now for a *Nicephorus Callistus*, a *Simeon Metaphrastes*, the very *Jacobus de Voragine* of the Greek church, (as one well calls him,) those historical tinkers, that think to mend a hole where they find it, and make three instead of it. This is the first defect in antiquity as to places. The *second* is as observable as to times; and what is most considerable: antiquity is most defective where it is most useful, viz. in the time immediately after the apostles, which must have been most helpful to us in this inquiry. For, who dare with confidence believe the conjectures of *Eusebius* at three hundred years distance from apostolical times, when he hath no other testimony to vouch, but the hypotheses of an uncertain *Clement*, (certainly not he of Alexandria, if *Jos. Scaliger* may be credited,) and the commentaries of *Hegesippus*, whose relations and authority are as questionable as many of the reports of *Eusebius* himself are in reference to those elder times: for which I need no other testimony but *Eusebius* in a place enough of itself to blast the whole credit of antiquity, as to the matter now in debate. For speaking of *Paul* and *Peter*, and the churches by them planted, and coming to inquire after their successors, he makes this very ingenuous confession: "There being so many of them, and some naturally rivals, it is not easy to say which of them were accounted eligible to govern the churches established, unless it be those that we may select out of the writings of Paul."<sup>2</sup> Say you so? Is it so hard a matter to find out who succeeded the apostles in the churches planted by them, unless it be those mentioned in the writings of *Paul*? What becomes then of our unquestionable line of succession of the bishops of several churches, and the large diagrams made of

<sup>1</sup> Plut. in Theseo.

<sup>2</sup> Ὅσοι δὲ τούτων, καὶ τινες γησιῶι ζήλωται γεγονότες, τὰς πρὸς αὐτῶν ἐδρυθείσας ἱκανοὶ ποιμαίνειν ἐδοκίμασθῆσαν ἐκκλησίας, οὐ βραδίον εἶπεν μὴ ὅτι γε ὅσους ἂν τις ἐξ τῶν Παύλου φωνῶν ἀνέλεξοιτο.—Hist. Eccl. l. 3. c. 4.

the apostolical churches with every one's name set down in his order, as if the writer had been *Clarenceaux* to the apostles themselves? Is it come to this at last that we have nothing certain, but what we have in scriptures? And must then the tradition of the church be our rule to interpret scriptures by? An excellent way to find out the truth doubtless, to bend the rule to the crooked stick, to make the judge stand to the opinion of his lacquey, what sentence he shall pass upon the cause in question; to make scripture stand cap in hand to tradition, to know whether it may have leave to speak or not! Are all the great outcries of apostolical tradition, of personal succession, of unquestionable records resolved at last into the scripture itself by him from whom all these long pedigrees are fetched? Then let succession know its place, and learn to vaile bonnet to the scriptures. And withal, let men take heed of over-reaching themselves when they would bring down so large a catalogue of single bishops from the first and purest times of the church, for it will be hard for others to believe them, when *Eusebius* professeth it is so hard to find them. Well might *Scaliger* then complain that the interval from the last chapter of the Acts to the middle of *Trajan*, in which time *Quadratus* and *Ignatius* began to flourish, was *tempus ædελον*, "confused," as *Varro* speaks,<sup>1</sup> a mere chaos of time filled up with the rude conceptions of *Papias*, *Hermes*, and others, who, like *Hannibal*, when they could not find a way through, would make one either by force or fraud.

But yet, *thirdly*, here is another defect consequent to that of time, which is that of persons; arising not only from a defect of records, the *diptychs* of the church being lost, which would have acquainted us with the times of suffering of the several martyrs, (by them called their natalitia,) at which times their several names were enrolled in these martyrologies, which some, as *Junius*<sup>2</sup> observes, have ignorantly mistaken for the time of their being made bishops of the places wherein their names were entered, as *Anacletus*, *Clytus* and *Clemens* at Rome; I say the defect as to persons, not only ariseth hence, but because the Christians were so much harassed with persecutions, that they could not have that leisure then to write those things, which the leisure and peace of our ages have made us so eagerly inquisitive after. Hence even the martyrologies are so full stuffed with fables; witness one for

<sup>1</sup> Proleg. in Chron. Eusebii.

<sup>2</sup> Cont. 3, l. 2, c. 5, not. 18.

all, the famous legend of *Catharina*,<sup>1</sup> who suffered, say they, in *Diocletian's* time. And truly the story of *Ignatius*, (as much as it is defended with his epistles,) doth not seem to be any of the most probable. For, wherefore should *Ignatius* of all others be brought to Rome to suffer, when the *proconsuls* and the *præsides provinciarum*<sup>2</sup> did everywhere in time of persecution execute their power in punishing Christians at their own tribunals, without sending them so long a journey to Rome to be martyred there? And how came *Ignatius* to make so many and such strange excursions, as he did by the story, if the soldiers that were his guard were so cruel to him, as he complains they were? Now all those uncertain and fabulous narrations as to persons then, arising from want of sufficient records made at those times, make it more evident how incompetent a judge antiquity is, as to the certainty of things done in apostolical times. If we should only speak of the fabulous legends of the first planters of churches in these western parts, we need no further evidence of the great defect of antiquity as to persons. Not to go out of our own nation, whence come the stories of *Peter*, *James*, *Paul*, *Simon*, *Aristobulus*, besides *Joseph* of Arimathea, and his company; all being preachers of the gospel, and planters of churches here, but only from the great defect in antiquity, as to the records of persons employed in the several places for preaching the gospel? Thus much to show the defectiveness as to the records of antiquity, and thereby the incompetency of them for being a way to find out the certain course the apostles took in settling and governing churches by them planted.

§ 17. The next thing showing the incompetency of the records of the church for deciding the certain form of church government in the apostles' times, is, the *ambiguity* of the testimony given by those records. A testimony sufficient to decide a controversy, must be plain and evident, and must speak full and home to the case under debate. Now if I make it appear that antiquity doth not so; nothing then can be evident from thence, but that we are left to as great uncertainties as before. The matter in controversy is, whether any in a superior order to presbyters were instituted by the apostles themselves for the regulating of the churches by them planted? For the proving of which, *three* things are the most insisted on: *First*, The personal succession of some persons to the apostles in churches by them planted: *Secondly*, The appro-

<sup>1</sup> V. Chamier. tom. 1, l. 2, cap. 16.

<sup>2</sup> Presidents of the provinces.



priating the name *Επισκοποι* to bishops in a superior order to presbyters, after the apostles' decease: *Thirdly*, The churches owning the order of episcopacy, as of divine institution. If now we can make these three things evident: *First*, *That personal succession might be without such superiority of order*: *Secondly*, *That the names of bishop and presbyters were common after the distinction between them was introduced*: and *Thirdly*, *That the church did not own episcopacy as a divine institution, but ecclesiastical; and those who seem to speak most of it, do mean no more*: I shall suppose enough done to invalidate the testimony of antiquity as to the matter in hand. *First*, then, *for the matter of succession in apostolical churches*, I shall lay down these four things, to evince that the argument drawn from thence cannot fully clear the certain course which the apostles took in settling the government of churches. *First*, *That the succession might be only as to a different degree, and not as to a different order*; where the succession is clear, nothing possibly can be inferred from it beyond this. For bare succession implies no more than that there was one in those churches succeeding the apostles, from whom afterwards the succession was derived. Now then supposing only at present, that it was the custom, in all the churches at that time, to be ruled by a college of presbyters acting in a parity of power, and among these, one to sit as the *Nasi* in the sanhedrim; having a priority of order above the rest in place, without any superiority of power over his colleagues; will not the matter of succession be clear and evident enough notwithstanding this? *Succession of persons* was the thing inquired for, and not a *succession of power*; if therefore those that would prove a succession of apostolical power, can only produce a list and catalogue of names in apostolical churches, without any evidence of what power they had, they apparently fail of proving the thing in question, which is not, whether there might not be found out a list of persons in many churches derived from the apostles' times; but whether those persons did enjoy by way of peculiarity and appropriation to themselves, that power which the apostles had over many churches while they lived? Now this, the mere succession will never prove, which will best appear by some parallel instances. At Athens, after they grew weary of their ten years *Αρχοντες*, "chiefs," the people chose nine every year to govern the affairs of the commonwealth. These nine enjoyed a parity of power among themselves, and therefore had a place where they consulted

together about the matters of state which was called *Στρατηγιον*, "the general's residence, or tribunal," as *Demosthenes*,<sup>1</sup> *Plutarch*, and others tell us. Now although they enjoyed this equality of power, yet one of them had greater dignity than the rest, and therefore was called *Ἀρχων*, "chief," by way of excellency, and his name was only set in the public records of that year, and therefore was called *Ἀρχων ἐπωνυμος*, "the archon who gave his name to the year of his office," and the year was reckoned from him, as *Pausanias*,<sup>2</sup> and *Julius Pollux* inform us. Here we see now the succession clear in one single person, and yet no superiority of power in him over his colleagues. The like may be observed among the *Ephori* and *Bidiaj* at Sparta; the number of the *Ephori* was always five from their first institution by *Lycurgus*, and not nine, (as the Greek etymologist imagines): these enjoyed likewise a parity of power among them; but among these to give name to the year, they made choice of one who was called *ἑπωνυμος* here too, as the *Ἀρχων* at Athens, and him they called *πρῶτος ἐφορων*, "the principal of the Ephori," as *Plutarch* tells us.<sup>3</sup> Where we have the very name *πρῶτος*, "principal chief," attributed to him that had only his primacy of order without any superiority of power, which is used by *Justin Martyr* of the president of assemblies among the Christians.

Now from hence we may evidently see that mere succession of some single persons named above the rest, in the successions in apostolical churches, cannot enforce any superiority of power in the persons so named, above others supposed to be as joint governors of the churches with them. I dispute not whether it were so or not; whether according to *Blondell* the succession was from the *πρωτοχειροτονηεις*, "the one voted first by a show of hands," or whether by choice, as at Alexandria; but I only now show that this argument from succession is weak, and proves not at all the certainty of the power those persons enjoyed. *Secondly, This succession is not so evident and convincing in all places as it ought to be, to demonstrate the thing intended.* It is not enough to show a list of some persons in the great churches of Jerusalem, Antioch, Rome, and Alexandria, (although none of these be unquestionable,) but it should be produced at Philippi, Corinth, Cæsarea, and in all the seven churches of Asia, (and not only

<sup>1</sup> Demosth. in Midiam. Plut. in Peril. et vit. Niciaë; V. Meursium de Archont. Athen. l. 1, c. 9. Ennium de Ep. Ath.

<sup>2</sup> Paus. in Lacon. Pollux. Onom. lib. 8, c. 9.

<sup>3</sup> Paus. Lacon V. Nic. Cragium de Rep. Laced. lib. 2, c. 5.

at Ephesus,) and so likewise in Crete, some succeeding *Titus*; and not think men will be satisfied with the naming a bishop of Gortyna so long after him. But, as I said before, in none of the churches most spoken of, is the succession so clear as is necessary. For at Jerusalem it seems somewhat strange how fifteen bishops of the circumcision should be crowded into so narrow a room as they are, so that many of them could not have above two years time to rule in the church. And it would bear an inquiry where the seat of the bishops of Jerusalem was from the time of the destruction of the city by *Titus*, (when the walls were laid even with the ground by *Musonius*,) till the time of *Adrian*; for till that time the succession of the bishops of the circumcision continued. For Antioch, it is far from being agreed, whether *Euodius* or *Ignatius* succeeded *Peter*, or *Paul*; or the one *Peter*, and the other *Paul*; much less at *Rome*, whether *Cletus*, *Anacletus*, or *Clemens* are to be reckoned first; (but of these afterwards.) At Alexandria where the succession runs clearest, the original of the power is imputed to the choice of presbyters, and to no divine institution. But at Ephesus the succession of bishops from *Timothy* is pleaded with the greatest confidence; and the testimony brought for it, is from *Leontius* bishop of Magnesia in the council of Chalcedon, whose words are these, "From Timothy to this day there hath been a succession of seven and twenty bishops, all of them ordained in Ephesus."<sup>1</sup> I shall not insist so much on the incompetency of this single witness to pass a judgment upon a thing of that nature, at the distance of four hundred years, in which time records being lost, and bishops being after settled there, no doubt they would begin their account from *Timothy*, because of his employment there once for settling the churches thereabout. And to that end we may observe them in the after-times of the church, they never met with any of the apostles, or evangelists in any place, but they presently made them bishops of that place. So, *Philip* is made bishop of Trallis, *Ananias* bishop of Damascus, *Nicolaus* bishop of Samaria, *Barnabas* bishop of Milan, *Silas* bishop of Corinth, *Sylvanus* of Thessalonica, *Crescens* of Chalcedon, *Andreas* of Byzantium, and upon the same grounds *Peter* bishop of Rome. No wonder then if *Leontius* makes *Timothy* bishop of Ephesus,

<sup>1</sup> ΑΠΟ ΤΟΥ ΑΓΙΟΥ ΤΙΜΟΘΕΟΥ ΜΕΧΡΙ ΤΩΝ ΕΙΚΟΣΙ ΕΠΤΑ ΕΠΙΣΚΟΠΟΙ ΕΓΙΝΩΝΤΟ: ΠΑΝΤΕΣ ΕΝ ΕΦΕΣΩ ΕΧΕΙΡΟΤΟΝΘΗΣΑΝ.—Conc. Chalcedonens. Part 2, Act 11, apud 1. in Concil. Gr. La. tom. 3, p. 410.

and derives the succession down from him. But again, this was not an act of the council itself, but only of one single person, delivering his private opinion in it; and that which is most observable, is, that in the thing mainly insisted on by *Leontius*, he was contradicted in the face of the whole council, by *Philip* a presbyter of Constantinople. For the case of *Bassianus* and *Stephen*, about their violent intrusion into the bishopric of Ephesus, being discussed before the council; a question was propounded by the council where the bishop of Ephesus was to be regularly ordained, according to the canons. *Leontius* bishop of Magnesia saith, that there had been twenty-seven bishops of Ephesus from *Timothy*, and all of them ordained in the place. His business was not to derive exactly the succession of bishops, but speaking according to vulgar tradition, he insists that all had been ordained there. Now if he be convicted of the *crimen falsi* "crime of falsehood" in his *το εργον*, "work," no wonder if we meet with a mistake in his *παρεργον* "supplement," i. e. if he were out in his allegation, no wonder if he were deceived in his tradition. Now as to the ordination of the bishops in Ephesus, *Philip*, a presbyter of Constantinople, convicts him of falsehood in that; for, saith he, *John* bishop of Constantinople going into Asia, deposed fifteen bishops there, and ordained others in their room. And *Actius* archdeacon of Constantinople instanceth in *Castinus*, *Heraclides*, *Basilus* bishop of Ephesus, all ordained by the bishop of Constantinople. If then the certainty of succession relies on the credit of this *Leontius*, let them thank the council of Chalcedon, who have sufficiently blasted it, by determining the cause against him in the main evidence produced by him. So much to show how far the clearest evidence for succession of bishops from apostolical times is from being convincing to any rational man. *Thirdly*, the succession so much pleaded by the writers of the primitive church, was *not a succession of persons in apostolical power, but a succession in apostolical doctrine*; which will be seen by a view of the places produced to that purpose. The first is that of *Irenæus*. "Since it would be far too tedious in a volume of this kind, to enumerate the successions of all the churches, especially of that most ancient church, best known to all, founded and established at Rome, by the two most illustrious apostles, Peter and Paul; having shown that which hath its tradition from the apostles, and its faith declared to mankind by its succession of bishops coming



even unto us, we blend together all these;" &c.<sup>1</sup> Where we see *Irenæus* doth the least of all aim at the making out of a succession of apostolical power in the bishops he speaks of, but a conveying of the doctrine of the apostles down to them by their hands: (which doctrine is here called tradition, not as that word is abused by the papists to signify something distinct from the scriptures, but as it signifies the conveyance of the doctrine of the scripture itself.) Which is cleared by the beginning of that chapter, "Therefore it is to the purpose to make plain to all, who have a mind to hear, the tradition of the apostles, announced in the church, throughout the whole world; and we have to enumerate the bishops, who were ordained by the apostles in the churches, and their successors even unto us, who have neither known, nor taught any such thing, as is idly talked of by them."<sup>2</sup> His plain meaning is, that those persons who were appointed by the apostles to oversee and govern churches, being sufficient witnesses themselves of the apostles' doctrine, have conveyed it down to us by their successors, and we cannot learn any such thing of them, as *Valentinus* and his followers broached. We see it is the doctrine still he speaks of, and not a word what power and superiority these bishops had over presbyters in their several churches. To the same purpose *Tertullian* in that known speech of his; "They publish the origin of their churches, they turn over the order of their bishops, so that by successions, running from the beginning, he, the first bishop, may have had some one of the apostles, or of apostolic men for his founder and predecessor. In this manner, the apostolical churches report their register; as, the church of Smyrna, having had Polycarp, reports, that he was settled there by John; as Clement of the church of Rome, it is said, was ordained by Peter. Just so, also, the rests how whom they have had, as grafts from the apostolic extraction, and established in the episcopacy of the apostles."<sup>3</sup> A succession I

<sup>1</sup> Quoniam valdè longum est in hoc tali volumine omnium ecclesiarum enuneri successiones, maximè antiquissimæ, et omnibus cognitæ à gloriosissimis duobus apostolis Petro et Paulo, Romæ fundatæ et constitutæ ecclesiæ, eam quam habet ab apostolis traditionem, et annunciatam hominibus fidem, per successiones episcoporum pervenientes usque ad nos, indicantes, confundimus omnes eos, &c.—*Advers. heres. l. 3, cap. 3.*

<sup>2</sup> Traditionem itaque apostolorum in toto mundo manifestatam in ecclesia adest perspicere omnibus, qui vera velint audire; et habemus annumerare eos qui ab apostolis instituti sunt episcopi in ecclesiis, et successores eorum usque ad nos qui nihil tale docuerunt neque cognoverunt, quale ab his deliratur.

<sup>3</sup> Edant origines ecclesiarum suarum, evolvant ordinem episcoporum suorum,

grant is proved in apostolical churches by these words of *Tertullian*, and this succession of persons, and those persons bishops too, but then it is only said that these persons derived their office from the apostles, but nothing expressed what relation they had to the church any more than is implied in the general name of *episcopi*; nor what power they had over presbyters: only that there were such persons, was sufficient to his purpose, which was to *prescribe against heretics*: i. e. to nonsuit them, or to give in general reasons why they were not to be proceeded with as to the particular debate of the things in question between them. For *præscribere* in the civil law, (whence *Tertullian* transplanted that word as many others into the church,) is, “when any one, by certain exceptions, removes the opponent’s answer from the plaintiff’s declaration, and denies that there should be any debate relative to the chief matter of the party accused; or that the cause, by an exception laid in law, should be determined.”<sup>1</sup> three sorts of these prescriptions *Tertullian* elsewhere mentions: “This was to demand the truth, against which no one could enter an exception, either the lapse of time, the patronage of persons, or the privilege of countries.”<sup>2</sup> Here he stands upon the first which is a prescription of time, because the doctrine which was contrary to that of the heretics was delivered by the apostles, and conveyed down by their successors, which was requisite to be shown in order to the making his prescription good; which he thus further explains: “Now come you that have a mind better to exercise your curiosity in a matter relative to your own safety; pass over the apostolical churches, where the very seats themselves of the apostles, in their own places, yet preside, and where their genuine and original letters are recited, sounding yet their voices, and presenting the face of each before you. Have you Greece near at hand? Have you Corinth? If not far from Macedonia, have you Philippi, or Thessalonica? If thou canst, travel to

ita per successiones ab initio decurrentem, ut primus ille episcopus aliquem ex apostolis aut apostolicis viris habuerit authorem et antecessorem. Hoc modo ecclesiæ apostolicæ census suos deferunt; sicut Smyrnæorum ecclesia habens Polycarpum à Johanne conlocatum refert, sicut Romanorum Clementem à Petro ordinatum edit; proinde utique et cæteræ exhibent, quos ab apostolis in episcopatum constitutos apostolici seminis traduces habeant.—De præscript. advers. hæret. cap. 32.

<sup>1</sup> Cum quis adversarium certis exceptionibus removet à lite contestandâ, ita ut de summa rei neget agendum, eamve causam ex juris præscripto judicandâ.

<sup>2</sup> Hoc exigere veritatem cui nemo præscribere potest, non spatium temporum, non patrocina personarum, non privilegium regionum.—D. Vergin. veland. c. 1.

Asia; there have you Ephesus; and if near to Italy, there you have Rome; whence we also have their testimony quite at hand.”<sup>1</sup> What he spoke before of the persons, he now speaks of the churches themselves planted by the apostles, which, by retaining the authentic epistles of the apostles sent to them, did thereby sufficiently prescribe to all the novel opinions of the heretics. We see then evidently that it is the doctrine which they speak of as to succession, and the persons no further than as they are the conveyers of that doctrine; either then it must be proved that a succession of some persons in apostolical power is necessary for the conveying of this doctrine to men, or no argument at all can be inferred from hence for their succeeding the apostles in their power, because they are said to convey down the apostolical doctrine to succeeding ages; which is *Austin’s* meaning in that speech of his: “The root of Christian society, (*i. e.* the doctrine of the gospel,) is spread abroad the world through the channels of the apostolical sees, and the continued successions of bishops therein.”<sup>2</sup> And yet if we may believe the same *Austin*, “According to the terms of honour, which now the usage of the church of Rome hath brought about, the episcopacy is superior to the presbytery.”<sup>3</sup> The difference between episcopacy and presbytery rises from the custom of the church, attributing a name of greater honour to those it had set above others. And as for *Tertullian*, I believe neither party will stand to his judgment as to the original of church power. For he saith expressly, *differentiam inter ordinem et plebem constituit ecclesiæ auctoritas*,<sup>4</sup> “all the difference between ministers and people comes from the church’s authority;” unless he mean something more by the following words, *et honor per ordinis concessum sanctificatus à Deo*, “that the honour which is received by ordination from the bench of church officers is sanctified by God,” viz. by his appointment as well as bless-

<sup>1</sup> Age jam qui voles curiositatem melius exercere in negotio salutis tuæ; per-curre ecclesias apostolicas, apud quas ipsæ adhuc cathedræ apostolorum suis locis præsidentur, apud quas ipsæ authenticæ eorum literæ recitantur, sonantes vocem et præsentantes faciem uniuscujusque. Proximè est tibi Achaia? habes Corinthum. Si non longe es à Macedonia, habes Philippos, habes Thessalonicenses. Si potes in Asiam tendere, habes Ephesum. Si autem Italiæ adjaces, habes Romam, unde nobis quoque auctoritas præstò est.—Dap. 37. de præscript.

<sup>2</sup> Radix Christianæ societatis per sedes apostolorum et successiones episcoporum, certa per orbem propagatione diffunditur.—Aug. Ep. 42.

<sup>3</sup> Secundum honorum vocabula quæ jam ecclesiæ usus obtinuit, episcopatus presbyterio major est.—Aug. Ep. 29.

<sup>4</sup> Exhort. Castil. c. 7.

ing. For otherwise I know not how to understand him. But however, we see here he makes the government of the church to lie in a *concessus ordinis*, which I know not how otherwise to render, than by a *bench of presbyters*; because only they were said *in ordinem cooptari*, who were made presbyters, and not those who were promoted to any higher degree in the church. By the way, we may observe the original of the name of *Holy Orders* in the church, not as the papists, and others following them, as though it noted anything inherent by way of (I know not what) character in the person; but because the persons ordained were thereby admitted *in ordinem*, among the number of church officers. So there was *ordo senatorum*, "the order of the senate;" *ordo equestris*, "of the equestrians;" *ordo decurionum*, "of the knights;" and *ordo sacerdotum*, "the order of priests," among the Romans,<sup>1</sup> as in this inscription:

"The order of the Priests of God, and Hercules the invincible."<sup>2</sup>

From hence the use of the word came into the church; and thence ordination, *ex vi vocis*, "from the force of the words," imports no more than solemn admission into this order of presbyters; and therefore it is observable, that laying on of hands never made men priests under the law, but only admitted them into public office. So much for *Tertullian's Concessus ordinis*, which hath thus far drawn us out of our way, but we now return. And therefore, *Fourthly, This personal succession so much spoken of, is sometimes attributed to presbyters, even after the distinction came into use between bishops and them.* And that even by those authors who before had told us the succession was by bishops, as *Irenæus*: "But when we return again to that tradition, which is from the apostles, and which is guarded in the churches, through the succession of presbyters, we provoke those who are opposed to tradition: they say, that they, existing not only from the presbyters, but also from the apostles, are more plenteously endued with wisdom."<sup>3</sup> Here he attributes the keeping of the tradition of apostolical doctrine to the succession of presbyters, which before he had done to bishops. And more

<sup>1</sup> V. Selden, in Eutyech. p. 28.

<sup>2</sup> Ordo sacerdot. Dei Hereulis invicti.

<sup>3</sup> Cum autem ad eam iterum traditionem, quæ est ab Apostolis, quæ per successiones presbyterorum in ecclesiis custoditur, provocamus eos qui adversantur traditioni; dicent, se non solum presbyteris sed etiam apostolis existentes sapientiores, &c.—Adver. hæres. l. 3, c. 2.



fully afterwards: "Therefore it is incumbent on those, who are in the church, to obey the presbyters, who have their succession from the apostles, as we have shown, who, together with the succession of the episcopacy, have received the unerring gift of truth, according to the will of the Father."<sup>1</sup> In this place he not only asserts the succession of presbyters to the apostles, but likewise attributes the *successio episcopatus* to these very presbyters. What strange confusion must this raise in any one's mind, that seeks for a succession of episcopal power above presbyters from the apostles, by the testimony of *Irenæus*, when he so plainly attributes both the succession to presbyters, and the episcopacy too, which he speaks of? And in the next chapter adds: "Such presbyters the church maintains, concerning which even the prophet says, I will both give thy princes to be in peace, and thy bishops in righteousness."<sup>2</sup> Did *Irenæus* think that bishops in a superior order to presbyters were derived by an immediate succession from the apostles, and yet call the presbyters by the name of bishops? It is said indeed, that in the apostles' times the names bishop and presbyter were common, although the office was distinct, but that was only during the apostles' life, say some, when after the name bishop was appropriated to that order that was in the apostles (so called before); but, say others, it was only till subject presbyters were constituted, and then grew the difference between the names. But neither of these σοφα φαρμακα, "shrewd artifices," can draw forth the difficulty in these places of *Irenæus*, for now both the apostles were dead, and subject presbyters certainly in some of these apostolical churches were then constituted; whence comes then the community of names still, that those who are said to succeed the apostles, are called bishops in one place, but presbyters in another, and the very succession of episcopacy attributed to presbyters? Can we then possibly conceive that these testimonies of *Irenæus* can determine the point of succession, so as to make clear to us what that power was which those persons enjoyed, whom he sometimes calls bishops, and sometimes presbyters. But it is not *Irenæus* alone who tells us that presbyters succeed the apostles; even *Cyprian*, who

<sup>1</sup> Quapropter iis qui in ecclesiâ sunt presbyteris obaudire oportet; his qui successionem habent ab apostolis, sicut ostendimus, qui cum episcopatus successionem, charisma veritatis certum secundum placitum patris acceperunt.—Lib. 4, cap. 43.

<sup>2</sup> Tales presbyteros nutrit ecclesia, de quibus et propheta ait, et dabo principes tuos in pace, et episcopos tuos in justitia.—Cap. 44.

pleads so much for obedience to the bishops as they were then constituted in the church, yet speaks often of his *compresbyters*,<sup>1</sup> "fellow presbyters;" and in his epistles to *Florentius Pupianus*, who had reproached him, speaking of those words of Christ, "He that heareth you, heareth me," &c., "Who saith to the apostles, and by this to all that are set over us, who succeed the apostles by vicarious ordination,"<sup>2</sup> where he attributes apostolical succession to all that were *præpositi*, which name implies not the relation to presbyters as over them, but to the people, and is therefore common both to bishops and presbyters;<sup>3</sup> for so afterwards he speaks, "Neither hath the brethren a bishop, nor the people one set over it." Jerome saith that presbyters are "in the place of the apostles," and that they "do succeed to the apostles' rank;"<sup>4</sup> and the so much magnified *Ignatius*, *πρεσβυτεροι εις τοπον συνεδριου των Αποστολων*, "that the presbyters succeeded in the place of the bench of apostles;" and elsewhere of *Sotion* the deacon, "He is subject to the bishop, as to the grace of God, and to the presbyter as to the law of Jesus Christ,"<sup>5</sup> as it is read in the Florentine copy set out by *Vossius*; but in the former editions, both by *Vedelius* and the most learned primate of Armagh, it is read, "He is subject to the bishop and to the presbyter, by the grace of God in the law of Jesus Christ;"<sup>6</sup> but that of *Vossius* seems to be the true reading, to which the old Latin version in *Bishop Usher* fully agrees: "Since he is subject to the bishop, as to the grace of God, and to the presbyter, as to the law of Jesus Christ."<sup>7</sup> It might be no improbable conjecture to guess from hence at *Ignatius'* opinion concerning the original both of episcopacy and presbytery. The former he looks on as an excellent gift of God to the church;<sup>8</sup> so a learned doctor paraphraseth *Gratiæ Dei*, i. e. *Dono à Deo Ecclesiæ indulto*, "to the grace of God, i. e. to a gift granted to the church by God;"

<sup>1</sup> Ep. 69, ed. Pamel, s. 4.

<sup>2</sup> Qui dicit ad apostolos, ac per hoc ad omnes præpositos qui apostolis vicariâ ordinatione succedunt.

<sup>3</sup> V. Cyprian, ep. 3, a Cler. Rom. ep. 62, et 65, in Mich. 2, epist. 1.

<sup>4</sup> Nec fraternitas habuerit episcopum, nec plebs præpositum, &c., Jerome saith, that presbyters are loco apostolorum, and that they do apostolico gradu succedere.—Ep. ad Mag. p. 33, ed. Is. Vossi. p. 31.

<sup>5</sup> Ὅτι υποτασσεται τῷ ἐπισκοπῶν ὡς χαρίτι θεοῦ, καὶ τῷ πρεσβυτερίῳ ὡς νόμῳ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ.—Vedel. p. 50.

<sup>6</sup> Ὅτι υποτασσεται τῷ ἐπισκοπῶν καὶ τῷ πρεσβυτερίῳ χαρίτι θεοῦ ἐν νόμῳ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ.—Usser. p. 49.

<sup>7</sup> Quoniam subjectus est episcopo ut gratiæ Dei, et presbyterio ut legi Jesu Christi.

<sup>8</sup> Ep. 69.

so *Cyprian* often *Divina dignatione*, "on the divine majesty," speaking of bishops, *i. e.* that they looked on it as an act of God's special favour to the church to find out that means for unity in the church, to pitch upon one among the presbyters who should have the chief rule in every particular church; but then for presbytery, he looks on that as νόμος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, an institution and law of Jesus Christ, which must on that account always continue in the church. And so *Sotion* did commendably in submitting to the bishop, as a favour of God to the church for preventing schisms, on which account it is, and not upon the account of divine institution, that *Ignatius* is so earnest in requiring obedience to the bishop, because as *Cyprian* saith, "The church is the people gathered in one to the bishop, and the flock cleaving to the pastor;"<sup>1</sup> and the bishops then being orthodox, he lays such a charge upon the people to adhere to them, (for it is to the people, and not to the presbyters he speaks most,) which was as much as to bid them hold to the unity of the faith, and avoid those pernicious heresies which were then abroad; and so *Ignatius* and *Jerome* may easily be reconciled to one another; both owning the council of presbyters as of divine institution, and both requiring obedience to bishops as a singular privilege granted to the church, for preventing schisms, and preserving unity in the faith. And in all those thirty-five testimonies produced out of *Ignatius'* epistles for episcopacy, I can meet but with one which is brought to prove the least semblance of an institution of Christ for episcopacy; and if I be not much deceived, the sense of that place is clearly mistaken too. The place is *Ep. ad Ephesios*; he is exhorting the *Ephesians* συντρεχειν τη γνώμῃ του Θεου, which I suppose may be rendered *to fulfil the will of God*; so ποιησαι την γνώμην signifies, *Apocalyps.* xvii. 17, and adds: "For Christ, who is our inseparable life, is the counsel of the Father; and the bishops who are scattered abroad to the ends of the earth, are the counsel of Jesus Christ; *i. e.* do concur with the will of Christ; therefore follow the counsel of your bishop, which also you do."<sup>2</sup> He begins to exhort them to concur with the will of God, and concludes his exhortation to concur with the will or counsel of the bishop; and in the middle he shows the ground of the connection of these two." Everything is plain and obvious in the sense here, and very

<sup>1</sup> Ecclesia est plebs Episcopo coadunata, et grex Pastori adhærens.

<sup>2</sup> Καὶ γὰρ Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς τὸ ἀδιακρίτον ἡμῶν ζῶν, τοῦ πατρὸς ἡ γνώμη, ὡς καὶ οἱ ἐπισκοποὶ οἱ κατὰ τὰ πέρατα ὁρίσθοντες ἐν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ γνώμη εἰσιν. ὃ δὲν πρὸς ὑμῖν συντρεχειν τῇ τοῦ ἐπισκοποῦ γνώμῃ, ὅπερ καὶ ποιεῖτε.

coherent to the expressions both before and after, only the *εἰ* must be left out as plainly redundant, and *ὁρισθεῖς* must not be rendered *determinati*, "determined," but rather *disterminati*, "separated," because it refers to a place here, and so it notes their being dispersed into several places, and separated from one another, thereby implying the unity of their faith, and the *coagulum fidei*, "cement of faith," notwithstanding their distance from one another as to place in the world, which in *Cyprian's* words is, "the churches throughout the whole world, universally connected together by the bond of unity."<sup>1</sup> And certainly a stronger argument than this could not have been given for the *Ephesians'* cheerful obedience to their bishop, (which is the thing he aims at,) than the universal consent of all the bishops in the Christian world in the unity of the faith of Christ; so that as Christ is the will and counsel of the Father, because of that harmony and consent which is between their wills; so the bishops are the will and counsel of Christ, as cheerfully uniting in the profession of his faith. So that we see *Ignatius* himself cannot give a doubting mind satisfaction of the divine institution of bishops, when in the only place brought to that purpose, his sense is quite different from what it is brought for. So that the records of the church are far from deciding this controversy, as to the certainty of the form of government instituted by Christ, because of the ambiguity of those records as to the point of succession in the apostles, in that this succession might be only of a different degree, in that it is not clear and convincing in all places: in that where it is clearest, it is meant of a succession of doctrine, and not of persons; in that if it were of persons, yet presbyters are said to succeed the apostles as well as bishops, by the same persons who speak of these. By which last thing we have likewise cleared the *second* thing propounded, to show the ambiguity of the testimony of antiquity, which was *the promiscuous use of the names of bishop and presbyters, after the distinction between their office was brought in by the church*. For we have made it appear that the names are promiscuously used, when that succession which is sometimes attributed to bishops is at other times given to presbyters. Other instances might be brought of that nature; as, first, that of *Clemens Romanus* in his excellent epistle, which like the river *Alpheus* had run under ground for so many centuries of years, but hath now in these

<sup>1</sup> *Ecclesiæ universæ per totum mundum unitatis vinculo copulatæ.*



last times of the world appeared publicly to the view of the world, to make it appear how true that is which he saith the apostles did foresee, ὅτι ἔρις ἐστί περὶ τοῦ ὀνόματος τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς, "that there would be great contentions about the name of episcopacy:"<sup>1</sup> and so there are still, and that from his epistle too. For when in one place he tells us, *that the apostles ordained their first fruits to be bishops and deacons, τῶν μελλοντῶν πιστεῦειν*, "of those that should believe:"<sup>2</sup> afterwards he makes no scruple of calling those bishops presbyters in several places, μακαριοὶ οἱ προειδοπορήσαντες πρεσβύτεροι, "happy were the presbyters that travelled before,"<sup>3</sup> &c., and speaking of the present schism at Corinth, he saith, "It was a most shameful thing, beloved, and unworthy of our training in Christ."<sup>4</sup> To hear the firm and ancient church of Corinth, for the sake of one or two persons to raise a sedition against the presbyters; and afterwards, *μόνον το ποίμνιον τοῦ Χριστοῦ εἰρηνεῦτω κατὰ τῶν καθιζαμένων πρεσβυτέρων*; "Only let the flock of Christ enjoy its peace with the presbyters which are set over it."<sup>5</sup> But because this is said to be spoken before the time of distinction between bishops and presbyters, it being supposed that there were no subject presbyters then, (although no reason can be assigned why the apostles should ordain bishops, *τῶν μελλοντῶν πιστεῦειν*, "of those that should believe," and should not likewise ordain presbyters for them,) yet to take away all scruple, we shall go farther; when subject presbyters, as they are called, are acknowledged to be, and yet bishops are called presbyters then too; for which we have the clear testimony of the martyrs of the Gallican church in their epistle to *Eleutherius* bishop of Rome, who call *Irenæus* Πρεσβύτερον ἐκκλησίας, "the presbyter of the church," when, as *Blondell* observes, he had been nine years bishop of Lyons in the place of *Pothinus*;<sup>6</sup> neither doth *Blondell's* argument lie here, that because they call him the presbyter of the church, therefore he was no bishop, as his antagonist supposeth;<sup>7</sup> but he freely acknowledgeth him to have succeeded *Pothinus* there in his bishopric; but because after the difference arose between bishop and presbyters, yet they called him by the name of presbyter, it

<sup>1</sup> Ep. gr. lat. p. 57.

<sup>2</sup> Page 54.

<sup>3</sup> Page 57.

<sup>4</sup> Αἰσχρά, ἀγαπητοί, καὶ λίαν αἰσχρά καὶ ἀναξία τῆς ἐν Χριστῷ ἀγωγῆς ἀκουεσθαι τὴν βεβαιωτάτην καὶ ἀρχαίαν Κορινθίων ἐκκλησίαν δι' ἐν ᾗ δύο πρόσωπα στασιαζοῦσιν πρὸς τοὺς πρεσβυτέρους.

<sup>5</sup> Pag. 69, et p. 73, p. 2, 3.

<sup>6</sup> Apol. p. 31.

<sup>7</sup> Euseb. l. 5, cap. 3.

seems very improbable that when they were commending one to the bishop of another church, they should make use of the lowest name of honour then appropriated to subject presbyters, which instead of commending, were a great debasing of him, if they had looked on a superior order above those presbyters, as of divine institution, and thought there had been so great a distance between a bishop and subject presbyters, as we are made to believe there was. Which is, as if the master of a college in one university should be sent by the fellows of his society to the heads of the other, and should in his commendatory letters to them, be styled a senior fellow of that house; would not any one that read this, imagine that there was no difference between a senior fellow and a master, but only a primacy of order, that he was the first of the number without any power over the rest? This was the case of *Irenæus*: he is supposed to be bishop of the church of Lyons; he is sent by the church of Lyons on a message to the bishop of Rome; when notwithstanding his being bishop they call him *presbyter of that church*, (when there were other presbyters who were not bishops,) what could any one imagine by the reading of it, but that the bishop was nothing else but the senior presbyter, or one that had a primacy of order among, but no divine right to a power of jurisdiction over his fellow presbyters? More instances of this nature are brought there by that learned author, which the reader may compare with the answers, and then let him judge whether the testimony of antiquity has not too much ambiguity in it to decide the controversy clearly on either side. But that which seems yet more material, is, that which we observed in the *third place*, *that those who acknowledge the superiority of bishops over presbyters, do impute it to an act of the church, and do not ascribe it to any divine institution.* The testimony of *Jerome* to this purpose is well known, and hath been produced already; that of the counterfeit *Ambrose*, but true *Hilary*, is in every one's mouth upon this controversy; "At first the presbyters were called bishops, and one following succeeded another who withdrew. But because afterwards, presbyters began to be found unworthy to hold the primacy, and the council perceiving that not the 'order of rotation,' but merit determined by many ministers constituted the bishop, the method was changed, lest an unworthy successor 'should rashly usurp' the office, and be an offence to many."<sup>1</sup> Very

<sup>1</sup> Quia primum presbyteri episcopi appellabantur, ut recedente uno sequens ei

strange that an opinion so directly contrary to the divine right of episcopacy should be published by a deacon of the church of Rome, and these commentaries cited by *Austin*, with applause of the person, without stigmatising him for a heretic with *Arius*, if it had been the opinion of the church, that bishops in their power over presbyters did succeed the apostles by a divine right. Nothing more clear, than that he asserts all the difference between a bishop and presbyters to arise from an act of the church choosing men for their deserts, when before they succeeded in order of place. It is a mistake of *Blondell's*, to attribute this to the *Nicene council*; doubtless he means no more than what *Hierom* calls *concilium presbyterorum*, or which he himself means by *judicium sacerdotum*. The testimony of *Austin* hath been already mentioned. "According to the terms of honour, which now the usage of the church hath brought about, the episcopacy is superior to the presbytery."<sup>1</sup> Thereby implying it was not so always; else to what purpose serves that *jam obtinuit*, and that the original of the difference was from the church? But more express and full is *Isidore* himself the bishop of Seville, in Spain, speaking of presbyters. "To these, as to the bishops, a dispensation of the mysteries of God hath been committed; for they preside in the churches of Christ, and in the administration of the body and blood of the Lord, they are colleagues with the bishops. Likewise in doctrine, and in the duty of preaching to the people; but on account of authority, the ordination of the clergy has been reserved to the chief of the ministerial order only, lest the discipline of the church being claimed by many, might dissolve its harmony, and occasion offences."<sup>2</sup> What could be spoken more to our purpose than this is? he asserts the identity of power as well as name, in both bishops and presbyters in governing the church, in celebrating the eucharist, in the office of preaching to the people, only for the

succederet; sed quia cœperunt sequentes presbyteri indigni inveniri ad primatust enendos, mutata est ratio, prospiciente concilio, ut non ordo, sed meritum crearet episcopum multorum sacerdotum judicio constitutum, ne indignus temere usurparet et esset multis scandalum.—In Eph. 4.

<sup>1</sup> Secundum honorum vocabula quæ jam ecclesiæ usus obtinuit, episcopatus presbyterio major est.

<sup>2</sup> His sicut episcopis dispensatio mysteriorum Dei commissa est; præsunt enim ecclesiis Christi, et in confectione corporis et sanguinis consortes cum episcopis sunt; similiter et in doctrina populo et in officio prædicandi, sed sola propter auctoritatem summo sacerdoti clericorum ordinatio reservata est, ne à multis ecclesiæ disciplina vindicata, concordiam solveret, scandala generaret.—De Eccles. Officiis, l. 7, cap. 7.

greater honour of the bishop, and for preventing schisms in the church, the power of ordination was reserved to the bishop. By those words *propter auctoritatem*, he cannot possibly mean the authority of a divine command, for that his following words contradict, that it was to prevent schisms and scandals, and after produceth the whole place of *Jerome* to that purpose. Agreeable to this, is the judgment of the second council of Seville, in Spain, upon the occasion of the irregular proceeding of some presbyters ordained by *Agapius* bishop of Carduba. Their words are these: "For although many services of the ministry are common to them with the bishops, they are aware that some are prohibited to them by new ecclesiastical rules, as the consecration of presbyters, deacons and virgins. These are not lawful to presbyters. For the pontificate itself hath not the power, which by the authority of the canons is enjoined as due to the bishops only. So that by this, and the gradation of ranks, the elevation and dignity of the pontiffs might be manifest."<sup>1</sup> How much are we beholding to the ingenuity of a Spanish council, that doth so plainly disavow the pretence of any divine right to the episcopacy by them so strenuously asserted? All the right they plead for, is from the *novellæ et ecclesiasticæ regulæ*, "modern ecclesiastic rules," which import quite another thing from divine institution; and he that hath not learnt to distinguish between the authority of the canons of the church, and that of the Scriptures, will hardly ever understand the matter under debate with us: and certainly it is another thing to preserve the honour of the different degrees of the clergy, but especially of the chief among them, viz. the bishop, than to observe a thing merely out of obedience to the command of Christ, and upon the account of divine institution. That which is rejoined in answer to these testimonies, as far as I can learn, is only this, "that the council and *Isidore* followed *Jerome*, and so all make up but one single testimony." But might it not as well be said, that all that are for episcopacy did follow *Ignatius* or *Epiphanius*, and so all those did make up but one single testimony on the other side? Yea, I do as yet despair of finding any one single tes-

<sup>1</sup> Nam quamvis cum episcopis plurima illis ministeriorum communis sit dispensatio, quædam novellis et ecclesiasticis regulis sibi prohibita noverint, sicut presbyterorum et diaconorum et virginum consecratio, &c. Hæc enim omnia illicita esse presbyteris, quia pontificatus apicem non habent, qui solis deberi episcopis autoritate canonum præcipitur: ut per hoc et discretionem graduum, et dignitatis fastigium summi pontificis demonstratur.—Conc. Hispal. secundum decret. 7. apud B. in T. 4. p. 560.



timony in all antiquity, which doth in plain terms assert episcopacy, as it was settled by the practice of the primitive church in the ages following the apostles, to be of an unalterable divine right. Some expressions, I grant, in some of them seem to extol episcopacy very high; but then it is in order to the peace and unity of the church, and in that sense they may sometimes be admitted to call it divine and apostolical, not in regard of its institution, but of its end, in that it did, in their opinion, tend as much to preserve the unity of the church, as the apostles' power did over the churches while they were living. If any shall meet with expressions seeming to carry the fountain of episcopal power higher, let them remember to distinguish between the power itself, and the restrained exercise of that power; the former was from the apostles, but common to all dispensers of the word; the latter was appropriated to some, but by an act of the church, whereby an eminency of power was attributed to one, for the safety of the whole. And withal let them consider, that every hyperbolical expression of a father will not bear the weight of an argument, and how common it was to call things divine, which were conceived to be of excellent use, or did come from persons in authority in the church. One would think that should he meet with *θειον γράμμα*, "a divine letter," in the acts of the council of Chalcedon,<sup>1</sup> it could be rendered by nothing short of the scriptures: whereas they mean no more by it, but only the emperor's letters to the council. It hath been already observed how ready they were to call any custom of the church before their times an apostolical tradition. And as the heathens, when they had anything which they knew not whence it came, they usually called it *Διοπτetes*,<sup>2</sup> as though it came immediately from Heaven: so the fathers, when traditions were conveyed to them without the names of the authors, they concluded they could have no other fountain but the apostles. And thus we see, many traditions in several churches directly contrary to one another, were looked on as apostolical, only from the prevalency of this persuasion, that whatever they derived from their fathers, was of that nature. But then for that answer to the *council*, and *Isidore*, and *Jerome*, that they make but one testimony: I say, that although the words be of the same sense, yet they have the nature of a different testimony, upon these accounts. *First*, as produced by persons of different condition in the

<sup>1</sup> Conc. Chal. part 2, act 11.

<sup>2</sup> Fallen from Jupiter.

church; some think they are even with *Jerome*, when they tell us what a *pique* there was between him and *John*, bishop of Jerusalem; and, that he might have the better advantage of his adversary, when he could not raise himself up to the honour of episcopacy, he would bring that down to the state of presbytery; but as such entertain too unworthy thoughts of one of those fathers, whom they profess themselves admirers of; so this prejudice cannot possibly lie against *Isidore*, or the *council*: for the first was himself a bishop of no mean account in the church of God; and the *council* was composed of such; it could be no bias then of that nature could draw them to this opinion: and no doubt they would have been as forward to maintain their own authority in the church, as truth and conscience would give them leave. Therefore on this account one testimony of a single bishop, much more of a whole council of them, against their acting by divine authority in the church, is of more validity than ten for it; inasmuch as it cannot but be in reason supposed that none will speak anything against the authority they are in, or what may tend in the least to diminish it, but such as make more conscience of the truth, than of their own credit and esteem in the world. *Secondly*, in that it was done in different ages of the church: *Jerome* flourished about 380. *Isidore* succeeded *Leander* in Seville, 600. The council sat, 619. The council of Aquen which transcribes *Isidore*, and owns his doctrine, 816. So that certainly supposing the words of all to be the same, yet the testimony is of greater force, as it was owned in several ages of the church, by whole councils, without any the least control that we read of. And if this then must not be looked on as the sense of the church at that time, I know not how we can come to understand it. If what is positively maintained by different persons in different ages of the church, and in different places without any opposing it by writers of those ages, or condemning it by councils, may not be conceived to be the sense of the church at that time. So that laying all these things together, we may have enough to conclude the *ambiguity* at least, and thereby *incompetency* of the *testimony* of *antiquity* for finding out the certain form which the apostles observed in planting churches.

§ 18. We proceed to the *third* thing to show the incompetency of antiquity for deciding this controversy, which will be from the *partiality* of the testimony brought from thence. Two things will sufficiently manifest the *partiality* of the judgment of antiquity in this case. *First*, their apparent

judging of the practice of the first primitive church, according to the customs of their own. *Secondly*, their stiff and pertinacious adhering to private traditions contrary to one another, and both sides maintaining theirs as apostolical. First, *judging the practice of the apostles by that of their own times*; as is evident by *Theodore*, and the rest of the Greek commentators, assigning that as the reason why the presbyters spoken of in the epistles to *Timothy* and *Titus*, were not bishops in the sense of their age, because there could be but one bishop in a city, whereas there are more expressed in those places, as being in the several cities: and this is denied of apostolical times by the late pleaders for episcopacy; and it is said of them, that they spoke according to the custom of their own time. Again, it is now thought there were two bishops in apostolical times in several cities: the one the head of the Jewish *cætus*, "assembly," and the other of the Gentile. I enter not the dispute here, whether it was so or not, only I hence prove, how far those persons themselves who plead for the judgment of the fathers as deciding this controversy, are from thinking them impartial judges, when as to the grounds of their sentence they are confessed to speak only of the practice of their own time. Who can imagine any force in *Chrysostom's* argument, "that the presbyters who laid hands on *Timothy* must needs be bishops, because none do ordain in the church, but bishops," unless he makes this the *medium* of his argument. That whatever was the practice of the church in his days, was so in apostolical times. There is, I know not what strange influence in a received custom, if generally embraced, that doth possess men with a fancy, it was never otherwise than it is with them; nay, when they imagine the necessity of such a custom at present in the church they presently think it could never be otherwise than it is. But of this I have spoken somewhat already. *Secondly*, that which makes it appear how *partial* the judgment of antiquity is, *in adhering to their particular traditions, and calling them apostolical, though contrary to one another*. How can we then fix on the testimony of antiquity as anything certain or impartial in this case? when it hath been found so evidently partial in a case of less concern than this is. A witness that hath once betrayed his faithfulness in the open court, will hardly have his evidence taken in a case of moment, especially when the cause must stand or fall according to his single testimony. For my part, I see not how any man that would see reason for what he doth, can adhere to the church for an un-

questionable tradition received from the apostles; when in the case of keeping Easter, whether with the Jews on the fourteenth moon, or only on the Lord's day, there was so much unreasonable heat showed on both sides, and such confidence, that on either side their tradition was apostolical: the story of which is related by *Eusebius*,<sup>1</sup> and *Socrates*,<sup>2</sup> and many others. They had herein all the advantages imaginable in order to the knowing the certainty of the thing then in question among them. As their nearness to apostolical times, being but one remove from them: yea the persons contending pleaded personal acquaintance with some of the apostles themselves, as *Polycarp* with *John*, and *Anicetus* of Rome, that he had his tradition from *St. Peter*; and yet so great were the heats, so irreconcilable the controversy, that they proceeded to dart the thunderbolt of excommunication in one another's faces; as *Victor*, with more zeal than piety, threw presently the Asiatic churches all out of communion, only for differing as to this tradition. The small coals of this fire kindled a whole *Ætna* of contention in the Christian world, the smoke and ashes, nay the flames of which, by the help of *the prince of air*, were blown over into the bosom of the then almost infant northern churches of Britain, where a solemn dispute was caused upon this quarrel between *Colmannus* on one side, and *Wilfride* on the other. The like contest was upon this occasion between *Augustine* the monk, and the British bishops. The observation of this strange combustion in the primitive church upon the account of so vain, frivolous, unnecessary a thing as this was, drew this note from a learned and judicious man, formerly quoted, in his *Tract of Schism*: "By this we may plainly set the danger of our appeal to antiquity, for resolution in controverted points of faith. O how small relief are we to expect from thence! For if the discretion of the chiefest guides and directors of the church did in a point so trivial, so inconsiderable, so mainly fail them, as not to see the truth in a subject, wherein it is the greater marvel how they could avoid the sight of it; can we, without the imputation of great grossness and folly, think so poor spirited persons, competent judges of the question now on foot betwixt the churches?" Thus that person, as able to make the best improvement of the fathers as any of those who profess themselves the most superstitious admirers of antiquity. But if we must stand to the judgment of the fathers, let us

<sup>1</sup> Eccles. Hist. l. 5, c. 25.<sup>2</sup> Socrat. l. 15, c. 21.



stand to it in this, that no tradition is any further to be embraced, than as it is founded on the word of God. For which purpose those words of *Cyprian*<sup>1</sup> are very observable. He asserts it "an easy matter for truly religious and plain-hearted men to lay aside their error, and to find out the truth, which is by returning to the head and spring of divine tradition,"<sup>2</sup> viz. the scriptures; which he expresseth further, with an elegant similitude. His meaning is, "That as when a channel suddenly fails, we presently inquire where and how the breach was made, and look to the spring and fountain, to see the waters be fully conveyed from thence, as formerly: so upon any failure in the tradition of the church, our only recourse must be to the true fountain of tradition the word of God, and ground the reason of our action upon that which was the foundation of our profession."<sup>3</sup> And when *Stephen* the bishop of Rome would tether him to tradition, *Cyprian* keeps his liberty by this close question: "Whence is that tradition? or came it descending from our Lord's authority and the evangelists, or from the mandates of the apostles and their epistles?—But if it be enjoined either in the epistles or acts of the apostles, let that divine and holy tradition be observed."<sup>4</sup> We see this good man would not balk his way on foot for the great bugbear of tradition, unless it did bear the character of a divine truth in it, and could produce the *credentials* of scripture to testify its authority to him. To the same purpose that stout bishop of Cappadocia, *Firmilian*, whose unhappiness with *Cyprian*, was only that of *Job's* friends, that they excellently managed a bad cause, and with far more of the spirit

<sup>1</sup> Cyprian, ep. 47, n. 13.

<sup>2</sup> In compendio est autem apud religiosas et simplices mentes, et errorem deponere, et invenire atque erucere veritatem: nam si ad divinæ traditionis caput et originem revertamur, cessat error humanus.

<sup>3</sup> Si canal is aquam ducens, qui copiose prius et largiter profluebat, subito deficiat, nonne ad fontem pergatur ut illic defectionis ratio noscatur, utrumne arescentibus venis, in capite unda siccaverit; an verò integra deinde et plena procurrens, in medio itinere destiterit? ut si vitio interrupti aut bibuli canal is effectum est, quò minus aqua continua perseveranter et jugiter flueret, refecto et confirmato canali ad usum atque ad potum civitalis aqua collecta eadem ubertate atque integritate repræsentaretur, qua de fonte proficiscitur. Quod et nunc facere oportet Dei sacerdotes præcepta divina servantes, ut si in aliquo mutaverit (l. nutaverit) et vacillaverit veritas, ad originem Dominicam, et evangelicam, et apostolicam traditionem revertamur, et inde surgat actus nostri ratio, unde et ordo et origo surrexit.—Ib. n. 14.

<sup>4</sup> Unde illa traditio? utrumne de Dominica et evangelica auctoritate descendens, an de apostolorum mandatis atque epistolis veniens.—Si ergo aut evangelis præcipitur, aut in apostolorum epistolis, aut actibus continetur—observetur divina hæc et sancta traditio.

of Christianity,<sup>1</sup> than *Stephen did*, who was to be justified in nothing but the truth he defended. "To follow them at Rome, is not to observe those, which have in all churches been handed over from the beginning, and then in vain it would be to offer the pretext of apostolical authority,"<sup>2</sup> which he there makes out at large, viz. that the church of Rome had gathered corruption betimes, which after broke out into an *impostume* in the *head* of it. Where then must we find the certain way of resolving the controversy we are upon? The scriptures determine it not; the fathers tell us there is no believing tradition any further than it is founded on scripture; thus are we sent back from one to the other, till at last we conclude there is no certain way at all left to find out a decision of it. Not that we are left at such uncertainties as to matters of faith, (I would not be so mistaken.) We have *Archimedes' postulatium*<sup>3</sup> granted us for that, a place to fix our faith on, though the world be moved out of its place, I mean the undoubted word of God: but as to matters of fact not clearly revealed in scripture, no certainty can be had of them, from the hovering light of unconstant tradition. Neither is it only unconstant, but in many things repugnant to itself, which was the last consideration to be spoken to, in reference to the showing the incompetency of antiquity for deciding our controversy. Well, then, suppose we ourselves now waiting for the final *verdict* of church tradition to determine our present cause; if the *jury* cannot agree, we are as far from satisfaction as ever; and this is certainly the case we are now in. The main difficulty lies in the immediate succession to the apostles: if that were but once cleared, we might bear with interruptions afterwards: but the main seat of the controversy lies there, whether the apostles upon their withdrawing from the government of churches did substitute single persons to succeed them or not; so that unless that be cleared, the very *deed* of *gift* is questioned: and if that could be made appear, all other things would speedily follow. Yes, *say some*, that is clear: for at Jerusalem, Antioch, and Rome, it is evident that single persons were entrusted with the government of churches. In Jerusalem, say they, *James* the brother of our Lord, was

<sup>1</sup> Stillingfleet's meaning here demands investigation.

<sup>2</sup> Eos autem, saith Firmilian, qui Romæ sunt, non ea in omnibus observare quæ sint ab origine tradita, et frustra apostolorum auctoritatem prætere. — Firmil. ep. inter ep. Cyprian. 75, n. 5.

<sup>3</sup> Δός μου στῶ, καὶ τὴν γῆν κινῶ, "give me whereon to stand, and I will shake the earth."

made bishop by the apostles: but whence doth that appear? It is said from *Hegesippus* in *Eusebius*.<sup>1</sup> But what if he say no such thing? his words are these, διαδεχεται την εκκλησιαν μετα των αποστολων, which is there interpreted, *Ecclesiæ administrationem una cum cæteris apostolis suscepit*, "he received the administration of the church together with the rest of the apostles." And no more is thereby meant, but that this *James* who is by the ancients conceived to be only a disciple before, is now taken into a higher charge; and invested in a power of governing the church as the apostles were. His power, it is plain, was of the same nature with that of the apostles themselves: and who will go about to degrade them so much as to reduce them to the office of ordinary bishops? *James* in probability did exercise his apostleship the most at Jerusalem, where by the scriptures we find him *resident*, and from hence the church afterwards, because of his not travelling abroad as the other apostles did, according to the language of their own times, fixed the title of bishop upon him. But greater difference we shall find in those who are pleaded for, as successors of the apostles. At Antioch some, as *Origen* and *Eusebius*, make *Ignatius* to succeed *Peter*; *Jerome* makes him the third bishop, and placeth *Euodius* before him. Others therefore to solve that, make them cotemporary bishops; the one of the church of the Jews, the other of the Gentiles: with what congruity to their *hypothesis* of a single bishop and deacons placed in every city, I know not: but that *salvo* hath been discussed before.<sup>2</sup> Come we therefore to Rome, and here the succession is as muddy as the Tiber itself; for here *Tertullian*, *Rufinus*, and several others place *Clement* next to *Peter*; *Irenæus* and *Eusebius* set *Anacletus* before him; *Epiphanius* and *Optatus* both *Anacletus* and *Cletus*; *Augustinus* and *Damasus* with others, make *Anacletus*, *Cletus*, and *Linus*, all to precede him. What way shall we find to extricate ourselves out of this labyrinth, so as to reconcile it with the certainty of the form of government in the apostles' times? Certainly, if the *line of succession* fail us here, when we most need it, we have little cause to *pin our faith* upon it as to the certainty of any particular form of church government settled in the apostles' times, that can be drawn from the help of the records of the primitive church: which must be first cleared of all *defectiveness*, *ambiguity*, *partiality*, and *confusion*; before the thing we inquire for can be extracted out of them.

<sup>1</sup> Hist Eccl. l. 2, cap. 22.

<sup>2</sup> V. Migdeburg. Cent. 1, l. 2, c. 10.

§ 19. Having thus far shown that we have no absolute certainty of what form of government was settled by the apostles in the several churches of their plantation: The next *consideration* which follows to be spoken of, is, *that the apostles in probability did not observe any one fixed course of settling the government of churches, but settled it according to the several circumstances of places and persons which they had to deal with.* This will be *ex abundanti*, “more than sufficient,” as to the thing by me designed, which could be sufficiently cleared without this: and therefore I lay it not as the foundation of my *thesis*, but only as a doctrine of probability, which may serve to reconcile the controversies on foot about church government. For if this be made appear, then it may be both granted that the apostles did settle the government in the church in a college of presbyters, and in a bishop and deacons too, according to the diversity of places, and the variety of circumstances. It is easy to observe, that as to rites and customs in the church, the original of most men’s mistakes, is, concluding that to be the general practice of the church, which they meet with in some places: whereas that is most true which *Firmiliam* tells us: “In most provinces, many things were varied according to the diversity of places and characters: nevertheless, the catholic churches did not, on this account, swerve from peace and unity;”<sup>1</sup> so, as to matter of government, men’s mistakes do arise from an universal conclusion deduced out of particular premises; and what they think was done in one place, they conclude must be done in all; whereas these are the grounds inducing me probably to conclude that they observed not the same course in all places; which, when an impartial reader hath soberly considered, (with what hath gone before,) I am in hopes, the *novelty* of this opinion may not prejudice its entertainment with him. My grounds are these: *first, from the different state, condition and quantity of the churches planted by the apostles. Secondly, from the multitude of unfixed officers in the church then, who acted with authority over the church where they were resident. Thirdly, from the different customs observed in several churches, as to their government after the apostles’ decease.* I begin with the first, *the different state, condition, and quantity of the churches planted*

<sup>1</sup> In plurimis provinciis, multa pro locorum et nominum, (l. hominum) diversitate, variantur; nec tamen propter hoc ab ecclesiæ catholicæ pace atq; unitate discessum est.—Cypri. Ep. 75, n. 5.



*by the apostles*, for which we are to consider these things: *first*, that God did not give the apostles alike success of their labours in all places; *secondly*, that a small number of believers did not require the same number which a great church did, to teach and govern them; *thirdly*, that the apostles did settle church officers according to the probability of increase of believers, and in order thereto, in some great places. *First, that God did not give the apostles equal success to their labours in all places.* After God called them to be *fishers of men*, it was not every draught which filled their net with whole shoals of fishes; sometimes they might toil all night still and catch nothing, or very little. It was not every sermon of *Peter's* which converted three thousand: the whole world might at that rate soon have become Christian, although there had been but few preachers besides the apostles. God gave them strange success at first, to encourage them the better to meet with difficulties afterwards; in some places God told them he had much people, in others we read but of few that believed, "At Corinth, *Paul* plants, and *Apollos* waters, and God gives an abundant increase;" but at Athens, (where, if moral dispositions had fitted men for grace, and the improvements of nature, we might have expected the greatest number of converts,) yet here we read of many mocking, and others delaying, and but of very few believing;<sup>1</sup> *Dionysius* and *Damaris*, and some others with them. The plantations of the apostles were very different, not from the nature of the soil they had to deal with, but from the different influence of the divine spirit upon their endeavours in several places. We cannot think that the church at Cenchrea,<sup>2</sup> (for so it is called,) was as well stocked with believers as that at Corinth. Nay, the churches generally in the apostles' times were not so filled with numbers, as men are apt to imagine. I can as soon hope to find in apostolical times *diocesan* churches as *classical* and *provincial*; but this doth not much advantage the principles of the congregational men, as I have already demonstrated.<sup>3</sup> Yet I do not think that all churches in the apostles' times were only one congregation; but as there were in cities many synagogues, so there might be many churches out of those synagogues enjoying their former liberties and privileges. And they that will show me where five thousand Jews and more did ordinarily meet in one of their synagogues for public

<sup>1</sup> Acts xvii. 34.<sup>2</sup> Rom. xvi. 1.<sup>3</sup> Par. I, ch. 6, s. 8, p. 129.

worship, may gain something upon me, in order to believing the church of Jerusalem to be but one congregation, and yet not persuade me, till they have made it appear that the Christians then had as public solemn set meetings as the Jews had, which he that understands the state of the churches at that time, will hardly yield to the belief of. I confess, I cannot see any rule in scripture laid down for distributing congregations: but this necessity would put them upon, and therefore it were needless to prescribe them; and very little, if any, reason can I see on the other side, why, where there were so much people as to make distinct congregations, they must make distinct churches from one another; but of that largely in the next chapter. All churches then, we see, were not of an equal extent. The *second* premiss will grant, viz. that a small church did not require the same number of officers to rule it, which a great one did. For the duty of officers lying in reference to the people, where the people was but few, one constant settled officer with deacons under him, might with as much ease discharge the work, as in a numerous church, the joint help of many officers was necessary to carry on. The same reason which tells us that a large flock of sheep consisting of many thousands doth call for many shepherds to attend them, doth likewise tell us that a small flock may be governed with the care of one single shepherd watching continually over them. The *third* premiss was that in great cities the apostles did not only respect the present guidance of those that were converted, but established such as might be useful for the converting and bringing in of others to the faith, who were as yet *strangers to the covenant of promise and aliens from the πολιτεια*, "*polity*" or *society of Christians*. And here I conceive a mistake of some men lies, when they think the apostles respected only the ruling of those who were already converted; for though this were one part of their work, yet they had an eye to the main design then on foot, the subjecting the world to the obedience of faith; in order to which it was necessary in places of great resort and extent, to place not only such as might be sufficient to superintend the affairs of the church, but such as might lay out themselves the most in preaching the gospel in order to converting others. Having laid down these things by way of premisal, we shall see what advantage we can make of them in order to our purpose. *First*, then I say, *that in churches consisting of a small number of believers, where there was no great probability of a large increase afterwards: one single pastor with deacons under*

him, was only constituted by the apostles for the ruling of those churches. Where the work was not so great, but a pastor and deacons might do it, what need was there of having more? and in the great scarcity of fit persons for settled rulers then, and the great multitude and necessity of unfixed officers for preaching the gospel abroad, many persons fit for that work could not be spared to be constantly resident upon a place. Now that in some places at first there were none placed but only a pastor and deacons, I shall confirm by these following testimonies. The first is that of *Clement* in his epistle: "The apostles therefore preaching abroad through countries and cities, ordained the first fruits of such as believed, having proved them by the spirit, to be bishops and deacons for them that should afterwards believe."<sup>1</sup> Whether by χωραι we understand *villages* or *regions*, is not material; for it is certain here the author takes it as distinct from cities; and there is nothing, I grant, expressed where the apostles did place bishops and deacons exclusive of other places, i. e. whether only in cities or countries; but it is evident by this, that wherever they planted churches, they ordained bishops and deacons, whether those churches were in the city or country. And here we find no other officers settled in those churches, but bishops and deacons; and that there was no more in those churches than he speaks of, appears from his design of paralleling the church officers in the gospel, to those under the law: and therefore it was here necessary to enumerate all that were then in the churches. The main controversy is, what these bishops were; whether many in one place; or only one; and if but one, whether a bishop in the modern sense or not. For the first, here is nothing implying any necessity of having more than one in a place, which will further be made appear by and by, out of other testimonies which will help to explain this. As for the other thing, we must divide the notion of a bishop: for he is either such a one as hath none over him in the church; or he is such a one as hath a power over presbyters acting under him, and by authority derived from him. If we take it in the first sense, so every pastor of a church having none exercising jurisdiction over him, is a bishop; and so every such single pastor in the churches of the primitive times was a bishop in this sense, as every master of a family before societies for government were introduced, might be

<sup>1</sup> Κατα χωρας ουν και πολεις κηρυσσοντες, καθιστανον τας απαρχας αυτων δοκιμασαντες τω πνευματι, εις επισκοπους και διακονους των μελλοντων πιστευειν.—P. 53.

called a king, because he had none above him to command him: but if we take a bishop in the more proper sense, for one that hath power over presbyters and people, such a one these single pastors were not, could not be. For it is supposed that these were only single pastors. But then it is said that after other presbyters were appointed, then these single pastors were properly bishops; but to that I answer: *First*, they could not be proper bishops by virtue of their first constitution; for then they had no power over any presbyters, but only over the deacons and people; and therefore it would be well worth considering how a power of jurisdiction over presbyters can be derived, from those single pastors of churches, that had no presbyters joined with them. It must be then clearly and evidently proved that it was the apostle's intention that these single pastors should have the power over presbyters, when the church's necessity did require their help, which intention must be evinced and declared by some manifestation of it as a law of Christ, or nothing can thence be deduced of perpetual concern to the church of Christ. *Secondly*, either they were bishops before, or only after the appointment of presbyters; if before, then a bishop, and a presbyter having no bishop over him, are all one; if after only, then it was by his communicating power to presbyters to be such, or their choice which made him their bishop; if the first, then presbyters *quoad ordinem*, "as to the order," are only a human institution, it being acknowledged that no evidence can be brought from scripture for them; and for any act of the apostles not recorded in scripture for the constituting of them, it must go among unwritten traditions; and if that be a law still binding the church, then there are such which occur not in the word of God, and so that must be an imperfect copy of divine laws. If he were made bishop by an act of the presbyters, then presbyters have power to make a bishop, and so episcopacy is a human institution, depending upon the voluntary act of presbyters. But the clearest evidence for one single pastor with deacons in some churches at the beginning of Christianity, is that of *Epiphanius*, which, though somewhat large, I shall recite, because, if I mistake not, the curtailings of this testimony hath made it speak otherwise than ever *Epiphanius* meant. The sense of *Epiphanius* is very intricate and obscure; we shall endeavour to explain it. He is giving *Arius* an account why *Paul* in his epistle to *Timothy* mentions only bishops and deacons, and passeth over presbyters. His account is this: "First he chargeth *Arius* with



ignorance of the series of history, (which he calls *ακολουθία τας αληθειας*),<sup>1</sup> and the profound and ancient records of the church, wherein it is expressed, that upon the first preaching of the gospel, the apostle wrote according to the present state of things. Where bishops not yet appointed, (for so certainly it should be read *ὅπου μὴ ἦσαν ἐπίσκοποι*, not *ὅπου μὲν*, for then he must contradict himself.) The apostle writes to bishops and deacons, (for the apostles could not settle all things at first;) for there was a necessity of presbyters and deacons; for by these two orders all ecclesiastical offices might be performed: “for where (so I read it *ὅπου γὰρ*, not *ὅπου δέ*, as the sense clearly carries it,) there was not found any worthy of being a bishop, the place remained without one. But where necessity required one, and there were some found fit for that office, there some were ordained bishops; but for want of convenient number, there could be no presbyters found out to be ordained, and in such places they were contented with the bishop and deacons; for without their ministry the bishop could not be.”<sup>2</sup> So that according to *Epiphanius*, there were three several states of churches in the apostles’ times; first some churches where there were only presbyters and deacons without a bishop. For, if *Epiphanius* speaks not at first of places where presbyters were without a bishop; he must be guilty of a vain and empty tautology, for he after tells us, where the necessity of the church required it, a bishop was made; therefore before he speaks of places only where presbyters and deacons were; and otherwise he would not answer *Arius* about 1 *Tim.* iv. 14, which it is his design to do, about “the laying on of the hands of the presbytery.” He grants then that at first in some places there were only presbyters and deacons, as when the apostle writes to bishops and deacons, (where bishops at that time of the church were only presbyters), of which two orders, presbyters and deacons, there was an absolute necessity; and the account he gives why they settled no higher order above them is, *ὅν γὰρ πάντα εὐθὺς ᾠδυνήθησαν οἱ ἀποστολοὶ καταθεῖναι*, “the apostles could not settle

<sup>1</sup> The train of the truth.

<sup>2</sup> Καὶ οὐκ εἶδεν ὁ τὴν ἀκολουθίαν τῆς ἀληθείας ἀγνοήσας, καὶ ἰσορροίᾳ βαθυτάταις μὴ ἐντυχὼν, ὅτι νεῦν οὗτος κηρυγματος, πρὸς τὰ ὑποκείμενα ἐγράψεν ὁ ἅγιος ἀποστόλος ὅπου μὲν ἦσαν ἐπίσκοποι ἤδη κατασταθέντες, ἐγράψεν ἐπισκοποῖς καὶ διακονοῖς οὐ γὰρ πάντα εὐθὺς ἐδυνήθησαν οἱ ἀποστολοὶ καταθεῖναι προεσβυτερῶν γὰρ ἐμνέτο χρεῖα καὶ διακονῶν. διὰ γὰρ τῶν δύο τούτων τὰ ἐκκλησιαστικά δύναται πηλερροῦσθαι, ὅπου δὲ οὐκ εὐρέθη τις ἅγιος ἐπισκοπῆς, ἐμείνεν ὁ τόπος χωρὶς ἐπισκοπῆς ὅπου δὲ γέγονε χρεῖα καὶ ἦσαν ἅγιοι ἐπισκοπῆς, καταστάθησαν ἐπίσκοποι. πληθὺς δὲ μὴ οὗτος, οὐχ εὐρέθησαν ἐν αὐτοῖς προεσβυτεροὶ κατασταθεῖναι, καὶ ᾤκησαν ἐπὶ τῷ κατὰ τόπον μόνῳ ἐπισκοπῶν ἀνεῖ δὲ διακονοῦ ἐπισκοπῶν ἀδύνατον εἶναι, &c.—*Epiph. c. Arium. heres. 75, p. 905, et c. ed. Petav.*

all things at first;" which words are to be read with a parenthesis, giving an account why sometimes only bishops and deacons were settled, that is, presbyters so called. But, saith he, where necessity called for a higher order of bishops above presbyters, and any were found qualified for it, there such were appointed; and if by reason of the want of persons of sufficient abilities to be made presbyters in those places, there they were contented with such a superior bishop and deacons assisting him. Some churches then, according to his judgment, had a company of presbyters to rule them being assisted with deacons; others had only a single bishop with deacons; and after when the numbers were increased, and persons qualified were found, there were both bishops, presbyters and deacons. For the account which he gives of the former want of some officers in some churches, is this: "For the church not yet having all her offices filled, things were fain to remain in that state. For nothing can be completed at first, but in process of time every thing receives its due perfection."<sup>1</sup> So that *Epiphanius* doth not (as it is thought by some) say, that in the first times there were none but bishops and deacons in all churches, but in some there were presbyters and deacons, in others bishops and deacons, according to their state, condition and necessity. *Epiphanius* then fully and clearly expresseth my opinion, in reference to the apostles not observing any one constant course in all churches, but settling sometimes many presbyters with deacons, sometimes only one pastor (who is therefore called a bishop) with deacons, and so settling officers according to the particular occasions of each. The next considerable testimony to our purpose, is that of *Clemens Alexandrinus*, in *Eusebius*, concerning *St. John* after his return out of the Isle of Patmos to Ephesus, upon the death of *Domitian*. "He went abroad upon invitation into the neighbouring provinces of the Gentiles, in some places constituting bishops; in some setting in order whole churches; in others choosing out one from among the rest of those who were designed by the Spirit of God, whom he set over the church."<sup>2</sup> So *Sal-*

<sup>1</sup> Οὕτω (read οὕτω, as the learned Dr. well corrects it) της εκκλησιας λαβουσης τα πληρωματα της οικονομιας, οὕτω κατὰ εκείνου καιρου ησαν οἱ τοποι, και γαρ ἔκαστον πραγμα ουκ ἀπ' αρχης τα καντα εσχεν αλλα προβαινοντος του χρονου τα προς τελειωσιν χρεων κατητιζετο.

<sup>2</sup> Απειρει παρακαλουμενος και επι τα πλησιοχωρατων εθνων ὅτου μην Επισκοπους καταστησαν, ὅπου δε ὅλας εκκλησιας αρμισαν, ὅπου γε κληρον ἕνα τινα των υπο του πνευματος σημναινομενων κληρωσαν.

*masius*<sup>1</sup> contends it must be translated, κληρον εἰς τινὰ κληρωσων, "choosing one into the clergy;" for, those who were chosen bishops, are said κληρονσθαι επισκοπην, and they that choose are said, κληρωται. Whence *Salmasius* gathers out of these words the very thing I am now upon: "The probability is, that in larger cities many presbyters were wont to be ordained; but that in districts, villages, and small towns which the Greeks call χωμαι," (any small town not walled in,) κομειπολεις, (a town between a city and a village;) "it is very likely that one presbyter only, so long as the number of believers there was not great, sufficed."<sup>2</sup> We have yet one author more who speaks fully to our purpose. It is the author of the Commentaries under *Ambrose's* name, who frequently asserts this opinion I am now making good. Upon the fourth of Ephesians, he largely discourseth how things were settled at first, by the apostles, by degrees, in the church of God, evidently showing that the apostles did not at first observe any settled constant course, but acted according to present conveniency, as they saw good, in order to the promoting and advancing the church's interest. "After that in all places, churches were established, and offices appointed, the matter when settled was otherwise than when it began."<sup>3</sup> Thereby declaring his opinion, that while churches were constituting, no certain course was observed. For, as he goes on, "For at first all taught, and all baptized on whatever day or season there was occasion; and the people increasing, it was granted to all to preach, baptize, and to explain the scriptures. But when the church had surrounded all places, and small assemblies were held, their governors and the rest of the officers were appointed; and no one, who was not ordained, presumed to take of the clergy an office, with which he knew he was not entrusted. But the church began to be governed according to another order and provision: for if all could do the same things, they would appear to be common, and of little value, and the discipline injudicious. Therefore the writings of the apostle, written during the primitive organization, do not appear to agree with that order of things, which now exist in the church; for he

<sup>1</sup> Walo. Messal. cap. 4, p. 224, &c.

<sup>2</sup> In majoribus urbibus plures, in minoribus pauciores presbyteros ordinari solitos, probabile est. In pagis autem aut vicis, vel pusillis oppidis, quales χωμαι vel κομειπολεις vocabantur Græci, unum aliquem presbyterum per illa præcipuè tempora quibus non magnus erat numerus fidelium, suffecisse verisimile est.

<sup>3</sup> Postquam omnibus locis ecclesiæ sunt constitutæ, et officia ordinata, aliter composita res est quam cœperat.

calls Timothy, who was made a presbyter by him, a bishop; for so at first, the presbyters were called, amongst whom this was the course, that as one withdrew, another should take his place."<sup>1</sup> This opinion of his, he takes occasion to speak of in several other places. Upon Rom. 16; "Governors of churches were as yet set up but in few places;"<sup>2</sup> and upon 1 Cor. i. "On this account, he writes to the church, because as yet, governors were not appointed in all churches,"<sup>3</sup> and on 1 Cor. xi. "The presbyters coming together, because as yet governors had not been appointed in all churches."<sup>4</sup> By all which it is most evident, that this both learned and ancient author, cited with no small respect by *St. Austin*, doth not conceive that the apostles did observe any settled form in the governing of churches, but acted according to principles of prudence, according to the necessities and occasions of each by them planted: so that where there were small churches, one pastor with deacons might suffice: in greater some were governed by presbyters acting in common council: others, though very few at first, had rectors placed over them, for superintending the affairs of the church.

*Secondly, In churches consisting of a multitude of believers, or where there was a probability of great increase by preaching the gospel, the apostles did settle a college of presbyters, whose office was partly to govern the church already formed, and partly to labour in converting more.* So that in all great cities, where either the work was already great by the number of believers, in order to the discharging of pastoral duties to them, or where it was great in reference to the number they laboured in the conversion of, it seems most consonant to reason and scripture, that the work should

<sup>1</sup> Primum enim omnes docebant, et omnes baptizabant, quibuscunque diebus vel temporibus fuisset occasio, &c. Ut ergo cresceret plebs et multiplicaretur, omnibus inter initia concessum est et evangelizare, et baptizare, et scripturas in ecclesia explanare. At ubi omnia loca circumplexa est ecclesia, conventicula constituta sunt, et rectores et cætera officia in ecclesiis sunt ordinata; ut nullus de Clero auderet, qui ordinatus non esset, præsumere officium quod sciret non sibi creditum vel concessum; et cæpit alio ordine et providentiâ gubernari ecclesia; quia si omnes eadem possent, irrationabile esset, et vulgaris res et villissima videretur, &c. Idè non per omnia conveniunt scripta apostoli ordinationi quæ nunc est in ecclesia, quia hæc inter primordia sunt scripta; nam et Timotheum, (presbyterum à se creatum,) episcopum vocat; quia primum presbyteri episcopi appellabantur, ut recedente uno sequens ei succederet, &c.

<sup>2</sup> Adhuc rectores ecclesiæ paucis erant in locis.

<sup>3</sup> Propterea ecclesiæ scribit, quia adhuc singulis ecclesiis rectores non erant instituti.

<sup>4</sup> Convenientibus presbyteris, quia adhuc rectores ecclesiis non omnibus locis erant constituti.



be carried on by the joint assistance of many associated in the same. For, is it any ways probable that the apostles should ordain bishops τῶν μελλόντων πιστεῖν, "of such as should believe," as *Clemens* speaks; and not ordain persons in order to the causing them to believe? They have either a very low opinion of the work of a gospel bishop, or very little consideration of the zeal, activity and diligence which was then used in preaching, reproving, exhorting, in season, out of season, that think one single person was able to undergo it all. Discipline was a great deal more strict then, preaching more diligent, men more apprehensive of the weight of their function, than for any to undertake such a care and charge of souls, that it was impossible for them ever to know, observe, or watch over so as to give an account for them. Besides, while we suppose this one person employed in the duties of his flock, what leisure or time could such a one have to preach to the Gentiles and unbelieving Jews in order to their conversion? The apostles did not certainly aim at the setting up the honour of any one person, making the office of the church a matter of state and dignity more than employment, but they chose men for their activity in preaching the gospel, and for their usefulness in labouring to add continually to the church. Men that were employed in the church then, did not consult for their ease or honour, and thought it not enough for them to sit still and bid others work, but they were of *Paul's* mind: "Necessity was laid upon them; yea, woe was unto them if they preached not the gospel."<sup>1</sup> Public prayers were not then looked on as the more principal end of Christian assemblies than preaching, nor consequently that it was the more principal office of the stewards of the mysteries of God, to read the public prayers of the church, than to preach in season and out of season. And is it not great pity, two such excellent and necessary duties should ever be set at variance, much less one so preferred before the other, that the one must be esteemed as *Sarah*, and the other almost undergo the hardship of *Hagar*, to be looked on as the bondwoman of the synagogue, and be turned out of doors? Praying and preaching are the *Jachin* and *Boaz*<sup>2</sup> of the temple, like *Rachel* and *Leah*, both which built up the house of Israel: but though *Rachel* be fair and beautiful, yet *Leah* is the more fruitful: though prayer be lovely and amiable in the sight of God, when it comes from a heart seriously affected with what

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. ix. 16.<sup>2</sup> 1 Kings vii. 21.

it speaks; yet preaching tends more to the turning men's souls from sin unto God. Were the apostles commissioned by Christ to go pray or preach? and what is it wherein the ministers of the gospel succeed the apostles? Is it in the office of praying, or preaching? Was *Paul* sent not to baptize, but to preach the gospel? and shall we think those who succeed *Paul* in his office of preaching, are to look upon anything else as more their work than that? Are ministers in their ordination sent forth to be readers of public prayers, or to be dispensers of God's holy word? Are they ordained wholly to this, and shall this be the less principal part of their work? aye; but the reason is unanswerable, that praying is the more principal end of Christian assemblies than preaching: for, the one is the end, and the other the means. If by end, be meant the ultimate end of all Christian duties, that cannot be prayer: for that is a means itself in order to that; but the chief end is the fitting souls for eternal praises; if then this unanswerable reason hold good, the principal end of Christian assemblies must be only praises of God, and not prayers. If by the end, be meant the immediate end of preaching as that it refers to, that cannot be; for the immediate end of preaching, if the apostle may be judge, is instruction and edification in the faith; rather preaching is the end of praying, inasmuch as the blessings conveyed by preaching are the things which men pray for. But this is but one of those unhappy consequences which follows men's judging of the service of God, rather by the practices of the church, when it came to enjoy ease and plenty, than by the ways and practices of the first and purest apostolical times: when the apostles, who were best able to judge of their own duty, looked upon themselves as most concerned in the preaching of the gospel. But to this it is commonly said, that "there was great reason for it then, because the world was to be converted to Christianity, and therefore preaching was the more necessary work at that time; but when a nation is converted to the faith,<sup>1</sup> that necessity ceaseth." It is granted, that the preaching of the gospel in regard to its universal extent was more necessary then, which was the foundation of Christ's instituting the apostolical office with an unlimited commission; but if we take preaching as referring to particular congregations, there is the same necessity now that there was then. People need as much instruction as ever, and so much the more

<sup>1</sup> When was that? Who was ever so blind as to assert that this ever yet has been a fact? Yet we are told that it will be.

in that they are apt to think now the name of Christians will carry them to Heaven. It is a too common and very dangerous deceit of men, to look upon religion more as a profession than matter of life, more as a notion than an inward temper. Men must be beat off from more things which they are apt to trust to for salvation now, than in those times. Men could not think so much then, that diligence in public assemblies, and attendance at public prayers, was the main religion. Few would profess Christianity in those times, but such as were resolved beforehand rather to let go their lives than their profession: but the more profess it now, without understanding the terms of salvation; the greater necessity there is of preaching to instruct men in it. But I think more need not be said of this to those that know it is another thing to be a Christian, than to be called so. But however it is granted, that in the apostles' times preaching was the great work; and if so, how can we think one single person in a great city was sufficient, both to preach to, and rule the church, and to preach abroad in order to the conversion of more from their Gentilism to Christianity? Especially if the church of every city was so large as some would make it, viz. to comprehend all the believers under the civil jurisdiction of the city, and so both city and country the charge of one single bishop. I think the vastness of the work, and the impossibility of a right discharge of it by one single person, may be argument enough to make us interpret the places of scripture which may be understood in that sense, as of more than one pastor in every city; as when the apostles are said to ordain elders in every city, and *Paul's* calling for the elders from Ephesus, and his writing to the bishops and deacons of the church of Philippi; this consideration, I say, granting that the texts may be otherwise understood, will be enough to incline men to think that in greater cities there was a society of presbyters acting together for the carrying on the work of the gospel in converting some to, and building up of others in the faith of Christ. And it seems not in the least manner probable to me, that the care of those great churches should at first be intrusted in the hands of one single pastor and deacon, and afterwards a new order of presbyters erected under them, without any order or rule laid down in scripture for it, or any mention in ecclesiastical writers of any such after institution. But instead of that in the most populous churches, we have many remaining footsteps of such a college of presbyters there established in apos-

tical times. Thence *Ignatius*<sup>1</sup> says, the presbyters are *ὡς συνέδριον θεοῦ καὶ ὡς συνέσμος Ἀποστόλων*, “the sanhedrim of the church appointed by God, and the bench of apostles”<sup>2</sup> *sitting together for ruling the affairs of the church*. And *Origen* calls it, *συνήμα ἐν ἑκάστη πόλει κτισθὲν λόγῳ θεοῦ*, “a college in every city of God’s appointing;” and *Victor*, bishop of Rome, *collegium nostrum, et collegium fratrum*, “our college and the college of the brethren.” “Pius calls it ‘the poor senate of Christ established at Rome;’ Tertullian, ‘the approved elders;’ Cyprian, ‘the sacred and venerable assembly of our clergy;’ and to Cornelius, bishop of Rome, and his clergy, ‘to the most illustrious clergy presiding with thee;’ Jerome, ‘our senate, the congregation of presbyters, and the common council of presbyters, by which the churches are governed;’ Hilary, ‘the elders without whose counsel nothing is done in the church;’ the author of the seven orders, calls the presbyters ‘judges of affairs.’”<sup>3</sup> *Entychius* tells us there were twelve presbyters at Alexandria to govern the church; and the author of the Itinerary of *Peter*, of as many constituted at Cæsarea, who though counterfeit, must be allowed to speak, though not *vera*, yet *verisimilia*, “though not true, yet likely things.” Is it possible all these authors should thus speak of their several places, of a college of presbyters acting in power with the bishop, if at first churches were governed only by a single bishop, and afterwards by subject presbyters that had nothing to do in the rule of the church, but were only deputed to some particular offices under him, which they were empowered to do only by his authority? But the joint rule of the bishop and presbyters in the churches will be more largely deduced afterwards. Thus we see a company of presbyters settled in great churches; now we are not to imagine that all these did equally attend to one part of their work; but all of them according to their several abilities laid out themselves; some in overseeing and guiding the church; but yet so as upon occasion to discharge all pastoral acts belonging to their function; others betook themselves chiefly to the conversion of others to the faith,

<sup>1</sup> Ep. ad. Tral.

<sup>2</sup> C. Cel. sum. l. 6, c. 3, p. 129

<sup>3</sup> Pius, pauperem senatum Christi apud Romam constitutum; Tertullian, probatos seniores; Cyprian, cleri nostri sacrum venerandumque concessum; and to Cornelius, bishop of Rome and his clergy, florentissimo clero tecum præsentibus; Jerome, senatum nostrum, cætum presbyterorum, et commune concilium presbyterorum quo ecclesiæ gubernabantur; Hilary, seniores sine quorum consilio nihil agebatur in ecclesiæ; the author de 7 ordinibus ad rusticum, calls the presbyters negotiorum judices.—Pius, ep. ad Just. Vica. Apol. c. 39. Cypri. ep. 55, s. 19, s. 21. Hieronym. in Is. l. 2, c. 3. Ep. ad Evag. in 1 Tim. v.



either in the cities or the adjacent countries. By which we come to a full, clear and easy understanding of that so much controverted place, 1 *Tim.* v. 17: "The elders that rule well are counted worthy of double honour; especially they that labour in the word and doctrine."<sup>1</sup> Not as though it implied a distinct sort of elders from the pastors of churches, but among those elders that were ordained in the great churches, some attended most to ruling the flock already converted, others laboured most to converting others to the faith by preaching; though both these being entered into this peculiar function of laying themselves forth for the benefit of the church, did deserve both respect and maintenance, yet especially those who employed themselves in converting others, inasmuch as their burden was greater, their labours more abundant, their sufferings more; and their very office coming the nearest to the apostolical function. So *Chrysostom*<sup>2</sup> resolves it upon the fourth of the Ephesians, that those who were *κατα κώμας και πολεις αφωρισμενοι*, "dispersed amongst the towns and villages," as *Theodoret* expresseth it, the *ποιμενες και διδασκαλοι*, "pastors and teachers," the fixed officers of particular churches were inferior to those who went abroad preaching the gospel; *και παν των περιοντων και εναγγελιζομενων η οι καθημενοι και αρι να τοπον ησυχολημενοι*, "and more of those going about and preaching the gospel, than those settled and employed about one place." An evident argument that the apostle doth not intend any sort of elders distinct from those ordained presbyters of the cities, is from that very argument which the greatest friends to lay-elders draw out of this epistle, which is from the promiscuous acceptation of the words *πρεσβυτερος* and *επισκοπος* in this very epistle to *Timothy*. The argument runs thus: The presbyters spoken of by *Paul* in his epistle to *Timothy*, are scripture-bishops; but lay-elders are not scripture-bishops; therefore these cannot here be meant. The *major* is their own, from 1 *Tim.* iii. 1, compared with iv. 14. Those which are called presbyters in one place, are bishops in another; and the main force of the argument lies in the promiscuous use of bishop and presbyter; now then if lay-elders be not such bishops, then they are not *Paul's* presbyters; now *Paul's* bishops must be *διδασκτικοι*, "fit to teach," and therefore no lay-elders. Again we may consider where *Timothy*

<sup>1</sup> Οἱ καλως προεσφωτες πρεσβυτεροι διπλης τιμης αξιουσθησαν, μαλιστα οἱ κοπιωντες εν λογω και διδασκαλια.

<sup>2</sup> Chrysost. in 4 Eph. hom. 11.

now was, viz. at Ephesus, and therefore if such lay-elders anywhere should be there. Let us see then whether any such were here. It is earnestly pleaded by all who are for lay-elders, that the *elders* spoken of, *Acts* xx. 17, were the particular *elders* of the church of Ephesus, to whom *Paul* spoke, verse 28, where we may find their office at large described, "Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock over which the Holy Ghost hath made you *ἐπισκοπους*, bishops or overseers." Here we see both the names *elders* and *bishops* con-founded again, so that he that was an *elder* was a *bishop* too, and the office of such *elders* described to be a *pastoral charge over a flock*, which is inconsistent with the notion of a lay-elder. *Paul* sent indefinitely for the *elders of the church* to come to him. If any such then at Ephesus, they must come at this summons; all the *elders* that came, were such as were *pastors* of churches: therefore there could be no *lay-elders* there. I insist not on the argument for maintenance implied in double honour, which *Chrysostom* explains by *την των αναγκαίων χορηγίαν*, a "supply of necessaries" to be given to them, as appears by verse 18, which argument *Blondell* saw such strength in, that it brought him quite off from lay-elders in that place of *Timothy*.<sup>1</sup> And he that will remove the controversy from the scriptures, to the primitive church, (as we have no reason to think, that if such were appointed, they should be so soon laid aside,) will find it the greatest difficulty to trace the footsteps of a lay-elder through the records of antiquity, for the three first centuries especially. The writers of the church speak of no presbyters, but such as preached, as appears by *Origen*, *Cyprian*, and *Clement* of Alexandria; *Origen* saith, "all the bishops, presbyters, and deacons instruct us, and in instructing apply correction, and with more severe language reprove us."<sup>2</sup> We see all bishops, presbyters, and deacons were in his time preachers. So *Cyprian*, "I had believed, indeed, that the presbyters and deacons, who are there present, admonish and fully instruct you relative to the gospel law, as has always been done by our predecessors."<sup>3</sup> And in another epistle, about making *Numidicus* a presbyter, he thus ex-

<sup>1</sup> De jure plebis in regimen. *Eccles.* p. 79, etc.

<sup>2</sup> Omnes episcopi atque omnes presbyteri vel diaconi erudiant nos, et erudientes adhibent correctionem, et verbis austerioribus increpant.—*Orig. hom. 1*, in *Psal. 37*.

<sup>3</sup> Et credideram quidem presbyteros et diaconos qui illic præsentés sunt, monere vos et instruere plenissimè circa evangelii legem, sicut semper ab antecessoribus nostris factum est.—*Cyprian. l. 1*, cp. 11.

presseth it: "that he may be enrolled amongst the number of the Carthaginian presbytery, and obtain a seat with you amongst the clergy;"<sup>1</sup> where to sit as one of the clergy, and to be a presbyter, are all one. *Again*, had there been any such elders, it would have belonged to them to lay hands on those that were reconciled to the church after censures; now hands were only laid on *ab episcopo et clero*,<sup>2</sup> as the same *Cyprian* tells us. *Clemens Alexandrinus*, describing the office of a presbyter hath these words, οὗτος πρεσβύτερος ἐστὶ τῷ ὄντι τῆς ἐκκλησίας, &c., εἰαν ποιῇ καὶ διδασκῇ τὰ τοῦ κυρίου,<sup>3</sup> "he is a presbyter of the church, if he do instruct and preach to the congregation present," where teaching is looked on as his proper work: and elsewhere, more fully and expressly discoursing of the service of God, and distinguishing it according to the twofold service of men, βελτιωτικὴ καὶ ὑπηρετικὴ, "most excellent, serviceable," he applies these to the churches, "Likewise relative to the church, the deacons maintain a serviceable similitude, but the presbyters the most excellent."<sup>4</sup> The former he explains afterwards, "A presbyter is ordained to instruct, and for the reformation of men,"<sup>5</sup> implying thereby the office of a presbyter to be wholly conversant about teaching others, to whom on that account the art of making others better doth properly belong. So much may suffice for those first times of the church, that there were no presbyters then, but such as had the office of teaching. And for the times afterwards of the church, let it suffice at present to produce the testimony of a council held in the beginning of the seventh century, who absolutely decree against all lay persons meddling in church affairs: "By a recent transaction we learn that certain laymen of our college have, contrary to the customs of the church, stewards appointed in sacred things. Therefore, treating all alike, we choose that each of us, according to the decrees of the Chalcedon fathers, should, out of his own clergy, appoint a steward for himself. For it is indecorous that a layman should be a substitute for a bishop, and that secular men should judge in the church. For no incompatible profession should exist in one and the same office."<sup>6</sup> A canon

<sup>1</sup> Ut ascribatur presbyterorum Carthaginensium numero, et nobiscum sedeat in clero.—Ep. 35.

<sup>2</sup> Ep. 12.

<sup>3</sup> Strom. l. 6, p. 667, ed. Hcins.

<sup>4</sup> Ὅμοιως δὲ καὶ κατὰ τὴν ἐκκλησίαν, τὴν μὲν βελτιωτικὴν οἱ πρεσβύτεροι σωζοῦσιν εἰκόνα, τὴν ὑπηρετικὴν δὲ οἱ διακονοί.—Strom. l. 7, p. 700.

<sup>5</sup> Ὅπως αὖ καὶ παιδεύειν ἡ τεταγμένος εἰς τὴν τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἐπανορθώσιν.

<sup>6</sup> Nova actione didicimus, quosdam ex nostro Collegio contra mores ecclesiasticos, laicos habere in rebus divinis constitutos oeconomos. Proinde pariter trac-

directly levelled against all lay chancellors in bishops' courts, and such officials: but doth with the same force take away all lay-elders, as implying it to be wholly against the rule of the church to have secular persons to judge in the church. But although I suppose this may be sufficient to manifest the no divine right of lay-elders; yet I do not therefore absolutely condemn all use of some persons chosen by the people to be as their representatives, for managing their interest in the affairs of the church. For, now the voice of the people, (which was used in the primitive times,) is grown out of use: such a constitution, whereby two or more of the people's choice might be present at church debates, might be very useful, so they be looked on only as a prudential human constitution, and not as anything founded on divine right. So much may serve for the first ground of the probability of the apostles' not observing one settled form of church government, which was from the different state, quantity and condition of the churches by them planted. The *second* was from the multitude of unfixed officers residing in some places, who managed the affairs of the church in chief, during their residence. Such were the apostles and evangelists, and all persons almost of note in scripture. They were but very few who were left at home to take care of the spoil; the strongest and ablest, like commanders in an army, were not settled in any troop, but went up and down from this company to that, to order them and draw them forth: and while they were, they had the chief authority among them—but as commanders of the army and not as officers of the troop. Such were evangelists who were sent sometimes into this country to put the churches in order there, sometimes into another; but wherever they were, they acted as evangelists and not as fixed officers. And such were *Timothy* and *Titus*, notwithstanding all the opposition made against it, as will appear to any one that will take an impartial survey of the arguments on both sides. Now where there were in some places evangelists, in others not; and in many churches it may be no other officers but these, it will appear that the apostles did not observe one constant form, but were with the evangelists travelling abroad to the churches, and ordering things in them as they saw cause. But as to this I have anticipated myself already. The *last* ground was from

tantes eligimus, ut unusquisque nostrum secundum Chalcedonensium patrum decreta, ex proprio clero oeconomum sibi constituat. Indecorum est enim laicum esse vicarium episcopi, et sæculares in ecclesia judicare; in uno enim eodemque officio non debet esse dispar professio.—Concil. Hispal. 2, decret. 9.



the different customs observed in the churches after the apostles' times. For no other rational account can be given of the different opinions of *Epiphanius*, *Jerome* and *Hilary*, but this, that one speaks of the custom of some churches, and the other of others. In some, as at Alexandria, the presbyters might choose their bishop; in other places it might be, as *Hilary* saith, that when the first withdrew, another succeeded him. Not by a monthly or annual *rotation of presidents*, as some have imagined, but by a presidency for life of one, upon whose death another succeeded in his room. For the former opinion hath not any evidence at all for it in scripture or antiquity; or in the place brought to prove it. For, according to this opinion, *Timothy* must have but his course in the *rotation of elders at Ephesus*, which seems very incongruous to the office of *Timothy*. I conclude then, that in all probability the apostles tied not themselves up to one certain course, but in some churches settled more or fewer officers as they saw cause, and in others governed themselves during life; and that at their death they did not determine any form, is probably argued from the different customs of several churches afterwards.

§ 20. The third consideration touching apostolical practice, is concerning the obligatory force of it in reference to us; which I lay down in these terms, *That a mere apostolical practice being supposed, is not sufficient of itself for the founding an unalterable and perpetual right, for that form of government in the church, which is supposed to be founded on that practice.* This is a proposition I am sure, will not be yielded without proving it, and therefore I shall endeavour to do it by a fourfold argument. *First*, because many things were done by the apostles without any intention of obliging any who succeeded them afterwards to do the same. As for instance, the twelve apostles going abroad so unprovided as they were when Christ sent them forth at first, which would argue no great wisdom or reason in that man, that should draw that practice into consequence now. Of the like nature was *Paul's* preaching *αδαπανον ευαγγελιον*, “an inexpensive gospel,” to some churches, receiving no maintenance at all from some churches, as that at Corinth. Which instance is a manifest evidence of the monstrous weakness of discourse in those who would make that example of *Paul* obligatory to all ministers of the gospel now. And while they would by this argument take away their lands and tithes, instead of them, they give them *plaustra convitiourum*, “whole loads of the

most reproachful speeches," that ever were given to any, but Christ and his apostles. For my part, I think the ministers of the gospel would want one of the badges of honour belonging to their office, were they not reproachfully used; it is part of the state which belongs to the true ministers of the gospel to be followed by such blackmouthed lacqueys, who by their virulent speeches are so far their friends, as to keep them from that curse which our Saviour pronounceth; "Wo be unto you when all men speak well of you." But let us see how much wool there is after all this cry; too little to clothe the backs of ministers, if such persons might be their tithe-men; but it is well they are so little befriended, yea so much opposed by the great apostle, in that singular practice of his. For doth he say, it was unlawful for him to receive a maintenance from the churches he preached to? Nay doth he not set himself to prove not only the lawfulness of ministers taking it, but the duty of people's giving it, 1 Cor. ix, from the seventh to the fifteenth verse, giving many pregnant arguments to that purpose? Doth he not say that all the apostles besides him and *Barnabas*, did forbear working, and consequently had all their necessities supplied by the churches?<sup>1</sup> Nay doth not *Paul* himself say "that he robbed other churches, taking wages of them to do service to them?"<sup>2</sup> What, *Paul* turned hireling? and in the plainest terms take wages of churches? Yet so it is, and his forbearing it at Corinth, was apt to be interpreted as an argument that he did not love them, 2 Cor. xi. 11. So far were they from looking upon *Paul* as a hireling in doing it. *Paul* is strong and earnest in asserting his right: he might have done it at Corinth as well as elsewhere; But from some prudent considerations of his own, mentioned 2 Cor. xi. 12, he forbore the exercise of his right among them, although at the same time he received maintenance from other places.<sup>3</sup> As for any divine right of a particular way of maintenance, I am of the same opinion as to that which I am in reference to particular forms of church government; and those that are of another opinion, I would not wish them so much injury, as to want their maintenance till they prove it. But then I say, these things are clear in themselves, and I think sufficient grounds for conscience, as to the duty of paying on the one side, and the lawfulness of receiving it on the other. First that a maintenance in general be given to gospel ministers, is of divine right: *else the labourer were not*

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. ix. 6.<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. xi. 8.<sup>3</sup> 2 Cor. xi. 9.

*worthy of his hire*; nor could that be true which *Paul* saith, "that our Lord hath ordained; that they which preach the gospel should live of the gospel."<sup>1</sup> *Secondly*, A maintenance in general being due, lawful authority may determine the particular way of raising it; the equity of which way may be best derived from what was the most ancient practice of the world in dedicating things to God, and was approved by God himself among his own people, the Jews; so that the way of maintenance by tithes is the most just and equitable way. *Thirdly*, It being in the magistrates' power to determine the way of maintenance, what is so determined, doth bind the consciences of all subject to that power, to an obedience to it for conscience sake: inasmuch as all men are bound thus to obey the magistrate in all things established by him as laws; and the very same reasons any can plead for disobedience as to this, may equally serve for disobedience to any other laws made by the supreme magistrate. This I suppose is the clearest resolution of that other more vexed than intricate controversy about the right of tithes; which I have here spoken of by occasion of the mention of the apostles' practice; and because it is resolved upon the same principles with the subject I am upon. Mere apostolical practice we see doth not bind, because the apostles did many things without intention of binding others. *Secondly*, The apostles did many things upon particular occasions, emergencies and circumstances, which things so done, cannot bind by virtue of their doing them any further than a parity of reason doth conclude the same things to be done in the same circumstances. Thus *Paul's* celibacy is far from binding the church, it being no universal practice of the apostles by a law, but only a thing taken up by him upon some particular grounds, not of perpetual and universal concern.<sup>2</sup> So community of goods was used at first by the church at Jerusalem as most suitable to the present state of that church; but as far as we can find, did neither perpetually hold in that church, nor universally obtain among other churches; as is most clear in the church at Corinth by their lawsuits, by the different offerings of the rich and poor at the Lord's supper, and by their personal contributions.<sup>3</sup> So the apostles preaching from house to house, was more for conveniency than the want of public places, as free only for Christians; although that practice binds now as far as the reason doth; viz. in its tendency to promote the work

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. ix. 14.<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. ix. 5.<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. vi. 1; xi. 21, 22; xvi. 1, 2.

of salvation of men. Laying on hands, as a sign, for conferring the gifts of the Holy Ghost, can never certainly bind where the reason of it is ceased, but may still continue as a rite of solemn prayer, and not by virtue of that practice. Observing the apostolical decrees of "abstaining from blood, and things strangled and offered to idols," did hold as long as the ground of making them did, which was condescension to the Jews, although it must be withal acknowledged that the primitive Christians of the second and third centuries did generally observe them;<sup>1</sup> and the Greek church to this day; and some men of note and learning have pleaded for the necessary observation of them still, as *Christopher Beckman*, *Steph. Curcellæus* in a *diatriba* lately published to this purpose, to which *Grotius* is likewise very inclinable. The arguments are too large here to examine, although I see not how possibly that place of *Paul* can be avoided, "Whatever is set in the shambles eat, making no scruple for conscience sake."<sup>2</sup>

I conclude this with what I laid down at the entrance of this treatise, that where any act or law is founded upon a particular reason or occasion as the ground of it, it doth no further oblige than the reason or occasion of it doth continue.<sup>3</sup> Therefore before an acknowledged apostolical practice be looked on as obligatory, it must be made to appear that what they did, was not according as they saw reason and cause for the doing it, depending upon the several circumstances of time, place and persons, but that they did it from some unalterable law of Christ, or from such indispensable reasons, as will equally hold in all times, places and persons. And so the obligation is taken off from apostolical practice, and laid upon that law and reason which was the ground of it. *Thirdly.* Offices that were of apostolical appointment, are grown wholly out of use in the church, without men's looking upon themselves as bound now to observe them. As the widows of the churches, afterwards from their office called deaconesses of the church,<sup>4</sup> of which number *Phæbe* was one, whom *Paul* calls the deaconess of the church at *Cenchrea*;<sup>5</sup> so both *Origen* and *Chrysostom* understand it. Of them and their continuance in the church for some centuries of years, much is spoken by several writers<sup>6</sup>, and re-

<sup>1</sup> Exercit. Theol. n. 26, Curcellæus de esu sanguinis, &c. Grotius in Acts xv. 29.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. x. 25.

<sup>3</sup> Part. I. chap. 1, s. 6.

<sup>4</sup> Tim. v. 9.

<sup>5</sup> Rom. xvi. 1.

<sup>6</sup> Plin. ep. l. 10, ep. 97. Theod. l. 3, cap. 14. Sozom. l. 4, cap. 24. Codex



solved by several councils; and yet we see these are laid aside by the pretenders to hold close to apostolical practice. If that binds, certainly it doth in its plain institutions; if it doth not bind in them, how can it in that which is only gathered but by uncertain conjectures to have been ever their practice; so that in the issue, those who plead so much for the obligatory nature of apostolical practice, do not think it obligatory; for if they did, how comes this office of widows and deaconesses to be neglected? If it be answered, that these are not useful now; then we must say, that we look upon apostolical practice to be binding no further than we judge it useful, or the reason of it holds; which is as much as to say, of itself it binds not. *Fourthly.* Rites and customs apostolical are altered; therefore men do not think that apostolical practice doth bind. For if it did, there could be no alteration of things agreeable thereunto. Now let any one consider but these few particulars, and judge how far the pleaders for a divine right of apostolical practice, do look upon themselves as bound now to observe them: as dipping in baptism, the use of love-feasts, community of goods, the holy kiss, by *Tertullian*<sup>1</sup> called *signaculum orationis*: or, “the miniature signet of Christian love;”<sup>2</sup> yet none look upon themselves as bound to observe them now, and yet all acknowledge them to have been the practice of the apostles; and therefore certainly though when it may serve for their purpose, men will make apostolical practice to found a divine right; yet when they are gone off from the matter in hand, they change their opinion with the matter, and can then think themselves free as to the observation of things by themselves acknowledged to be apostolical. Thus we are at last come to the end of this chapter, which we have been the longer upon, because the main hinge of this controversy did lie in the practice of the apostles, which I suppose now so far cleared as not to hinder our progress towards what remains. We come, therefore, from the apostles to the primitive church, to see whether by the practice of anything wherein they looked on themselves as obliged by an unalterable law, we observe any one particular form of church government.

Theod. leg. 27, tit. de Epis. Conc. Chalc. cap. 14. Conc. Normat. c. 73, Epiph. hæc. 79. V. Fustell. Not. in Can. Univers. Eccles. p. 154, &c. Vossium in Plin. ep. 97, l. 10. Salmas. in Aparat. p. 176.

<sup>1</sup> De Orat.

<sup>2</sup> Of *Christian* not of *carnal* love: but how difficult for those that are weak to keep the two separate; therefore, they had better let it alone till the chaff is separated from the wheat.—*Am. Ed.*

## CHAPTER VII.

The churches' polity in the ages after the apostles considered: Evidences thence that no certain unalterable form of church government was delivered to them.

1. Because church power did enlarge as the churches did. Whether any metropolitan churches established by the apostles. The seven churches of Asia, whether Metropolitans. Philippi no metropolis, either in a civil or ecclesiastical sense. Several degrees of enlargement of churches. Churches first Christians in whole cities, proved by several arguments; the eulogy an evidence of it. Churches extended into the neighbouring territories by the preaching there of city presbyters; thence comes the subordination between them. Churches by degrees enlarged to dioceses; from thence to provinces. The original of metropolitans and patriarchs. 2. No certain form used in all churches. Some churches without bishops,—Scots, Goths. Some with but one bishop in their whole country. Scythian, Ethiopian churches how governed. Many cities without bishops. Dioceses much altered. Bishops discontinued in several churches for many years. 3. Conforming ecclesiastical government to the civil in the extent of dioceses. The suburbicarian churches what. Bishops answerable to the civil governors. Churches' power rises from the greatness of cities. 4. Validity of ordination by presbyters in places where bishops were. The case of *Ischyras* discussed; instances given of ordination by presbyters not pronounced null. 5. The church's prudence in managing its affairs, by the several canons, provincial synods, *Codex Canonum*.

§ 1. HAVING largely considered the actions of Christ, and the practice of the apostles, so far as they are conceived to have reference to the determining the certain form of government in the church; our next stage is, according to our propounded method, to examine what light the practice of the church in the ages succeeding the apostles will cast upon the controversy we are upon. For although, according to the principles established and laid down by us, there can be nothing settled as a universal law for the church but what we find in scriptures: yet because the general practice of the church is conceived to be of so great use for understanding what the apostles' *intentions*, as well as *actions* were, we

shall cheerfully pass over this Rubicon, because not with an intent to increase divisions, but to find out some further evidence of a way to compose them. Our inquiry then is, whether the primitive church did conceive itself obliged to observe unalterably one individual form of government, as delivered down to them either by a law of Christ, or an universal constitution of the apostles; or else did only settle and order things for church government, according as it judged them tend most to the peace and settlement of the church, without any antecedent obligation, as necessarily binding to observe only one course. This latter I shall endeavour to make out to have been the only rule and law which the primitive church observed as to church government, viz. the tendency of its constitutions to the peace and unity of the church; and not any binding law or practice of Christ or his apostles. For the demonstration of which, I have made choice of such arguments as most immediately tend to prove it. For, if the power of the church and its officers did increase merely from the enlargement of the bounds of churches; if no one certain form was observed in all churches, but great varieties as to officers and diocesses; if the course used in settling the power of the chief officers of the church was from agreement with the civil government; if notwithstanding the superiority of bishops, the ordination of presbyters was owned as valid; if in all other things concerning the church's polity, the church's prudence was looked on as a sufficient ground to establish things; then we may with reason conclude, that nothing can be inferred from the practice of the primitive church, demonstrative of any one fixed form of church government delivered from the apostles to them. Having thus by a light *σκιαγραφία*, "sketch," drawn out the several lines of the portrait of the polity of the ancient church, we now proceed to fill them up, though not with that *life* which it deserves, yet so far as the model of this discourse will admit. Our first argument then is *from the rise of the extent of the power of church governors*, which I assert not to have been from any order of the apostles, but from the gradual increase of the churches committed to their charge. This will be best done by the observation of the growth of churches, and how proportionably the power of the governors did increase with it. As to that, there are four observable steps or periods, as so many ages of growth in the primitive churches. *First*, When churches and cities were of the same extent. *Secondly*, When churches took in the adjoining territories with the villages belonging to the cities.

*Thirdly*, When several cities with their villages did associate for church government in the same province. *Fourthly*, When several provinces did associate for government in the Roman empire. Of these in their order.

§ 2. The first period of church government observable in the primitive church, was, *when churches were the same with Christians in whole cities*. For the clearing of this, I shall *first* show, that the primitive constitution of churches was in a society of Christians in the same city. *Secondly*, I shall consider the form and manner of government then observed among them. *Thirdly*, What relation the several churches in cities had to one another. *First*, *That the primitive churches were Christians of whole cities*. It is but a late and novel acceptation of the word *church*, whereby it is taken for a fixed congregation for public worship, and doubtless the original of it is only from the distinction of churches in greater cities into their several *εκκλησια*, “belonging to the Lord,” or public places for meeting, whence the Scotch *kirk*, and our English *church*; so that from calling the place *church*, they proceed to call the persons there meeting by that name; and thence some think the name of *church* so appropriated to such a society of Christians as may meet at such a place, that they make it a matter of religion not to call those places *churches*, from whence originally the very name, as we use it, was derived. But this may be pardoned among other religious weaknesses of well meaning, but less knowing people. A church in its primary sense, as it answers to the Greek *εκκλησια*, applied to Christians, is a society of Christians living together in one city, whether meeting together in many congregations, or one, is not at all material, because they were not called a *church* as meeting together in one place, but as they were a society of Christians inhabiting together in such a city: not but that I think a society of Christians might be called a church, wherever they were. whether in a city or country, but because the first and chief mention we meet with in scripture of churches, is of such as did dwell together in the same cities; as is evident from many pregnant places of scripture to this purpose. As *Acts* xiv. 23, compared with *Titus* i. 5, *κατ’ ἐκκλησιαν*, in one place, is the same with *κατα πολιν* in the other. Ordaining elders “in every church,” and ordaining elders “in every city;” which implies, that by *churches* then were meant the body of Christians residing in the cities; over which the apostles ordained elders to rule them. So *Acts* xvi. 4, 5, “as they went through



the cities," &c., "and so were the churches established in the faith." The churches here were the Christians of those cities which they went through. So *Acts* xx. 17, "he sent to Ephesus and called the elders of the church." If by the *elders* we mean, as all those do we now deal with, the elders of Ephesus, then it is here evident, that the elders of the church and of the city are all one; but what is more observable, verse 28, he calls the church of that city: "Take heed to yourselves, and to the flock over which the Holy Spirit hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God."<sup>1</sup> Where several things are observable to our purpose; *first*, that the body of Christians in Ephesus is called το ποιμνιον and ἡ ἐκκλησία, the flock of the church, and not the several flocks and churches, over which God hath made you bishops. *Secondly*, that all these spoken to were such as had a pastoral charge of this one flock; *Paul* calls them ἐπισκοπους, and chargeth them ποιμαίνειν, to do the work of a pastor towards it. So that either there must be several pastors taking the pastoral charge of one congregation, which is not very suitable with the principles of those I now dispute against; or else many congregations in one city are all called but one church, and one flock, which is the thing I plead for. And therefore it is an observation of good use to the purpose in hand, that the New Testament speaking of the church in a province, always speaks of them in the plural number, "as the churches of Judea," *Gal.* i. 22, 1 *Thes.* ii. 14. "The churches of Samaria and Galilee," *Acts* ix. 31. "The churches of Syria and Cilicia," *Acts* xv. 41. "The churches of Galatia," 1 *Cor.* xvi. 1, *Gal.* i. 1, 2. "The churches of Asia," *Rom.* xvi. 16, *Rev.* i. 11. But when it speaks of any particular city, then it is always used in the singular number, "as the church at Jerusalem," *Acts* viii. 1, xv. 4, 22. "The church at Antioch," *Acts* xi. 26, xiii. 1. "The church at Corinth," 1 *Cor.* i. 2, 2 *Cor.* i. 1, and so of all "the seven churches of Asia," the church of Ephesus, Smyrna, &c. So that we cannot find in scripture the least footstep of any difference between a church and the Christians of such a city; whereas had the notion of a church been restrained to a particular congregation, doubtless we should have found some difference as to the scriptures speaking of the several places. For it is scarce imaginable that in all those cities spoken of, (as for example Ephesus, where

<sup>1</sup> Το ποιμνιον προσέχετε ουν ἑαυτοῖς καὶ παντὶ τῷ ποιμνίῳ ἐφ' ᾧ ὑμεῖς τὸ πνεῦμα ἐθετο ἐπισκοπους, ποιμαίνειν τὴν ἐκκλησίαν τοῦ Θεοῦ.

*Paul* was for above two years together,) that there should be no more converts than would make one congregation. Accordingly in the times immediately after the apostles, the same language and custom continued still. So *Clement* inscribes his epistle: 'Ἡ ἐκκλησία του θεου παροικουσα Ρωμην τη ἐκκλησία του θεου παροικουση Κορινθον, "The church of God dwelling at Rome, to the church of God dwelling at Corinth." So by that it is plain that all the believers at that time in Rome, made up but one church, as likewise did they at Corinth. So *Polycarp* in the epistle written by him from the church at Smyrna to the church at Phylomilium, 'Ἡ ἐκκλησία του θεου ἡ παροικουσα Σμυρναν, τη παροικουσα εν Φιλομιλιῳ,<sup>1</sup> "the church of God dwelling at Smyrna, to the church dwelling at Phylomilium;" and so in his epistle to the Philippians, Πολυκαρπος και οἱ συν αυτου πρεσβυτεροι τη ἐκκλησία παροικουση Φιλιπποις, "Polycarp and the elders with him to the church dwelling at Philippi." *Origen* compares the church of God at Athens, Corinth, Alexandria, and other places, with the people of those several cities;<sup>2</sup> and so the church's *senate* with the people's, and the church's *αρχων*, (that is his word,) "chief ruler," with the *mayor* of those cities, implying thereby that as there was one civil society in such places to make a city, so there was a society of Christians incorporated together to make a church. So that a church settled with a full power belonging to it, and exercising all acts of church discipline within itself, was anciently the same with the society of Christians in a city. Not but that the name *church* is attributed sometimes to families, in which sense *Tertullian* speaks: *Ubi duo aut tres sunt, ibi ecclesia est licet laici*: "wherever two or three" (believers) "are, there is a church, although laymen."<sup>3</sup> And may on the same account be attributed to a small place, such as many imagine the church of Cenchrea to be, it being a port to Corinth on the Sinus Saronicus; but *Stephanus Byzantinus* calls it *πολις και επινειον Κορινθον*, "the city and harbour of Corinth."<sup>4</sup> *Suidas* saith no more of it than that it is *ονομα τοπον*, "the name of a place." *Strabo* and *Pausanias* only speak of the situation of it, as one of the ports of Corinth, lying in the way from Tegæa to Argos;<sup>5</sup> nor is any more said of it by *Pliny*, than that it answers to Lechæum, the port on the other side upon

<sup>1</sup> Euseb. l. 4, cap. 13. Usser. Ignat. ep. p. 13.

<sup>2</sup> C. Celsum. l. 3, p. 128, etc.

<sup>3</sup> Exhort. ad cust.

<sup>4</sup> Steph. de Urbibus.

<sup>5</sup> Strabo Geogr. l. 8; Paus. Corinth. p. 44, 45.

the Sinus Corinthiacus.<sup>1</sup> *Ubbo Emmius*, in his description of old Greece, calls both of them "two little towns with famous harbours on the coast of each sea,"<sup>2</sup> but withal adds that they were *duo urbis emporia*, "the two marts of Corinth," therefore in probability, because of the merchandize of that city, they were much frequented. Cenchrea was about twelve furlongs distance from Corinth—where, *Pareus* conjectures the place of the meeting of the church of Corinth was,<sup>3</sup> because of the troubles they met with in the city, and therefore they retired thither for greater conveniency and privacy: which conjecture will appear not to be altogether improbable, when we consider the furious opposition made by the Jews against the Christians at Corinth, *Acts* xviii. 12; and withal how usual it was both for Jews and Christians to have their place of meeting at a distance from the city. As *Acts* xvi. 13: "They went out from Philippi to the river side, where there was a proseucha, or a place of prayer, where the Jews of Philippi were accustomed to meet."<sup>4</sup> According to this interpretation, the church at Cenchrea is nothing else but the church of Corinth there assembling: as the *reformed church* at Paris hath their meeting place at Charenton, which might be called the *church of Charenton*, from their public assemblies there; but the church of Paris from the residence of the chief officers and people in that city. So the church of Corinth might be called the church at Cenchrea upon the same account, there being no evidence at all of any settled government there at Cenchrea distinct from that at Corinth. So that this place, which is the only one brought against that position I have laid down, hath no force at all against it. I conclude then, that churches and cities were originally of equal extent, and that the formal constitution of a church lies not in their capacity of assembling in one place, but acting as a society of Christians embodied together in one city, having officers and rulers among themselves, equally respecting the whole number of believers: which leads to the second thing, *the way and manner then used for the modelling the government of these churches*, which may be considered in a double period of time, either before several congregations in churches were settled, or after those we now call *parishes* were divided. First, before distinct congregations were settled; and this, as far as I can find,

<sup>1</sup> Plin. hist. l. 4, c. 4.

<sup>2</sup> Oppidula duo cum duobus præclaris portubus in ora utriusque, maris.—*Emmius de Græc. Vet.* li. 2.

<sup>3</sup> *Pareus* in *Rom.* xvi. 1.

<sup>4</sup> *V. Heins. Exercis. sacr.* l. 5, cap. 10.

was not only during the apostles' times, but for a competent time after, generally during the persecution of churches. For we must distinguish between such a number of believers as could not conveniently assemble in one place, and the distributing of believers into their several distinct congregations. I cannot see any reason but to think that in the great churches of Jerusalem, Antioch, Ephesus, and the like, there were more believers than could well meet together, considering the state of those times; but that they were then distributed into their several *δημοι*, "peoples or centuries," (as the Athenians and Romans divided their people,) i. e. into several worshipping congregations with peculiar officers, I see no reason at all for it. They had no such conveniences then of settling several congregations under their particular pastors: but all the Christians in a city looked upon themselves as one body, and met together as occasion served them, where either the principal of the governors of the church, the *πρωτεύων*, "the chief," in *Justin Martyr's* language, did perform the solemn part of divine worship, or some other of the *elders* that were present with them. Is it not strange for men to dream of set times, and canonical hours, and public places of assemblies at that time, when their chief times of meeting were in the night, or very early in the morning, which *Pliny*<sup>1</sup> calls *conventus antelucanus*, "an assembly before daylight," whence they were called *latebrosa et lucifugax natio*,<sup>2</sup> "a nation hiding in caves and shunning the light," and were fain to make use of wax lights, (which from that custom the papists continue still in their *tapers* always burning upon the *altar*,<sup>3</sup> from what reason I know not, unless to show the darkness of error and superstition which that church lies under still,) and the places of the Christian-meetings were generally either some private rooms, or some *grotts* or *cryptæ*,<sup>4</sup> "hidden places," under ground where they might be least discerned or taken notice of; or in the *cæmeteria*, the *martyrum memoriæ*, "the cemetery, the memorials of the martyrs," as they called them, where their common assemblies were. Thence *Pontius Paulinus*,<sup>5</sup> speaking of the edict of *Vulerian* against the Christians, "It is ordered, that they make no small council chambers, nor enter their

<sup>1</sup> Ep. 95, l. 10.

<sup>2</sup> Tertul. de Cor. Militis ad Uxor. l. 2, c. 4.

<sup>3</sup> V. Vossium in Plin. ep. p. 45.

<sup>4</sup> V. Gersom. Bucer. de gubern. Eccl. p. 220.

<sup>5</sup> V. Justel. Not. in Cod. Can. Eccles. n. p. 200, et Blondell Ap. s. 3, de Basil. origine, p. 216, p. 243, p. 131, ed. Cl. Samas.



cemeteries.”<sup>1</sup> Indeed, when they had any public liberty granted them, they were so mindful of their duties of public profession of the faith, as to make use of public places for the worship of God, as appears by *Lampridius* in the life of *Alexander Severus*, “When the Christians had occupied a certain place, which had been common, the tavern-keepers said, opposing them, that it belonged to them. He wrote back, that it was better that God should be worshipped there, in any manner, than that it should be given up to the tavern-keepers.”<sup>2</sup> But in times of persecution it is most improbable that there should be any fixed congregations and places, when the Christians were so much hunted after, and inquired for, as appears by the former epistle of *Pliny*, and the known *rescript of Trajan* upon it, so often quoted by *Tertullian*.<sup>3</sup> They did meet often it is certain, *ad confæderandum disciplinam*, “to agree to their discipline,” at which meetings *Tertullian* tells us, *præsident probati quique seniores*, “all the approved elders presided,” which he elsewhere explains by *concessus ordinis*, “the bench of officers” in the church, which did in common consult for the good of the church, without any *cantonizing* the Christians into several distinct and fixed congregations. But after that believers were much increased, and any peace or liberty obtained, they then began to contrive the distribution of the work among the several officers of the church, and to settle the several bounds over which every presbyter was to take his charge; but yet so, as that every presbyter retained a double aspect of his office; the one particular to his charge; the other general respecting the church in common. For it is but a weak conceit to imagine that after the settling of congregations, every one had a distinct presbytery to rule it, of which we find not any obscure footsteps in any of the ancient churches; but there was still one *ecclesiastical senate* which ruled all the several congregations of those cities in common, of which the several presbyters of the congregations were members, and in which the *bishop* acted as the *president of the senate*, for the better governing the affairs of the church. And thus we find *Cornelius* at Rome sitting there *cum florentissimo clero*, “with the most distinguished clergy:” thus *Cyprian*<sup>4</sup> at Carthage, one who

<sup>1</sup> Jussum est ut nulla conciliabula faciant, neque cæmeteria ingrediantur.

<sup>2</sup> Quum Christiani quendam locum qui publicus fuerat occupassent, contra popinarii dicrent, sibi eum deberi; rescripsit, melius esse ut quomodocunque illic Deus colatur, quam popinariis dedatur.

<sup>3</sup> Apol. c. 2.

<sup>4</sup> Epigr. ep. s. 21.

pleads as much as any for obedience to bishops, and yet none more evident for the presence and joint concurrence of the clergy at all church debates; whose resolution from his first entrance into his bishopric, was, to do all things *communi concilio clericorum*,<sup>1</sup> “with the common council of the clergy;” and says, they were *cum episcopo sacerdotali honore conjuncti*, “in ministerial honour they were joined with the bishop.” Victor at Rome decreed *Easter* to be kept on the Lord’s day, *collatione facta cum presbyteris et diaconibus*, “a dispute having been made with the presbyters and deacons,” as *Damasus*<sup>2</sup> the supposed author of the lives of the popes tells us. In the proceedings against *Novatus* at Rome, we have a clear testimony of the concurrence of presbyters: where a great synod was called, as *Eusebius*<sup>3</sup> expresseth it, of *sixty bishops*, but more *presbyters and deacons*: and what is more full to our purpose, not only the several presbyters of the city, but the country pastors, (των κατα χωραν ποιμενων διασχεψαμενων,) “ministering and visiting from place to place,” did likewise give their advice about that business. At this time *Cornelius* tells us there were forty-six presbyters in that one city of Rome, who concurred with him in condemning *Novatus*.<sup>4</sup> So at Antioch in the case of *Paulus Samosatenus* we find a synod gathered, consisting of *bishops, presbyters, and deacons*, and in their name the *synodal* epistle is penned and directed to the same in all the catholic church. At the council of *Eliberis* in Spain, were present but nineteen bishops and twenty-six presbyters. The case between *Sylvanus*<sup>5</sup> bishop of Cirta in Africa, and *Nundinarius* the deacon, was referred by *Purpurius* to the clergy to decide it. For the presence of presbyters at synods, instances are brought ὅλω τῷ θυλακῷ, “from the whole budget,” by *Blondell* in his *Apology*.<sup>6</sup> And that they concurred in governing the church, and not only by their counsel but authority, appears from the general sense of the church of God, even when episcopacy was at the highest: *Nazianzen* speaking of the office of presbyters, εἴτε λειτουργίαν χρη λέγειν εἴτε ἡγεμονίαν, he knew not “whether he ought to call it, ministry or superintendency;”<sup>7</sup> and those who are made presbyters ἐπὶ τὸ ἀρχειν ἀναβαίνουνσι ἀπὸ τοῦ ἀρχεσθαι, “from being ruled, they

<sup>1</sup> Ep. 6, 10, 18, 24, 33, 34, 28, 32.

<sup>2</sup> Ep. 58, Apud. Bin. tom. 1, Conc. p. 91.

<sup>3</sup> Eccles. hist. l. 5, cap. 43.

<sup>5</sup> Apud. Nun. Cubanaph. Consul.

<sup>7</sup> Orat. p. 3.

<sup>4</sup> Eccles. hist. l. 7, cap. 30.

<sup>6</sup> P. 200.

ascend to be rulers themselves." And their power by him, is in several places called *ψυχων ἡγεμονια, προεσσια προεδρια*, "the direction of souls, superintendence, presidency;"<sup>1</sup> they are called by him, *ποιμενες, ιερεις, προεσταις, προσται, αρχοντες*, "pastors, priests, presidents or chiefs, superintendents, rulers."<sup>2</sup> *Chrysostom* gives this as the reason of *Paul's* passing over from bishops to deacons without naming presbyters, "because there is no great matter of difference between a bishop and presbyters, for these likewise have the instruction and charge of the church committed to them;"<sup>3</sup> which words *Theophylact*, *Chrysostom's* echo, repeats, which the council of *Aquen* thus expresseth, "but it seems to be the ministry of the presbyters, to preside over the church of Christ, so that in doctrine and in the office of preaching, they may rank before the people, nor should they appear negligent in any duty."<sup>4</sup> *Clemens Alexandrinus* before all these, speaking of himself and his fellow presbyters, *Ποιμενες εσμεν οι των εκκλησιων προηγουμενοι*, "we are pastors and rulers of the churches."<sup>5</sup> And that proper acts of discipline were performed by them, appears both by the epistles of the Roman clergy about their preserving discipline to *Cyprian*, and likewise by the act of that clergy in excluding *Marcion* from communion with them. So the presbyters of the church of *Ephesus* excommunicated *Noetus*;<sup>6</sup> for after they had cited him before them, and found him obstinate in his heresy, *ἐξεωσαν αὐτ' της εκκλησιας ἀμα τοις ὑπ' αὐτον δογμα μεμαθητευμενοις*, "they put both him and those that taught his doctrine out of the church together."<sup>7</sup> Thus we see what the manner of government in the church was now: the bishop sitting as the *נשי* "the naseeyah, the prince," in the *sanhedrim*, and the presbyters *ὡς συνεδیرهνται των επισκοπων*, "as fellow counsellors of the bishop," as *Ignatius* expresseth it, acting as the common council of the church to the bishop; the bishop being as the *αρχων της εκκλησιας*, "ruler of the church," answering to the *αρχων της πολεως*, "chief of the city;" and the presbytery as the *βουλη της εκκλησιας*, "the council of the church," answering to the *βουλη καθ' ἑκαστην πολιν*, "council in every city," as *Origen* compares them.<sup>8</sup> Whereby he fully describes the

<sup>1</sup> P. 341, 37, 41.

<sup>2</sup> P. 29, 42. In 1 Tim. hom. 11.

<sup>3</sup> Ὅτι οὐ πῦλον τὸ μέσον καὶ γὰρ καὶ αὐτοὶ διδασκαλίαν εἰσιν ἀναδεδειγμενοὶ, καὶ προεσσίαν τῆς ἐκκλησίας.

<sup>4</sup> Presbyterorum verò qui præsunt ecclesiæ Christi ministerium esse videtur, ut in doctrina præsint populis et in officio prædicandi, nec in aliquo desides apparcant.—Conc. Aquis. c. 5, 1.

<sup>5</sup> Pædag. l. 2, cap. 6.

<sup>6</sup> Epiph. hæ. 42.

<sup>7</sup> Id. hæres. 57, c. 1.

<sup>8</sup> C. Celsum. l. 3, p. 129.

form of government in his time in the church, which was by an ecclesiastical senate, and a president in it, ruling the society of Christians in every city. So that the presbytery of a great city joining together for government, were never accounted a provincial assembly, but only the senate for government of the church in the whole city. The erecting presbyteries for every particular congregation in a city, is a stranger to the ancient constitution of churches, and hath given the greatest rise to the independency of particular congregations. For if every particular congregation be furnished with a government within itself, then men are apt presently to think that there is no necessity of subordination of it to any higher church power. Whereas, if that primitive constitution of churches be held, that they are societies of Christians under an ecclesiastical senate in a city, then it is evident that the congregations must *truckle* under the great body, as receiving their government by, and their officers from that senate of the church, which superintends, and orders the affairs of that whole body of Christians residing in such a place. And this crumbling of church power into every congregation is a thing absolutely disowned by the greatest, and most learned patrons of presbytery beyond the seas as may be seen both in *Calvin*, *Beza*, *Salmasius*, *Blondell*, *Gersome*, *Bucer* and others. It is much disputed when the first division of parochial congregations in cities began; *Platina* attributes it to *Evaristus*, and so doth *Damasus*, *Hic titulos in urbe Roma divisit presbyteris*, "He divided the several parish churches to the presbyters;" these were called then *Tituli*.<sup>1</sup> *Baronius* gives a double reason of the name; either from goods belonging to the prince's exchequer, which have some sign imprinted upon them, that it may be known whose they are. So saith he, the sign of the cross was put upon the churches to make it known that they were devoted to God's service; or else they are called *Tituli*, because the several presbyters did receive their titles from them; but, by the leave of the great *Cardinal* another reason may be given of the name more proper than either of these. It hath been observed by learned men, that the general meetings of the Christians were in the *Cæmeteria* or dormitories of Christians; so they called the sepulchres then, which were great and capacious vaults, fit to receive many people in them; two chief grounds of the Christians meeting in those places: the first was their own security, be-

<sup>1</sup> A. Dom. 112, n. 4, 5, 6.



cause the heathens looked on it as a matter of religion, *non manes temerare sepultos*, "not to disturb the ashes of the dead;" but the chief reason was to encourage themselves to suffer martyrdom by the examples of those who had gone before, and lay buried there; thence they were called *martyrorum memoriæ*, "to the memory of the martyrs," because they did call to mind their actions and constancy in the faith. Now from these *Cœmeteria* was afterwards the original of churches, (whence persons most revered for piety were wont still to be buried in churches, not for any holiness of the place, but because in such places the martyrs lay buried,) the churches being raised over the vaults wherein the martyrs lay entombed. Now churches being raised from these cemeteries, which were called *memoriæ martyrorum*, that they might still retain somewhat intimating their former use, were called *tituli*, "monuments or memorials." For *titulus*, as *Sanctius* observes, is "some sign or monument, which may intimate that something lies concealed, or has happened there;"<sup>1</sup> thence statues are called *tituli*. So *Gen.* xxxv. 20. "Jacob erected a monument over the grave;"<sup>2</sup> and *Gen.* xxviii. 18. "Then Jacob rising in the morning, took the stone, which he had placed beneath his head, and set it up for a monument."<sup>3</sup> So *Absalom*, 2 *Sam.* xviii, 18, "Set up for himself a monument."<sup>4</sup> So that what was erected to maintain and preserve the memory of anything, was called *titulus*; and thence the churches being built upon the cemeteries of the martyrs, were on that account called *tituli*, because intended for the preservation of their memories. This account of the original of the name I leave to the judgment of learned men; but to proceed. I confess, it seems not probable to me that these *tituli* were so soon divided as the time of *Evaristus*, who lived in the time of *Trajan*, when the persecution was hot against the Christians; but *Damasus* seems not to believe himself; for in the life of *Dionysius*, he saith, "He divided the churches into cemeteries and parishes, and instituted dioceses."<sup>5</sup> But most probably it began as soon as the churches enjoyed any ease and peace, it being so necessary for the convenient meeting of such a multitude

<sup>1</sup> Signum aliquod aut monumentum quod docet ibi latere aliquid aut accidisse, cujus nolumus perire memoriam.—In *Ezek.* xxxix. 15.

<sup>2</sup> *Erexit* Jacob titulum super sepulchrum, as the vulgar Latin renders it.

<sup>3</sup> *Surgens* ergo Jacob mane tulit lapidem quem supposuerat capiti suo, et *erexit* in titulum.

<sup>4</sup> *Erexit* sibi titulum.

<sup>5</sup> *Hic* presbyteris ecclesias divisit, cœmeteria, parochias, et diœceses instituit.

of Christians as there was then. In the life of *Marcellus*, about forty years after *Dionysius*, we read of twenty-five titles in the church of Rome; of which number, what use is made for interpreting the number 666! may be seen in *Mr. Potter's* ingenious tract on that subject. But when afterwards these titles were much increased, those presbyters that were placed in the ancient titles which were the chief among them, were called *cardinales presbyteri*,<sup>1</sup> which were then looked on as chief of the clergy, and therefore were the chief members of the council of presbyters to the bishop. So that at this day, the conclave at Rome, and the pope's consistory, is an evident argument in this great degeneracy of it, of the primitive constitution of the government of the church there, by a bishop acting with his college of presbyters. Neither was this proper to Rome alone, but to all other great cities, which, when the number of presbyters was grown so great that they could not conveniently meet, and join with the bishop for ordering the government of the church, there were some, as the chief of them, chosen out from the rest, to be as the bishop's council, and these in many places, as at Milan, Ravenna, Naples, &c. were called *cardinales presbyteri*, as well as at Rome; which were abrogated by *Pius Quintus*, 1568: but the memory of them is preserved still in cathedral churches; in the chapter there, where the dean was nothing else but the archipresbyter, and both dean and prebendaries were to be assistant to the bishop in the regulating the church affairs belonging to the city, while the churches were contained therein. So much shall suffice for the model of government in the churches, while they were contained within the same precincts with the city itself.

§ 3. We come, in the third place, to consider what relation these churches in greater cities had one to another, and to the less cities which were under them. And here the grand question to be discussed is this; whether the churches in greater cities by apostolical institution, had the government ecclesiastical, not only of the less villages under them, but likewise of all less cities under the civil jurisdiction of the *metropolis*. The affirmative is of late asserted by some persons of great renown and learning. The first I find maintaining this *hypothesis* of the divine right of *metropolitans*, is *Fregevilæus Gantius*, one of the reformed church of France, who hath spent a whole chapter in his *Palma Christiana*,

<sup>1</sup> V. Onuphrium de Episcop. tul. et Div. Cardinalium.

“Christian Palm,”<sup>1</sup> to that purpose, and hath made use of the same arguments which have been since improved by all the advantages which the learning of a *reverend doctor* could add to them. But because this principle manifestly destroys the main foundation of this discourse, it is here requisite to examine the grounds on which it stands, that thereby it may be fully cleared whether the subordination of less churches to greater, did only arise from the mutual association of churches among themselves, or from apostolical appointment and institution. The two pillars which the divine right of metropolitans is built upon, are these: *First*, that the cities spoken of in the New Testament, in which churches were planted, were metropolitan, in the civil sense. *Secondly*, that the apostles did so far follow the model of the civil government as to plant metropolitan churches in those cities. If either of these prove infirm, the fabric erected upon them must needs fall; and I doubt not, but to make it appear that both of them are. I begin with the first. The notion of a metropolis is confessed to be this: a city wherein the courts of a civil judicature were kept by the Roman governors, under whose jurisdiction the whole province was contained. The cities chiefly insisted on, are the seven cities of the Lydian Asia, and Philippi, which is called *πρωτη πολις Μακεδονιας*, “the first city of Macedon.” As for the cities of the Proconsular Asia, although the bounds and limits of it are not so clear as certainly to know whether all these cities were comprehended under it or not, *Strabo* telling us that Phrygia, Lydia, Caria and Mysia, *δυσδιακριτα παραπιστοντα εις αλληλα*, “fall in the way of one another hardly to be distinguished;”<sup>2</sup> it being true of all four which was said of Mysia and Phrygia.<sup>3</sup>

The Phrygian and Mysian borders are distinct; but it is hard to find them out, for Laodicea is by *Ptolomy* referred to Caria; *Strabo* and many others place it in Phrygia—only *Stephanus Bizantinus* places it in Lydia; but granting all that is produced by the late most excellent Primate of Armagh in his learned discourse of the Proconsular Asia, to prove all these seven cities to be in the bounds of this Lydian Asia, yet it is far from being evident, that all these cities were metropolitan in the civil sense. For *Strabo* tells us, “that the Romans did not divide these places by nations, but according to the

<sup>1</sup> Palm. Christiana, cap. 4.

<sup>2</sup> Geogr. l. 13.

<sup>3</sup> *Χωρης τα Μυσων και Φρυγων ορισματα, το δε διοριζειν χαλεπον.*—“It is difficult to define the boundaries of the regions, whether of Mysia or Phrygia.”

diocesses wherein they kept their courts, and exercised judicature."<sup>1</sup> These cities wherein the courts of judicature were kept, were metropolitan and no other. Of five of them, Laodicea, Smyrna, Sardis, Ephesus and Pergamus, *Pliny* saith, that the Conventus, the civil courts, were kept in them, and they had jurisdiction over the other places by him mentioned;<sup>2</sup> but for the other two, Thyatira and Philadelphia, Philadelphia is expressly mentioned as one of those cities which was under the *jurisdictio Sardiana*, "the Lydian jurisdiction," so far was it from being a metropolis of itself; and Thyatira, mentioned as one of the ordinary cities, without any additional honour at all to it. And for Philadelphia, it was so far unlikely to be a metropolis, that *Strabo* tells us it was *σεισμῶν πληρῆς*, "very subject to earthquakes," and therefore had very few inhabitants; those that are, live most part in the fields, where they have *εὐδαίμονα γῆν*, "a very rich soil;" but *Strabo* for all that, wonders at the boldness of the men that durst to venture their lives there; and most of all admires what was in those men's heads who first built a city there. Is it then any ways probable that this should be chosen for a metropolis, in such an abundance of fair and rich cities as lay thereabout? But a *salvo* is found out for *Pliny's* not mentioning them as metropolitan, because the addition of these two mother cities seems to have been made when *Vespasian* added those many new provinces to the old government which *Suetonius* speaks of;<sup>3</sup> but this *salvo* doth not reach the sore: for, first, *Pliny* wrote his Natural History, not in the beginning, but toward the latter end of the empire of *Flavius Vespasianus*, when *Titus* had been six times consul as he himself saith in his preface; therefore if there had been any such change, *Pliny* would have mentioned it. Secondly, the provinces added by *Vespasian*, are expressly set down by *Suetonius*, viz. Achaia, Lysia, Rhodus, Byzantium, Samos, Thracia, Cilicia, Comagena, not the least mention of the Lydian or Proconsular Asia, or any alteration made in the metropolis there. But yet there is a further attempt made to make Philadelphia a metropolis, which is from a subscription of *Eustathius* in the council of *Constantinople sub Menna*, act 5, who calls himself the bishop of the metropolis of Philadelphia. But what validity there is in such a subscription in the time of the fifth century to prove a metropolis in the first, let any one judge that doth but consider how common a

<sup>1</sup> Geogr. l. 13, p. 432, ed. Is. Casaub.

<sup>2</sup> Nat. Hist. l. 5, c. 29 et 30.

<sup>3</sup> Sueton. in Vespas. c. 8.



thing it was to alter metropolitan cities, especially after the new disposition of the Roman empire by *Constantine*. But if we stand to the *Notitiæ* to determine this controversy, which are certainly more to be valued than a single subscription, the metropolitanship of these cities of the Lydian Asia will be irrecoverably overthrown. For in the old *Notitia*, taken out of the Vatican MS., and set forth with the rest by *Carolus à Sancto Paulo* in his Appendix to his *Geographia Sacra*, Ephesus is made the metropolis of the province of Asia, Sardis of Lydia, Laodicea of Phrygia Capatiana, as it is there written for Pacatiana, but Pergamus placed in the province of Cæsarea Cappadocia, Philadelphia under Sardis, with Thyatira. In the *Notitia* attributed to Hierocles under the metropolis of Ephesus is placed Smyrna and Pergamus, under Sardis, Thyatira and Philadelphia; so likewise in the *Notitia* of the French king's library. So that neither in the civil nor ecclesiastical sense can we find these seven cities to be all metropolitan. We therefore observe *St. Paul's* course, and leaving Asia, we come into Macedonia, where we are told, that Philippi was the metropolis of Macedonia: I know not whether with greater incongruity to the civil or ecclesiastical sense: in both which I doubt not but to make it appear, that Philippi was not the metropolis of Macedonia, and therefore the bishops there mentioned could not be the bishops of the several cities under the jurisdiction of Philippi,<sup>1</sup> but must be understood of the bishops resident in that city. We begin with it in the civil sense, which is the foundation of the other. It is confessed not to have been a metropolis during its being called *Κρηνίδες* and *Δατος*, "the city of fountain nymphs and datus, two ancient names of Philippi,"<sup>2</sup> it being by *Pausanias* called *νεωτα των εν Μακεδονια πολεων*, "the most recent cities in Macedonia." By *Theophylact*, out of an old geography, (as it is supposed,) it is said to be *μικρα πολις υπο μετροπολεως Θεσσαλονικης τελουσα*, "a little town ranging under the metropolis of Thessalonica;" and it is not very improbable that so small a city, as it is acknowledged to be by *Dio*<sup>3</sup> and others, should be the metropolis of Macedonia, where were at least one hundred and fifty cities, as *Pliny* and *Pomponius Mela* tell us;<sup>4</sup> by both of whom Philippi is placed in Thracia, and not in Macedonia. But two arguments are brought to prove Philippi to have been a metropolis; the first is from *St. Luke*,

<sup>1</sup> Phil. i. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Dio, l. 48.

<sup>2</sup> Eliac. 11, p. 182.

<sup>4</sup> S. 4, c. 11, l. 2, c. 2.

calling it *πρωτην της μεγιδος Μακεδονιας πολιν*, “the first town of the district of Macedonia,” *Acts* xvi. 12; but rendered by the learned doctor, “the prime city of the province of Macedonia;” but it would be worth knowing where *μεγεις* in all the *Notitiæ* of the Roman empire was translated a province; and it is evident that *Luke* calls it the first city, not *ratione dignitatis*, “in regard to its dignity,” but *ratione sitûs*, in regard to its situation. So *Camerarius* understands *Luke*: “It is the first colony of that part of Macedonia, when one goes from Thracia into it.”<sup>1</sup> And so it appears by *Dio*,<sup>2</sup> describing the situation of Philippi, that it was the next town to Neapolis, only the mountain Symbolon coming between them, and Neapolis being upon the shore, and Philippi built up in the plain near the mountain *Pangæus*, where *Brutus* and *Cassius* encamped themselves: its being then the first city of entrance into Macedonia proves no more that it was the metropolis of Macedonia, than that Calais is of France or Dover of England. But it is further pleaded, that Philippi was a colony, and therefore it is most probable that the seat of the Roman judicature was there. But to this I answer, first, that Philippi was not the only colony in Macedonia; for *Pliny* reckons up *Cassandria*, *Paria*, and others:<sup>3</sup> for which we must understand that Macedonia was long since made a province by *Paulus*; and in the division of the Roman provinces by *Augustus*, *Strabo* reckons it with *Illyricum* among the provinces belonging to the Roman people and senate, and so likewise doth *Dio*. But it appears by *Suetonius*,<sup>4</sup> that *Tiberius*, (according to the custom of the Roman emperors in the danger of war in the provinces,) took it into his own hands, but it was returned by *Claudius* to the senate again, together with *Achaia*: thence *Dio* speaking of Macedonia in the time of *Tiberius*, saith, it was governed *αλληρωτι*, “by men not yet chosen by lot or election,”<sup>5</sup> that is, by those who were *αρχοντες αιγετοι*; “by governors eligible to be chosen,” the *præfecti Cæsaris*, “such as were sent by the emperor to be his presidents” in the provinces; the *αρχοντες κληρωτοι* were the “proconsuls, chosen by lot,” after their consulship in the several provinces: and therefore *Dio* expresseth *Claudius*’s returning Macedonia into the senate’s hands by *απεδωκεν τοτε τω*

<sup>1</sup> Hanc esse primam coloniam partis seu Plagæ Macedonicæ; nimirum à Thraciæ vicinia iter in Macedoniam ordiëns.

<sup>2</sup> Lib. 47, p. 397.

<sup>3</sup> Paterc. l. 2, c. 37.

<sup>4</sup> Geogr. l. 17, hist. l. 53. V. Claudii, cap. 25.

<sup>5</sup> Hist. l. 57.

κληρω, "he put it to the lot of the senate again." Now Macedonia having been thus long a province of the Roman empire, what probability is there, because Philippi was a colony, therefore it must be the *metropolis* of Macedonia? Secondly, We find not the least evidence either in scripture or elsewhere, that the proconsul of Macedonia had his residence at Philippi; yea, we have some evidence against it out of scripture, Acts xvi. 20, 22, και προσαγαγοντες αυτους τοις στρατηγοις, "and brought them to the magistrates;" if there had been the tribunal of a proconsul here, we should certainly have had it mentioned, as *Gallio* proconsul of Achaia is in a like case at Corinth, Acts xviii. 12. Two sorts of magistrates are here expressed:<sup>1</sup> the *αρχοντες*, which seem to be the "rulers" of the city, the *στρατηγοι*, to be the "duumviri" of the colony, or else the deputies of the proconsul residing there: but I incline rather to the former, *ξεατηγος κολωνιας*, "the general or ruler of the colony," being only a duumvir, but *ξεατηγος Ρωμης*, is a "Prætor at Rome," as *Heinsius* observes from the Glossary of *H. Stephen*.<sup>2</sup> For every colony had a duumvirate to rule it, answering to the consuls and prætors at Rome. But all this might have been spared, when we consider how evident it is that Thessalonica was the Metropolis of Macedonia, as appears by *Antipater*.<sup>3</sup> And the *Præfectus prætorio Illyrici*, "the præfect over the court at Illyricum," had his residence at Thessalonica; as *Theodore*t tells us, "Thessalonica was a great populous city, where the lieutenant of Illyricum did reside:"<sup>4</sup> and so in probability did the *Vicarius Mucedoniæ*, "the lieutenant or deputy of Macedonia." It is called the Metropolis of Macedonia likewise by *Socrates*, and in the ecclesiastical sense it is so called by *Ætius* the bishop thereof in the council of Sardica; and *Carolus à Sancto Paulo*,<sup>5</sup> thinks it was not only the metropolis of the Province of Macedonia, but of the whole diocess,<sup>6</sup> (which in the east was much larger than the province.) I suppose he means that which answered to the *Vicarius Mucedoniæ*. And thence in the councils of

<sup>1</sup> V. Pancir. de Magist. Municipal. cap. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Exerc. sacr. l. 5, c. 10.

<sup>3</sup> In the Greek epigram,

Σοι με Θρηικης σκυληφορος Θεασσαλονικη

Μητης ή πασης πέμψε Μακεδονικης.—Antholog. l. 1.

"Thessalonica, mother of all Macedonia, and loaded with the spoils of Thrace, hath sent me to thee."

<sup>4</sup> Θεσσαλονικη πολις εστι μεγιστη και πολυανθρωπος, &c. ὅσα των Ιλλυριων τον ὑπαρχον ηγυμμενον εχει.—Hist. eccles. l. 5, c. 17. V. Berter. Pithan. Dial. cap. 2, l. 2, c. 12.

<sup>5</sup> Conc. Sard. cop. 16.

<sup>6</sup> Grögr. sacr. l. 8, s. 14.

Ephesus and Chalcedon, the subscription of the bishop of Thessalonica was next to the patriarchs. But for Philippi the same author acknowledgeth it not to have been a metropolitan church in the first six centuries; but, after that Macedonia was divided into *prima* and *secunda*, (which was after the division of it in the empire into *prima* and *salutaris*,) then Philippi came to have the honorary title of a metropolitan: although in *Hierocles* his *Notitia*, Philippi is placed as the twenty-first city under the metropolis of Thessalonica. So much to evidence the weakness of the first pillar, viz. that these cities were metropolitan in the civil sense: and this being taken away, the other falls of itself; for if the apostles did model the ecclesiastical government according to the civil, then metropolitan churches were planted only in metropolitan cities; and these being proved not to have been the latter, it is evident they were not the former. But however, let us see what evidence is brought of such a subordination of all other churches to the metropolitans, by the institution of the apostles. The only evidence produced out of scripture for such a subordination and dependence of the churches of less cities upon the greater, is from *Acts* xvi. 1, 4, compared with *Acts* xv. 23; the argument runs thus: the question was started at Antioch, *Acts* xiv. 26, with *Acts* xv. 2, from thence they sent to Jerusalem for a resolution: the decree of the council there concerns not only Antioch, but Syria and Cilicia, which were under the jurisdiction of Antioch: and therefore metropolitan churches are *jure divino*, "by divine law or right." I am afraid the argument would scarce know itself in the dress of a *syllogism*. Thus it runs: If upon the occasion of the question at Antioch, the decree of the apostles made at Jerusalem, concern all the churches of Syria, and Cilicia, then all these churches had a dependence upon the metropolis of Antioch, but the *antecedent* is true, therefore the consequent. Let us see how the argument will do in another form. If upon the occasion of the question at Antioch, the decree of the apostles concerned all the churches of Christians conversing with Jews; then all these churches had dependence upon the church of Antioch; but, &c. How thankful would the *papists* have been if only Rome had been put instead of Antioch! and then the conclusion had been true, whatever the premises were. But in good earnest, doth the churches of Syria and Cilicia being bound by this decree, prove their subordination to Antioch, or to the apostles? Were they bound because Antioch was their metropolis, or because they were the apostles who resolved



the question? but were not the churches of Phrygia, and Galatia, bound to observe these decrees as well as others? For of these it is said, that the apostles went through the cities of them, delivering the decrees to keep, as it is expressed *Acts* xvi. 4, compared with the 6th verse. Or do the decrees of the apostles concern only those to whom they are inscribed, and upon whose occasion they are penned? Then by the same reason *Paul's* epistles being written many of them upon occasions, as that to the *Corinthians* being directed to the metropolis of Corinth, doth only concern the church of that city, and those of Achaia that were subject to the jurisdiction of the city; and so for the rest of the epistles. A fair way to make the word of God of no effect to us; because forsooth, we live not in obedience to those metropolitans to which the epistles were directed! From whence we are told, how many things we may understand by this notion of metropolitans: especially why *Ignatius* superscribes his epistle to the *Romans*, ἐκκλησία ἥτις προκαθεται ἐν τοπῷ χωρίον Ῥωμαίων, "to the church which presides in the place of the Roman region," or the *suburbicarian provinces*. But let us see whether this place may not be understood better without the help of this notion. *Casaubon*<sup>1</sup> calls it *locutionem barbarum*, "a barbarous phrase;" *Vedelius* is more favourable to it, and thinks *si non elegans saltem vitii libera est*, "if not elegant, at least it is free from fault," and explains it by the suburbicarian provinces, and makes the sense of it to be ἐν τοπῷ ὃς ἐστὶ χωρίον τῶν Ῥωμαίων, "in the place of the Roman regions," and parallels it with the τοπος πολέως καλουμένης Βεθσαιδία, *Luke* ix. 10. *Bellarmino* thinks he hath found the pope's universal power in his τοπος, "place," but methinks the χωρίον Ῥωμαίων should hardly be rendered, *orbis universus*, "the whole world," unless *Bellarmino* were no more skilled in *Greek* than *Casaubon* thinks he was, whom he calls in the place before cited, *hominem Græcarum literarum prorsus ἀμνητον*, "a man altogether uninitiated in Grecian learning." The most ingenious conjecture concerning this place, is that of our learned *Mr. Thorndike*.<sup>2</sup> "The word τοπος, saith he, is here used as many times besides, speaking of those places which a man would neither call cities nor towns, as *Acts* xxvii. 2, μελλοντες πλεῖν τοὺς κατὰ τὴν Ἀσίαν τοπους, 'being to sail by the places of Asia;' χωρὰ, it is plain, signifies the country; τοπος χωρίου Ῥωμαίων, then, must necessarily signify

<sup>1</sup> Exercit. 16, n. 150. Exercit. in Ep. Ignat. ad Rom. c. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Laws of the Chur. cap. 18, p. 164.

here the Vatican, lying in the fields as a suburb to Rome, and being the place where *St. Peter* was buried, and where the Jews of Rome then dwelt, as we learn by *Philo, legatione ad Caium*, "from the embassy to Caius," out of whom he produceth a large place to that purpose, and so makes this the church of the Jewish Christians, *the Vatican being then the Jewry of Rome*; but there being no clear evidence of any such distinction of churches there, and as little reason why *Ignatius* should write to the church of the Jewish Christians, and not to the church of the Gentile Christians, I therefore embrace his sense of the *τοπος χωριον Ρωμαιων* for the *Vatican*, but explain it in another way, viz. as we have already shown, that the chief places of meeting for the Christians in *Gentile Rome*, was in the *cemeteries* of the martyrs; now these *cœmeteria*, "burying places," were all of them without the city; and the *cœmeteria* where *Peter, Linus, Cletus*, and some other of the primitive martyrs lay interred in the *Vatican* was beyond the river Tiber. So *Damasus* in the life of *Cletus*, "who also was buried near the body of the blessed Peter on the Vatican."<sup>1</sup> The church then in the place of the region of the *Romans*, is the Christian church of Rome, assembling chiefly in the cemeteries of the Vatican, or in any other of those vaults which were in the fields at a good distance from the city. But yet there is one argument more for metropolitans, and that is from the importance of the word *παροικια*, "a dwelling or temporary sojourn of a stranger;" which is taken to signify both the city and country; and so the inscription of *Clemen's* epistle is explained, *ἐκκλησία Θεοῦ ἡ παροικουσα Ρωμην, ἐκκλησία Θεοῦ τῇ παροικουσῇ Κορινθον*, i. e. "the church of God dwelling about Rome, to the church dwelling about Corinth," whereby is supposed to be comprehended the whole territories, which (being metropolitans) takes in the whole province. And to *Polycarp*, *τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ τοῦ Θεοῦ τῇ παροικουσῇ Φιλιπποις*, "to the church of God dwelling at Philippi." But all this ariseth from a mistake of the signification of the word *παροικειν*, which signifies not so much *acolere* as *incolere*: "to dwell near, as to dwell in;" and therefore the old Latin version renders it, *ecclesiæ Dei quæ est Philippis*, "to the church of God which is in (or at) Philippi," *Παροικος* is *παρ αλλης πολεως αλλην οικων*, "one that removes from one city to sojourn in another." And the ground of attributing that name to the Christian churches, was either because that many of the first Christians being Jews, they

<sup>1</sup> Qui etiam sepultus est juxta corpus B. Petri in Vaticano.

did truly *παροιχειν*, "sojourn," being as strangers out of their own country, or else among the Christians, because by reason of their continual persecutions, they were still put in mind of their flitting uncertain condition in the world, their *πολιτευμα*, "country, citizenship" being in heaven.<sup>1</sup> Of this the apostles often tell them: from hence it came to signify the society of such Christians so living together; which as it increased, so the notion of the word *παροικια* increased, and so went from the city into the country, and came not from the country into the city; for, if *παροιχειν* should be taken for *accolere*, then it necessarily follows that *εκκλησια παροικουσα Ρωμην* cannot signify the church of Rome, and the territories belonging to it, but the church adjacent to Rome, distinct from the city, and the church in it. For in that sense *παροιχειν* is opposed to living in the city, and so *παροιχοι* are distinct from the citizens, as in *Thucydides* and others; but, I believe no instance can possibly be produced wherein *παροικια*, taken in that sense, doth comprehend in it both city and country. But being taken in the former sense, it was first applied to the whole church of the city; but when the church of the city did spread itself into the country, then the word *παροικια* comprehended the Christians, both in city and country adjoining to it.

§ 4. Which leads me to the second step of Christian churches, when churches took in the villages and territories adjoining to the cities: for which we must understand, that the ground of the subordination of the villages and territories about, did primarily arise from hence, that the gospel was spread abroad from the several cities into the countries about. The apostles themselves preached most, as we read in scripture, in the cities, because of the great resort of people thither; there they planted churches, and settled the government of them in an ecclesiastical senate, which not only took care for the government of churches already constituted, but for the gathering more. Now the persons who were employed in the conversion of the adjacent territories, being of the clergy of the city, the persons by them converted were adjoined to the church of the city, and all the affairs of those less churches were at first determined by the governors of the city; afterwards, when these churches increased, and had peculiar officers set over them by the senate of the city church, although these did rule and govern their flock, yet it

<sup>1</sup> Phil. iii. 20.

always was with a subordination to, and dependence upon, the government of the city church. So that by this means, he that was president of the senate in the city, did likewise superintend all the churches planted in the adjoining territories, which was the original of that which the Greeks call *παροιχία*; the Latins, the diocese of the bishop. The church where the bishop was peculiarly resident with the clergy, was called *matrix ecclesia*, "the mother church,"<sup>1</sup> and *cathedra principalis*, "the principal seat," as the several parishes which at first were divided according to the several regions of the city, were called *tituli*, "hence the word title, a title to a curacy, or beneficed living to be presented to the bishop prior to ordination," and those planted in the territories about the city, called *paræciæ*, "in modern language, parishes," when they were applied to the presbyters; but when to the bishop, it noted a diocese: those that were planted in these country parishes, were called *αρεσβυτες οι επι χωραις, οι εν χωραις*, "native presbyters, who are in the country," by the Greeks; and by the Latins, *presbyteri regionarii, conregionales, forastici, ruris agrorum presbyteri*, "country presbyters, fellow-countrymen, borderers, presbyters of the district of the country," from whom the *χωρεπισκοποι*,<sup>2</sup> were distinct, as evidently appears by the thirteenth canon of the council of *Neocæsarea*; "where the country presbyters are forbidden to administer the Lord's supper in the presence of the bishop or the presbyters of the city; but the chorepiscopi were allowed to do it." *Salmasius* thinks these *χωρεπισκοποι* were so called as *τωι χωρων επισκοποι*, the *episcopi villani*,<sup>3</sup> such as were only presbyters, and were set over the churches in villages: but though they were originally presbyters,<sup>4</sup> yet they were raised to some higher authority over the rest of the presbyters, and the original of them seems to be, that when churches were so much multiplied in the countries adjacent to the cities, that the bishop in his own per-

<sup>1</sup> Cod. Eccles. Afric. c. 33. can. 71.

<sup>2</sup> *χωρεπισκοποι*, literally country or rural bishops; as the church of England has its rural deans. A *suffragan*, or bishop under his metropolitan or primate, is the only English word having even a remote analogy to the ancient chorepiscopus: but it is not to be expected, after this change of country, time, and circumstances, that the functions of either were parallel with those of the other.—*Am. Ed.*

<sup>3</sup> The Latin term *villanus* originally signified one who resorted to land remote from the residence of its proprietor, enjoyed its produce, and ultimately claimed possession. Hence the English word *villain*, a *rogue*. To this the American term a *squatter*, has an evident analogy. But whether the "episcopus villanus" was a bishop over squatters, or had squatted himself, is a dilemma that Stillingfleet apparently had no intention to solve.—*Am. Ed.*

<sup>4</sup> Apparatus, p. 240, de primat. c. 10, p. 1, c. 11, p. 164.



son could not be present to oversee the actions and carriages of the several presbyters of the country churches, then they ordained some of the fittest in their several *diocesses* to superintend the several presbyters lying remote from the city; from which office of theirs they were called *περιοδευται*, "itinerants," because they did *περιοδεύειν*, "go about and visit" the several churches. This is the account given of them by *Beza*<sup>1</sup> and *Blondell*,<sup>2</sup> as well as others. All those several places that were converted to the faith by the assistance of the presbyters of the city, did all make but one church with the city. Whereof we have this twofold evidence: *First*, from the *eulogiæ* which were, at first, portions of the bread consecrated for the Lord's supper, which were sent by the *deacons* or *acoluthi*, "under deacons," to those that were absent, in token of their communion in the same church. *Justin Martyr* is the first who acquaints us with this custom of the church: "After," saith he, "the president of the assembly hath consecrated the bread and wine, the deacons stand ready to distribute it to every one person, *καὶ τοῖς οὐ παροῦσιν ἀποφέρουσι*, "and carry it to those that are absent."<sup>3</sup> *Damasus* attributes the beginning of this custom to *Miltiades*, bishop of Rome: "He caused that the dedicated offerings should be directed through the churches from the consecration of the bishop: which (act) is declared to be the leaven, (of charity.) So *Innocentius* to *Decentius*, speaking of the leaven," (or leavened bread, the symbol of that charity, says,) which we send on the Lord's day, through the parishes, that they should not judge that they are separated from our communion."<sup>4</sup> Whereby it appears to have been the custom of Rome and other places to send from the cathedral church, the bread consecrated to the several parish churches to note their joint communion in the faith of the gospel. Neither was it sent only to the several *tituli* in the city, but to the villages round about, as appears by the question propounded by *Decentius*; although at Rome it seems they sent it only to the churches within the city, as appears by the answer of *Innocentius*:<sup>5</sup> but *Albaspinus* takes it for granted, as a general custom upon some set days to send these

<sup>1</sup> Beza de Minis. grad. c. 24.

<sup>2</sup> Blondell, Ap. p. 94.

<sup>3</sup> Apol. 2, p. 97.

<sup>4</sup> Hic fecit ut oblationes consecratæ per ecclesias ex consecratione episcopi dirigerentur: quod declaratur fermentum. So Innocentius ad Decentium; de fermento, verò quod die Dominica per titulos mittimus, etc. ut se à nostra communione maxime illa die non judicent separatos.—Cap. 5.

<sup>5</sup> Observat. l. 1, c. 8.

*eulogiæ*, through the whole diocess. "For when scattered and extended over the villages and country, they cannot participate of the same communion, and always desire to preserve, as far as possible, a form of Christian unity, and of partaking of the body of Christ, the consecrated bread, on holy days and festivals, is sent through the parishes; by appreciating which, the fellowship, which ought to intervene amongst all the faithful of the same diocess, is felt and represented."<sup>1</sup> Surely then the diocesses were not very large, if all the several parishes could communicate on the same day with what was sent from the cathedral church. Afterwards they sent not part of the bread of the Lord's supper, but some other in analogy to that, to denote their mutual contesseration<sup>2</sup> in the faith and communion in the same church.<sup>3</sup> *Secondly*, it appears that still they were of the same church, by the presence of the *clergy* of the country, or the choice of the bishop of the city, and at ordinations and in councils.<sup>4</sup> So at the choice of *Boniface*: "All the presbyters, their own cures being left, shall be present, who may freely declare their own opinion, what is the judgment of God."<sup>5</sup> Whereby it is evident that all the clergy had their voices in the choice of the bishop. And therefore pope *Leo* requires these things as necessary to the ordination of a bishop: "The subscription of the clergy, the testimony of the honourable, and the consent of those of rank and of the people."<sup>6</sup> And in the same chapter, speaking of the choice of the bishop, he saith it was done *subscribentibus plus minus septuaginta presbyteris*, "the presbyters subscribing, being over or under seventy." And therefore it is observed that all the clergy concurred to the choice even of the bishop of Rome, till after the time of that *Hildebrand*, called *Gregory VII.*, in whose time *popery* came to age;<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Nam cum per vicos et agros sparsi et diffusi, ex eadem non possint sumere communione, cuperentque semper unionis Christianæ, et Christi corporis speciem quam possint maximam retinere, solennissimis diebus et festivis ex matrice per parochias, benedictus mittebatur panis, ex cujus perceptione communitas quæ inter omnes fideles ejusdem diœcesis intercedere debet, intelligebatur et repræsentabatur.

<sup>2</sup> V. Casaub. Exercit. 16, s. 33. Salmas. App. p. 243.

<sup>3</sup> *Contesseration*, mutual interchange of pledge or ticket. There is no English word now to signify this. So much have we gained by pruning to please ears that never heard music.

<sup>4</sup> Ep. ad Honor. à Presbit. Rom.

<sup>5</sup> Relictis singuli titulis suis presbyteri omnes aderunt qui voluntatem suam, quod sit Dei judicium, proloquantur.

<sup>6</sup> Subscriptio clericorum, honoratorum testimonium, ordinis consensus et plebis. —Ep. 90.

<sup>7</sup> Cypr. ep. 52.

thence *Casaubon* calls it *hæresin Hildebrandinam*, "the heresy of Hildebrand." *Cornelius*, bishop of Rome, was chosen *clericorum pene omnium testimonio*, "by the testimony of nearly all the clergy;" and in the council at Rome under *Sylvester* it is decreed, that none of the clergy should be ordained, *nisi cum tota adunata ecclesia*, "except with the whole church united." Many instances are brought from the councils of Carthage<sup>1</sup> to the same purpose, which I pass over as commonly known. It was accounted the matter of an accusation against *Chrysostom*<sup>2</sup> by his enemies, *ὅτι ἀνεν συνεδρίου καὶ παρὰ γνώμην τοῦ κλήρου ποιεῖ τὰς χειροτονίας*, "that he ordained without the council and against the will of the clergy." The presence of the clergy at councils hath been already shown. Thus we see how, when the church of the city was enlarged into the country, the power of the governors of the churches in the city was extended with it.

§ 5. The next step observable in the churches' increase, was, when several of these churches lying together in one province did associate one with another. The primitive church had a great eye to the preserving unity among all the members of it, and thence they kept so strict a correspondency among the several bishops in the *Commercium Formaturum*, "the intercourse of the formulæ or forms of writing," (which, to prevent deceit, may be seen in *Justellus's* Notes on the *Codex Canonum Ecclesiæ Africanæ*,)<sup>3</sup> "the code of the Canons of the African church;" and for maintaining of nearer correspondency among the bishops of a province, it was agreed among themselves for the better carrying on of their common work, to call a provincial synod twice every year to debate all causes there among themselves, and to agree upon such ways as might most conduce to the advancing the common interest of Christianity. Of these *Tertullian* speaks: "Orders are issued through those Græcian countries, and in certain places councils from the whole church are held, by which and others of higher rank, whatever is of common interest is discussed; and this, as a proof of the existence of Christianity, is celebrated with great veneration."<sup>4</sup> Of these the *thirty-eighth canon apostolical* (as it is called) expressly speaks, (which canons, though not of authority sufficient to

<sup>1</sup> Con. 3, c. 4 & 5 Con. 2, c. 10, 11.

<sup>2</sup> Photius, cod. 59, n. 15.

<sup>3</sup> Pag. 127.

<sup>4</sup> Aguntur præcepta per Græcias illas certis in locis concilia ex universis ecclesiis, per quæ et altiora quæq; in communi tractantur, et ipsa representatio nominis Christiani magna veneratione celebratur.—De jejunio advers. Psych.

ground any right upon, may yet be allowed the place of a testimony of the practice of the primitive church, especially towards the third century,) "Twice every year, let there be a synod of bishops, and let them decide on the tenets of religion, and settle the controversies that occur in the church."<sup>1</sup> To the same purpose the council of Antioch, A. D. 343: "On account of the necessities of the church, and the reconciliation of wranglers, it appears that you much need that synods of bishops should take place, in every province, twice every year."<sup>2</sup> To these councils, the presbyters and deacons came, as appears by that canon of the council of Antioch; and in the seventh canon of the Nicene council by *Alphonsus Pisanus*, the same custom is decreed, but no such thing occurs in the *Codex Canonum*, "the code of canons," either of *Tilius* or *Justellus's* edition, and the Arabic edition of that council is conceived to have been compiled above four hundred years after the council sat. But, however, we see evidence enough of this practice of celebrating provincial synods twice a year. Now in the assembling of these bishops together for mutual counsel in their affairs, there was a necessity of some order to be observed. There was no difference as to the power of the bishops themselves, who had all equal authority in their several churches, and none over another. For, "the episcopacy is one" (body) "by each," (member,) "of which the order is still held entire," as *Cyprian* speaks; and as *Jerome*, "whether at Rome, at Gubio, at Constantinople, at Reggio, or at Tanis, his merit and order of priesthood are the same. The power of riches, and the degradation of poverty, constitute him not a bishop of either a more elevated or depressed rank; for all are the successors of the apostles."<sup>3</sup> There being then no difference between them, no man calling himself *episcopum episcoporum*, as *Cyprian* elsewhere speaks, some other way must be found out to preserve order

<sup>1</sup> Δευτερον του ετους συνδος γινεσθαι των επισκοπων, και ανακρινεσθαι αλληλους τα δογματα της ευσεβειας και τας επιπιπτουσας εκκλησιαστικας αντιλογιας διαλυεσθαι.—Can. Apost. cap. 38.

<sup>2</sup> Δια τας εκκλησιαστικας χρειας, και τας των αμφισβητουμενων διαλυσεις, καλως εχειν εδοξε συνόδους καθ' εκαστην επαρχιαν των επισκοπων γινεσθαι δευτερον του ετους.—Can. 20, in Cod. Can. 99.

<sup>3</sup> Episcopatus unus est, cujus à singulis in solidum pars tenetur, (as *Cyprian* speaks; and as *Jerome*,) Ubicumq, episcopus fuerit, sive Romæ, sive Eugubii, sive Constantinopoli, sive Rhegii, sive Alexandriæ, sive Tanis, ejusdem est meriti, ejusdem est et sacerdotii. Potentia divitiarum et paupertatis humilitas, vel sublimiorem vel inferiorem episcopum non facit: cæterum omnes apostolorum successores sunt.—De veritate eccles.—Ep. ad Evagrum.



among them, and to moderate the affairs of the councils; and therefore it was determined in the council of Antioch, that he that was the bishop of the metropolis, should have the honour of metropolitan among the bishops: "because from every quarter, all having affairs resort to the metropolis, it seems proper that in honour he should have the pre-eminence."<sup>1</sup> We see how far they are from attributing any divine right to metropolitans; and therefore the rights of metropolitans are called by the sixth canon of the Nicene council, *τα αρχαία εδη*, "the ancient customs," which had been a dishonourable introduction for the metropolitan rights, had they thought them grounded upon apostolical institution. Nothing is more evident in antiquity than the honour of metropolitans depending upon their *sees*; thence when any cities were raised by the emperor to the honour of metropolitans, their bishop became a metropolitan, as is most evident in *Justiniana prima*, and for it there are canons in the councils decreeing it; but of this more afterwards. The chief bishop of Africa was only called *primæ sedis episcopus*, "the bishop of the first see:" thence we have a canon in the *Codex Ecclesiæ Africanæ*, "in the code of the African church:" "That the bishop of the chief see should not be called the exarch of the priests, or chief priest, or anything of like nature, but only the bishop of the chief seat."<sup>2</sup> Therefore it hath been well observed that the African churches did retain longest the primitive simplicity and humility among them. But when the voice was heard, on the flowing in of riches, *Hodie venenum effusum est in ecclesiam*, "this day poison has been poured forth in the church," the spirits of the prelates by that poison began to swell with pride and ambition, (as is too evident in church history,) only Africa escaped the infection most, and resisted the tyrannical encroachments of the Roman bishop, with the greatest magnanimity and courage, as may be seen by the excellent epistle of the council of Carthage, to Boniface, bishop of Rome, in the *Codex Ecclesiæ Africanæ*.<sup>3</sup> So that however Africa hath been always fruitful of monsters, yet in that ambitious age it had no other wonder but only this, that it escaped so free from that *typhus sæcularis*, "that stupor of the age," (as they then called it,) the monstrous itch of

<sup>1</sup> Δια το εν τη μητροπολει πανταχοθεν συντρεχειν παντας τους τα πραγματα εχοντας, οθεν εδοξε και τη τιμη προηγεισθαι αυτον.—Can. 17.

<sup>2</sup> Ωσε τον της πρωτης καθεδρας επισκοπον μη λεγεσθαι εξαρχον των ιερων η ακρον ιερεα, η τοιουτοτροπον τι ποτε, αλλα μονον επισκοπον της πρωτης καθεδρας.—Can. 39.

<sup>3</sup> Pag. 341.

pride and ambition. From whence we may well rise to the last step of the power of the church, which was after the empire grew Christian, and many provinces did associate together, then the honour and power of the patriarchs came upon the stage. And now began the whole Christian world to be the cockpit, wherein the two great prelates of Rome and Constantinople strive with their greatest force for mastery of one another, and the whole world with them, as may be seen in the actions of *Paschasinus*, the Roman legate in the council of Chalcedon. From whence forward the great Leviathan by his tumbling in the waves, endeavoured to get the dominion of all into his hands; but God hath at last put a hook into his nostrils, and raised up the great instruments of reformation, who, like the swordfish, have so pierced into his bowels, that by his tumbling he may only hasten his approaching ruin, and give the church every day more hopes of seeing itself freed from the tyranny of an usurped power. By this scheme and draught now of the increase of the church's power, nothing can be more evident than that it rises not from any divine institution, but only from positive and ecclesiastical laws, made according to the several states and conditions wherein the church was; which, as it gradually grew up, so was the power of the church by mutual consent fitted to the state of the church in its several ages—which was the first argument, that the primitive church did not conceive itself bound to observe any one unalterable form of government. This being the chief, the rest that follows will sooner be despatched.

§ 6. The *second* is from the great varieties as to government which were in several churches. What comes from divine right, is observed unalterably in one uniform and constant tenor: but what we find so much diversified according to several places, we may have ground to look on only as an ecclesiastical constitution, which was followed by every church as it judged convenient. Now as to church government we may find some churches without bishops for a long time, some but with one bishop in a whole nation, many cities without any, where bishops were common; many churches discontinue bishops for a great while where they had been; no certain rule observed for modelling their diocesses where they were still continued. Will not all these things make it seem very improbable that it should be an apostolical institution, that no church should be without a bishop? First, then some whole nations seem to have been without any bishops at all,

if we may believe their own historians. So if we may believe the great antiquaries of the church of Scotland, that church was governed by their *Culdei* as they called their presbyters, without any bishop over them, for a long time. *Johannes Major* speaks of their instruction in the faith, *per sacerdotes et monachos sine episcopis Scoti in fide eruditi*, "the Scots were instructed in the faith, without bishops, by the priests and monks,"<sup>1</sup> but lest that should be interpreted only of their conversion, *Johannes Fordonus* is clear and full to their government, from the time of their conversion about A. D. 263, to the coming of *Palladius* A. D. 430, that they were only governed by presbyters and monks. "Before the coming of *Palladius*, the Scots had doctors of the faith and ministers of the sacraments, but presbyters and monks only, following the order of the primitive church."<sup>2</sup> So much mistaken was that learned man, who saith, that neither *Beda* nor any other affirms that the Scots were formerly ruled by a presbytery, or so much as that they had any presbyter among them.<sup>3</sup> Neither is it any ways sufficient to say, that those presbyters did derive their authority from some bishops: for however we see here a church governed without such, or if they had any, they were only chosen from their *Culdei*, much after the custom of the church of Alexandria, as *Hector Boethius* doth imply. And if we believe *Philostorgius*,<sup>4</sup> the Gothic churches were planted and governed by presbyters for above seventy years: for so long it was from their first conversion to the time of *Ulphilas*, whom he makes their first bishop. And great probability there is, that where churches were planted by presbyters, as the church of France by *Andochius* and *Benignus*, that afterwards upon the increase of churches, and presbyters to rule them, they did from among themselves choose one to be as the bishop over them, as *Pothinus* was at Lyons. For we nowhere read in those early plantations of churches, that where there were presbyters already, they sent to other churches to derive episcopal ordination from them. Now for whole nations having but one bishop, we have the testimony of *Sozomen*, that in Scythia, which by the Romans was called *Masia inferior*,<sup>5</sup> *πολλαι πολεις οντες, ενα παντες επισκοπον εχεν,*

<sup>1</sup> De gestis Scot. lib. 2, cap. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Ante Palladii adventum habebant Scoti fidei doctores ac sacramentorum ministratores presbyteros solummodo, vel monachos ritum sequentes ecclesiæ primitivæ.—Scot. chron. l. 3, cap. 1.

<sup>3</sup> V. Blondel. Apol. s. 3, p. 314.

<sup>4</sup> Scot. hist. lib. 6, Eclog. l. 2, cap. 5.

<sup>5</sup> Hist. Eccl. l. 7, cap. 19.

“Although there were many cities they had but one bishop.” The like *Godignus* relates of the Abyssinian churches,<sup>1</sup> though their territories be of vast extent, there is but only one bishop in all those dominions, who is the bishop of Abuna. And where bishops were most common, it is evident they looked not on it as an apostolical rule for every city to have a bishop, which it must have if it was an apostolical institution for the church to follow the civil government.<sup>2</sup> *Theodoret* mentions eight hundred churches under his charge, in whose diocess *Ptolemy* placeth many other cities of note besides Cirus, as Ariseria, Regia, Ruba, Heraclea,<sup>3</sup> &c. In the province of Tripoli he reckons nine cities which had but five bishops, as appears by the *Notitia ecclesiæ Africanæ*, “the reminiscences of the African church.” In Thracia every bishop had several cities under him. The bishop of Heraclea that and Panion; the bishop of Byze had it and Arcadiapolis; of Cœla had it and Callipolis; Sabsadia had it and Aphrodisias.<sup>4</sup> It is needless to produce more instances of this nature either ancient or modern, they being so common and obvious. But further, we find bishops discontinued for a long time in the greatest churches. For if there be no church without a bishop, where was the church of Rome when from the martyrdom of *Fabian*, and the banishment of *Lucius* the church was governed only by the clergy?<sup>5</sup> So the church of Carthage when *Cyprian* was banished; the church of the east, when *Meletius* of Antioch, *Eusebius Samosatenus*, *Pelagius* of Laodicea, and the rest of the orthodox bishops were banished for ten years space, and *Flavianus* and *Diodorus*, two presbyters ruled the church of Antioch the mean while.<sup>6</sup> The church of Carthage was twenty-four years without a bishop in the time of *Hunerik*, king of the Vandals;<sup>7</sup> and when it was offered them that they might have a bishop upon admitting the Arians to a free exercise of their religion among them, their answer was upon those terms, *ecclesia episcopum non delectatur habere*; “it was not the pleasure of the church to have a bishop;” and *Balsamon*<sup>8</sup> speaking of the Christian churches in the east, determines it neither safe nor necessary in their present state to have bishops set over them. And lastly for their diocesses, it is evident there was no certain rule for modelling

<sup>1</sup> De rebus Abassin. l. 1, c. 321.

<sup>3</sup> Geog. l. 5, cap. 15.

<sup>5</sup> Cyprian. ep. 3, 26, 30, 31.

<sup>7</sup> Victor, l. 2, de pers. Vand.

<sup>2</sup> Ep. 113.

<sup>4</sup> Ephes. synod. 1, ad. sin. Act 7.

<sup>6</sup> Theodoret, l. 4, c. 21.

<sup>8</sup> In Can. 57, Laod.



them. In some places they were far less than in others.<sup>1</sup> Generally in the primitive and eastern churches they were very small and little, as far more convenient for the end of them in the government of the churches under the bishop's charge: it being observed out of *Walafridus Strabo*, by a learned man, "It is reported, that in certain parts of the east, the government of bishops, is over single cities, and single districts."<sup>2</sup> In Africa, if we look but into the writings of *Augustine*, we may find hundreds of bishops resorting to one council. In Ireland alone, *St. Patrick* is said by *Ninius* at the first plantation of Christianity to have founded three hundred and sixty-five bishopricks. So *Sozomen*<sup>3</sup> tells us that among the Arabians, and Cyprians, Novatians Montanists, ἐν χωμαῖς ἐπισκοποὶ ἱεργονται, "in the villages the bishops officiate."

§ 7. The next evidence that the church did not look upon itself as by a divine law to observe any one model of government, is, the conforming the ecclesiastical government to the civil. For, if the obligation arose from a law of God, that must not be altered according to civil constitutions, which are variable according to the different state and conditions of things. If then the apostles did settle things by a standing law in their own times, how comes the model of church government to alter with the civil form? Now that the church did generally follow the civil government, is freely acknowledged and insisted on by learned persons of all sides; especially after the division of the Roman empire by *Constantine* the Great. The full making out of which is a work too large to be here undertaken, and hath been done to very good purpose already, by *Berterius*, *Salmasius*, *Gothofred*, *Blondell*<sup>4</sup> and others, in their learned discourses of the *suburbicarian provinces*. Which whether by them or not we understand that which did correspond to the præfecture of the *provost* of Rome, which was within a hundred miles compass of the city of Rome, or that which answered to the *vicarius urbis*, whose jurisdiction was over the ten provinces distinct from Italy, properly so called, whose metropolis was Milan; or, which is

<sup>1</sup> Thorndike right of the church, p. 62. De rebus ecclesiast.

<sup>2</sup> Fertur in orientis partibus per singulas urbes et præfecturas singulas esse episcoporum gubernationes.

<sup>3</sup> Lib. 7, c. 19.

<sup>4</sup> Berteri, Pithan. an Diatribæ. Salamas. ep. ad Am. Eucharisti. adver. Sirmond. De prim. Pan. Jac. Gothoff. Conjectur. Vindiciæ Conjectur. Blondell de la primante en la eglise, etc.

most probable, the metropolitan province answering to the jurisdiction of the *præfectus urbis* and the *patriarchate* of the Roman bishop to the *vicarius urbis*; which way soever we take it, we see it answered to the civil government. I shall not here enter that debate, but only briefly at present set down the scheme of both civil and ecclesiastical government, as it is represented by our learned *Breerwood*.<sup>1</sup> The whole empire of Rome was divided into thirteen *diocesses*, whereof seven belonged to the *east* empire, and six (besides the præfecture of the city of Rome,) to the *west*. Those thirteen *diocesses*, together with that præfecture contained among them one hundred and twenty provinces, or thereabout; so that to every diocess belonged the administration of sundry provinces: lastly, every province contained many cities within their territories. The cities had for their rulers, those inferior judges, which in the law are called *defensores civitatum*, “defenders of the cities or states,” and their seats were the cities themselves, to which all the towns and villages in their several territories were to resort for justice. The provinces had for theirs either *proconsuls*, or *consulares*, or *præsides*, “presidents,” or *correctores*, “directors,” four sundry appellations, but almost all of equal authority; and their seats were the chief cities or metropolitans of the provinces: of which in every province there was one, to which all inferior cities for judgment in matters of importance did resort. Lastly, the diocesses had for theirs the lieutenants called *vicarii*, “deputies, or lieutenants,” and their seats were the metropolitan or principal cities of the diocess, whence the edicts of the emperor or other laws were published, and sent abroad into all the provinces of the diocess, and where the *prætorium*, or “chief tribunal for judgment” was placed to determine appeals, and minister justice, (as there might be occasion,) to all the provinces belonging to that jurisdiction. And this was the disposition of the Roman governor.—And truly it is wonderful, (saith that learned author,) how nearly and exactly the church in her government did imitate this civil ordination of the *Roman* magistrates. For first, in every city, as there was a *defensor civitatis* for secular government, so was there placed a bishop for spiritual discipline, in every city of the east, and in every city of the west, almost a several bishop, whose jurisdiction extended only to the city, and the places within the territory. For which cause the jurisdiction of a bishop was anciently called *παροιμία*,

<sup>1</sup> Discourse of the patriarchal government of the ancient Chur. q. 1

signifying not a *parish*, in the more limited sense in which the word is now taken, that is, the places or habitations near a church, but the towns and villages near a city: all which, together with the city, the bishop had in charge. *Secondly*, In every province, as there was a president, so there was an archbishop, and because his seat was the principal city of the province, he was commonly known by the name of metropolitan. *Lastly*, In every diocess, as there was a *lieutenant-general*, so was there a primate seated also in the principal city of the diocess as the *lieutenant* was, to whom the last determining of *appeals* from all the provinces in differences of the clergy, and the sovereign care of all the *diocess* for sundry points of spiritual government did belong. By this you may see that there were eleven primates besides the three patriarchs; for of the thirteen *diocesses*, (besides the præfecture of the city of Rome, which was administered by the patriarch of Rome,) that of Egypt was governed by the patriarch of Alexandria, and that of the Orient by the patriarch of Antiochia, and all the rest by the *primates*: between whom and the patriarchs was no difference of jurisdiction and power, but only of some honour which accrued to them by the dignity of their *sees*; as is clearly expressed in the third *canon* of the council of Constantinople, whereby "Constantinople is advanced to the honorary title of a patriarch next to Rome, because it was New Rome."<sup>1</sup> Whereby it is evident that the honour belonging to the bishop of old Rome, did arise from its being the imperial city. The honour of the bishop rising, as *Austin*<sup>2</sup> saith that of the *deacons* of Rome did, "on account of the magnificence of the city of Rome, which seems to be the head of all cities."<sup>3</sup> Hereby we now fully see what the original was of the power of *archbishops*, *metropolitans*, and *patriarchs*, in the church, viz. the tempering the ecclesiastical government to the civil.

§ 8. The next evidence that the church did not look upon itself as bound by a divine law, to a certain form of government, but did order things itself, in order to peace and unity, is, that after episcopal government was settled in the church, yet ordination by presbyters was looked on as valid. For which these instances may suffice: About the year 390,

<sup>1</sup> Τον μὲν τοι Κωνσταντινοπόλεως ἐπισκοπὸν εἶχεν τὰ πρεσβεία τῆς τιμῆς μετὰ τὸν τῆς Ῥώμης ἐπισκοπὸν, διὰ το εἶναι αὐτὸν νεαν Ῥώμην.—In Cod. Cin. 166.

<sup>2</sup> Quest. ex. utroq. Test q. 101.

<sup>3</sup> Propter magnificentiam urbis Romanæ, quæ caput esse videtur omnium civitatum.

*Johannes Cassianus* reports that one *Abbot Daniel*, inferior to none of those who lived in the desert of Scetis, was made a deacon, "by *B. Pashnutius*, a presbyter of the same desert. For so much did he rejoice in his excellencies, that him, whom he had known for his virtues and grace to be his fellow, he hastened to render his equal in the honour of the ministry. And since he by no means could bear, that he should continue in an inferior office, and desiring to provide for himself the most worthy successor, whilst he yet survived, he advanced him to the honour of the presbytery."<sup>1</sup> What more plain and evident, than that here a presbyter ordained a presbyter, which we now here read was pronounced null by *Theophilus*, then bishop of Alexandria, or by any others at that time? It is a known instance, that in the ordination of *Pelagius*, first bishop of Rome, there were only two bishops concurred, and one presbyter; whereas, according to the fourth canon of the *Nicene* council, three bishops are absolutely required for ordination of a bishop: either then *Pelagius* was no canonical bishop, and so the point of succession thereby fails in the church of Rome, or, else a presbyter hath the same intrinsical power of ordination which a bishop hath, but is only restrained by ecclesiastical laws.<sup>2</sup> In the time of *Eustathius*, bishop of Antioch, which was done A. D. 328, as *Jacobus Gothofredus* proves,<sup>3</sup> till the time of the ordination of *Paulinus*, A. D. 362, which was thirty-four years space, when the church was governed by *Paulinus* and his colleagues withdrawing from the public assemblies, it will be hard to say by whom the ordinations were performed all this while, unless by *Paulinus* and his colleagues. In the year 452, it appears by *Leo*, in his epistle to *Rusticus Narbonensis*,<sup>4</sup> that some presbyters took upon them to ordain as bishops; about which he was consulted by *Rusticus*, what was to be done in that case with those so ordained. *Leo's* resolution of that cases is observable: "Those clergymen who were ordained by such as took upon them the office of bishops, in churches belonging to proper bishops, if the ordi-

<sup>1</sup> A B. Pashnutio solitudinis ejusdem presbytero: In tantum enim virtutibus ipsius adgaudebat, ut quem vitæ meritis sibi et gratiâ parem noverat, cœquare sibi etiam sacerdotii honore festinaret. Siquidem nequaquam ferens in inferiore eum ministerio diutius immorari, optansq; sibimet successorem dignissimum providere, superstes eum presbyterii honore provexit.—Collat. 4, c. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Anast. Bil. vit. Peleg. Prim.

<sup>3</sup> Dissert. in Philost. l. 2, cap. 7.

<sup>4</sup> Ep. 92, c. 1.



nation were performed by the consent of the bishops, it may be looked on as valid, and those presbyters remain in their office in the church.”<sup>1</sup> So that by the consent *ex post facto* of the true bishops those presbyters thus ordained, were looked on as lawful presbyters, which could not be, unless their ordainers had an intrinsical power of ordination; which was only restrained by the laws of the church; for if they have no power of ordination, it is impossible they should confer anything by their ordination. If to this it be answered, that the validity of their ordination did depend upon the consent of the bishops, and that presbyters may ordain, if delegated thereto by bishops, as *Paulinus* might ordain on that account at Antioch. It is easily answered, that this very power of doing it by delegation, doth imply an intrinsical power in themselves of doing it. For if presbyters be forbidden ordaining others by the scriptures, then they can neither do it in their own persons, nor by delegation from others. For “what is not allowed to any one to do in his own name, shall not be allowed him to do in the name of another.”<sup>2</sup> And that rule of *Cyprian* must hold true, “nothing can be granted to any by human indulgence, where divine precept intervenes, and appoints a law.”<sup>3</sup> There can be no dispensing with divine laws; which must be, if that may be delegated to other persons, which was required of men in the office wherein they are. And if presbyters have power of conferring nothing by their ordination, how can an after-consent of bishops make that act of theirs valid, for conferring right and power by it? It appears then, that this power was restrained by the laws of the church, for preserving unity in itself; but yet so, that in case of necessity what was done by presbyters, was not looked on as invalid. But against this the case of *Ischyrras*, ordained, as it is said, a presbyter by *Colluthus*, and pronounced null by the council of *Alexandria*, is commonly pleaded. But there is no great difficulty in answering it. For *first*, the pronouncing such an ordination null, doth not evidence that they looked on the power of ordination as belonging of divine right only to bishops; for we find by many instances, that acting in a bare

<sup>1</sup> Siqui autem clerici ab istis pseudo-episcopis in iis ecclesiis ordinati sunt, quæ ad proprios episcopos pertinebant, ordinatio eorum cum consensu et iudicio præsentium facta est, potest rata haberi, ita ut in ipsis ecclesiis perseverent.

<sup>2</sup> Quod alicui suo nomine non licet, nec alieno licebit.—Reg. juris. 67.

<sup>3</sup> Non aliquid cuiquam largiri potest humana indulgentia, ubi intercedit et legem tribuit divina præscriptio.—Epist. 8.

contempt of ecclesiastical canons was sufficient to degrade any from being presbyters.<sup>1</sup> *Secondly*. If *Ischyra*s had been ordained by a bishop, there were circumstances enough to induce the council to pronounce it null: *first*, as done out of the diocese; in which case ordinations are nulled by *Concil. Arel. cap. 13*; *secondly*, done by open and pronounced schismatics; *thirdly*, done *sine titulo*, "without a title," ἀπολευμενως, "freely," and so nulled by the canons then. *Thirdly*, *Collythus* did not act as a presbyter in ordaining, but as a bishop of the *Meletian* party in Cynus, as the clergy of Marcotis, speaking of *Ischyra*s's ordination, ἀπο Κολλουθου του πρεσβυτερου φαντασθεντος επισκοπου, "by *Collythus*, a presbyter, making show of being a bishop;" and is supposed to have been ordained a bishop by *Meletius*.<sup>2</sup> More concerning this may be seen in *Blondell*, who fully clears all the particulars here mentioned. So that notwithstanding this instance, nothing appears, but that the power of ordination was restrained only by ecclesiastical laws.

§ 9. The last thing to prove that the church did act upon prudence in church government, is from the many restraints in other cases made by the church for restraint of that liberty which was allowed by divine laws. He must be a stranger to the ancient canons and constitutions of the church, that takes no notice of such restraints made by canons, as in reference to observation of several rites and customs in the churches, determined by the provincial synods of the several churches; for which purpose their provincial synods were still kept up in the eastern church, as appears by the testimony of *Firmilian* in his epistle to *Cyprian*: "From which cause, amongst us it necessarily happens, that each year, the elders and governors assemble together, to despatch the matters entrusted to our care: so that if affairs of a more pressing urgency occur, than may be directed by a common council, as when certain brethren have fallen from the faith, &c., a remedy may be sought, not as if they could achieve remission of sins through us, but by us might be turned to a conviction of their own failings, and be impelled more fully to make satisfaction<sup>3</sup> to the Lord."<sup>4</sup> The several orders about the discipline

<sup>1</sup> V. Blondel. Ap. p. 325.

<sup>2</sup> Apol. S. 3. à 317. ad 327.

<sup>3</sup> Here is Catholicism! man satisfy God!!! Credat Judæus et Papa, non ego.

<sup>4</sup> Qua ex causa necessariò apud nos fit, ut per singulos annos seniores et præpositi in unum conveniamus, ad disponenda ea quæ curæ nostræ commissa sunt: ut si quæ graviora sunt communi consilio dirigantur, lapsis quoque fratribus, etc.,

of the church were determined in these *synods*; as to which, he that would find a command in scripture for their orders about the *catechumens* and *lapsi*, will take pains to no purpose, the church ordering things itself for the better regulating the several churches they were placed over. A demonstrative argument that these things came not from divine command, is, from the great diversity of these customs in several places: of which besides *Socrates*, *Sozomen*<sup>1</sup> largely speaks, as may easily be gathered from the history of the several churches. When the church began to enjoy ease and liberty, and thereby had opportunity of enjoying greater convenience for councils, we find what was determined by those councils, was entered into a *codex canonum*,<sup>2</sup> "code of the canons," for that purpose, which was observed next to the scriptures; not from any obligation of the things themselves, but from the conducibleness of those things, (as they judged them,) to the preserving the peace and unity of the church.

medela quærat: non quasi à nobis remissionem peccatorum consequantur; sed ut per nos ad intelligentiam delictorum suorum convertantur, et Domino plenius satisfacere cogantur.—Ep. 75.

<sup>1</sup> Hist. lib. 7, cap. 19.

<sup>2</sup> V. Justol. præfat. in Cod. Canonum Univers. Eccl.

## CHAPTER VIII.

An inquiry into the judgment of reformed divines concerning the unalterable divine right of particular forms of church government: wherein it is made appear, that the most eminent divines of the Reformation did never conceive any one form necessary; manifested by three arguments. 1. From the judgment of those who make the form of church government mutable, and to depend upon the wisdom of the magistrate and church. This cleared to have been the judgment of most divines of the Church of England since the Reformation. Archbishop Crannier's judgment, with others of the Reformation in Edward the Sixth's time, now first published from his authentic MS. The same ground of settling Episcopacy in Queen Elizabeth's time. The judgment of Archbishop Whitgift, Bishop Bridge, Dr. Loe, Mr. Hooker, largely to that purpose, in King James's time. The King's own opinion. Dr. Sutcliffe. Since of Crakanthorp, Mr. Hales, Mr. Chillingworth. The testimony of foreign divines to the same purpose. Chemnitius, Zanchy. French divines, Peter Moulin, Fregevil, Blondell, Bochartus, Amyraldus. Other learned men, Grotius, Lord Bacon, &c. 2. Those who look upon equality as the primitive form, yet judge Episcopacy lawful. Augustine Confession, Melancthon, Articuli Smalcaldici. Prince of Anhalt, Hyperius, Hemingius: the practice of most foreign churches. Calvin and Beza both approving Episcopacy and Diocesan Churches. Salmasius, &c. 3. Those who judge Episcopacy to be the primitive form, yet look not on it as necessary. Bishop Jewell, Fulk, Field, Bishop Downam, Bishop Bancroft, Bishop Morton, Bishop Andrews, Saravia, Francis Mason, and others. The conclusion hence laid in order to peace. Principles conducing thereto. 1. Prudence must be used in church government, at last confessed by all parties. Independents in elective synods, and church covenants, admission of members, number in congregations. Presbyterians in classes, and synods, lay-elders, &c. Episcopal in diocesses, causes, rites, &c. 2. That prudence best, which comes nearest primitive practice. A Presidency for life over an Ecclesiastical Senate showed to be that form, in order to it. Presbyteries to be restored. Diocesses lessened. Provincial Synods kept twice a year. The reasonableness and easiness of accommodation shown. The whole concluded.

§ 1. HAVING thus far proceeded, through divine assistance, in our intended method, and having found nothing determin-



ing the necessity of any one form of government in the several laws of nature and Christ, nor in the practice of apostles, or primitive church; the only thing possible to raise a suspicion of novelty in this opinion, is, that it is contrary to the judgment of the several churches of the Reformation. I know it is the last *asylum* which many run to, when they are beaten off from their imaginary fancies, by pregnant testimonies of scripture and reason, to shelter themselves under the *αυτος εφη*, “the *ipse dixit*, or he himself said so,” of some particular persons, to whom their understandings are *bored*<sup>1</sup> in perpetual slavery. But if men would but once think their understandings at age to judge for themselves, and not make them live under a continual pupillage; and but take the pains to travel over the several churches of the Reformation, they would find themselves freed of many strange misconceptions they were possessed with before, and understand far better the ground and reason of their pitching upon their several forms, than they seem to do, who found all things upon a divine right. I believe there will, upon the most impartial survey, scarce be one church of the Reformation brought, which doth embrace any form of government, because it looked upon that form as only necessary by an unalterable standing law; but every one took up that form of government which was judged most suitable to the state and condition of their several churches. But, that I may the better make this appear, I shall make use of some arguments whereby to demonstrate, that the most eminent divines that have lived since the Reformation, have been all of this mind, that no one form is determined as necessary for the church of God in all ages of the world. For if many of them have *in thesis* asserted the form of church government mutable; if those who have thought an equality among ministers of the primitive form, have yet thought a government by episcopacy lawful and useful; if, lastly, those who have been for episcopacy, have not judged it necessary, then I suppose it will be evident, that none of them have judged any one form taken exclusively of others, to be founded upon an unalterable right: for whatsoever is so founded, is made a necessary duty in all churches to observe, and it is unlawful to vary from it, or to change it according to the prudence of the church, according to its state and condition. I now therefore undertake to make these things out in their order.

<sup>1</sup> Exod. xxi. 6.

First, I begin with those who have *in thesis* asserted the mutability of the form of church government. Herein I shall not follow the English humour, to be more acquainted with the state of foreign places than their own; but it being of the greatest concern to know upon what accounts episcopal government was settled among ourselves, in order to our submission to it, I shall therefore make inquiry into the judgment of those persons who either have been instrumental in settling it, or the great defenders of it after its settlement. I doubt not but to make it evident, that before these late unhappy times, the main ground for settling episcopal government in this nation, was not accounted any pretence of divine right, but the conveniency of that form of church government to the state and condition of this church at the time of its reformation: for which we are to consider, that the reformation of our church was not wrought by the torrent of a popular fury, nor the insurrection of one part of the nation against another, but was wisely, gravely, and maturely debated, and settled with a great deal of consideration. I meddle not with the times of *Henry VIII*, when I will not deny but the first *quickening* of the reformation might be, but the matter of it was as yet rude and undigested; I date the birth of it from the first settlement of that most excellent Prince *Edward VI*, the star of our reformation; who, A. D. 1547, was no sooner entered upon his throne, but some course was presently taken in order to reformation. Commissioners with injunctions were dispatched to the several parts of the land, but the main business of the reformation was referred to the parliament called November 4, the same year,<sup>1</sup> when all former statutes about religion were recalled, as may be seen at large in Mr. *Fox*, and liberty allowed for professing the gospel according to the principles of reformation, and all banished persons for religion being called home. Upon this, for the better establishing of religion, and the public order for the service of God, an assembly of select divines is called by special order from the king's majesty, for debating of the settlement of things according to the word of God, and the practice of the primitive church. These sat, as Mr. *Fox* tells us,<sup>2</sup> in Windsor Castle, where, as he expresseth it, after long, learned, wise, and deliberate advices, they did finally conclude and agree upon one uniform order, &c. No more is said by him of it, and less by the late historian. The proceedings then in order to reforma-

<sup>1</sup> Acts and Mon. tom. 2, p. 657.

<sup>2</sup> Martyrol. in tom. 2, p. 658, 659.

tion, being so dark hitherto, and obscure, by what is as yet extant, much light may accrue thereto by the help of some authentic MSS., which, by a hand of Providence, have happily come into my hands; wherein the manner and method of the reformation will be more evident to the world, and the grounds upon which they proceeded. In the *convocation* that year sitting with the parliament, I find two petitions made to the archbishop and the bishops of the upper house, for the calling an assembly of select divines, in order to the settling of church affairs, and for the king's grant for their acting in convocation; which, not being yet, (to my knowledge,) extant in public, and conducing to our present business, I shall now publish from the MS. of *Bishop Cranmer*. They run thus:

Certain petitions<sup>1</sup> and requests made by the clergy of the lower house of the convocation, to the most Reverend Father in God, the Archbishop of Canterbury's Grace, and the residue of the prelates of the higher house, for the furtherance of certeyne articles following:

"*First*, That ecclesiastical laws may be made and established in this realm by xxxii. persons, or so many as shall please the king's majesty to name and appoint, according to the effect of a late statute made in the thirty-fifth year of the most noble king, and of most famous memory, king *Henry* the Eighth. So that all judges ecclesiastical proceeding after those laws, may be without danger and peril.

"Also that according to the antient custome of this realm, and the tenor of the king's writs for the summoning of the parliament, which be now, and ever have been directed to the bishops of every diocess, the clergy of the lower house of the convocation may be adjoyned and associate with the lower house of parliament, or else that all such statutes and ordinances as shall be made concerning all matters of religion and causes ecclesiastical may not pass without the sight and assent of the said clergy.

"Also that whereas by the commandment of King Henry 8, certeyne prelates and other learned men were appointed to alter the service in the church, and to devise other convenient and uniform order therein, who according to the same appointment did make certeyne books as they be informed, their

<sup>1</sup> Presuming that the above and the sequel are *literatim* copies of the documents in question, it is judged preferable—without any correction in orthography, or other alteration—to present them in their native antiquity.

request is, that the said books may be seen and perused by them for a better expedition of divine service to bee set furthe accordingly.

“Also that men being called to spiritual promotions or benefices, may have sum allowance for their necessary living, and other charges to be susteyned and born concerning the said benefices in the first year wherein they pay the first fruits.”

The other is,

“Where the clergy in the present convocation assembled have made humble suite unto the most Reverend Father in God my Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, and all other bishops. That hit may please them to be a mean to the King’s Majesty, and the Lord Protector’s Grace; that the said clergy, according to the tenor of the king’s will, and the auncient laws and customes of this noble realme, might have their rowme and place, and be associated with the communs in the nether howse of this present parliament; as members of the commonwealth, and the king’s most humble subjects; and if this may not be permitted and graunted to them, that then no laws concerning the Christien religion, or which shall concern especially the persons, possessions, rowmes, lyveings, jurisdictions, goods or cattalls of the said clergy may passe nor be enacted, the said clergy not being made privy thereunto, and their aunswers and reasons not heard. The said clergy do most humbly beseech an answer and declaration to be made unto them, what the said most Reverend Father in God, and all other the bishoppes have done in this their humble suit and request, to the end that the said clergy if nede bee, may chose of themself such able and discrete persons which shall effectually follow the same suite in name of them all.

“And where in a statute ordeyned and established by auctorite of parliament at Westminster, in the twenty-fifth year of the reigne of the most excellent prince, King *Henry* the Eighth, the cleregy of this realme, submitting themselfe to the king’s highness, did knowledge and confesse according to the truth, that the convocations of the same cleregie hath ben and ought to be assembled by the king’s writt, And did promise further *in verbo sacerdotii*, that they never from thenceforth wolde presume to attempt, allege, clayme, or put in use or enact, promulge or execute any new canons, constitutions, ordinances, provincials or other, or by whatsoever other name they shall bee called in the convocation, oneles the king’s most royal assent and liscence may to them be had, to make,



promulgate and execute the same. And his majesty to give his most royall assent and auctorite in that behalfe upon payne of every one of the cleregy doeing the contrary, and beinge thereof convict, to suffre imprisonment, and make fine at the king's will. And that noe canons, constitutions, or ordinances shall be made or put in execution within this realme by auctorite of the convocation of the cleregie, which shall be repugnant to the king's prerogative royall, or the customes, laws, or statutes of this realme. Which statute is eftsoons renewed and established in the xxvij. yere of the reigne of the said most noble kinge, as by the tenor of both statutes more at large will appear, the said cleregie being presently assembled in convocation by auctorite of the king's writ, do desire that the king's majestie's licence in writeing may be for them obteyned and granted according to the effect of the said statute's auctoriseing them to attempt, entreate and commune of such matters, and therein freely to geve their consents, which otherwise they may not doe, upon payne and perill premised.

"Also the said cleregie desireth that such matters as concerneth religione which be disputable, may be quietly, and in good order reasond and disputed emongst them in this howse, whereby the verites of such matters shall the better appear. And the doubtles being opened and resolutely discussed, men may be fully persuaded with the quyetnes of their consciences, and the tyme well spent."

Thus far those petitions, containing some excellent proposals for a thorough reformation. Soon after were called together by the king's special order, the former select assembly at Windsor Castle, where met, (as far as I can guess by the several papers delivered in by every one of them singly, and subscribed with their own hands, all which I have perused,) the following persons. Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury; Edward, Archbishop of York; the Bishop of Rochester; Edmund, Bishop of London; Robert, Bishop of Carlisle; Dr. George Day; Dr. Thomas Robertson; Dr. J. Redmaine; Dr. Edward Leighton; Dr. Simon Matthew; Dr. William Tresham; Dr. Richard Cozen; Dr. Edgeworth; Dr. Owen Oglethorp; Dr. Thyrleby. These all gave in their several resolutions in papers, to the questions propounded, with their names subscribed; (a far more prudent way than the confusion of verbal and tedious disputes,) all whose judgments are accurately summed up, and set down by the Archbishop of Canterbury himself. Their resolutions contain distinct answers to several sets of questions propounded to

them. The first set contained several questions about the mass, about the instituting, receiving, nature, celebration of it; and whether in the mass it be convenient to use such speech as the people may understand, whether the whole were fit to be translated, or only some part of it; with several other questions of the same nature. The second set is more pertinent to our purpose, wherein are seventeen questions proposed to be resolved; ten of them belong to the number of sacraments, the other seven concern church government. The questions are these:

Q. 9. "Whether the appostells lacking a higher power, as in not having a Christian king among them, made bishoppes by that necessity, or by auctorite given them of God?"

Q. 10. "Whether bishops or priests were first; and if the priests were first, then the priest made the bishop?"

Q. 11. "Whether a bishop hath auctorite to make a priest by the scripture or no, and whether any other but onely a bishop may make a priest?"

Q. 12. "Whether in the New Testament be required any consecration of a bishop or priest, or onely appointinge to the office be sufficient?"

Q. 13. "Whether (if it fortun'd a prince Christien lerned to conquer certen domynions of infidells, having non but the temporall lerned men with him) it be defended by God's law, that he and they should preche and teche the word of God there or no, and also make and constitute priests or noe?"

Q. 14. "Whether it be forefended by Goddes law, that if it so fortun'd that all the bishoppes and priests were dedde, and that the word of God shuld there unpreached, the sacrament of baptisme and others unministred, that the king of that region shulde make bishoppes and priests to supply the same or noe?"

Q. 16. "Whether a bishop or a priest may excommunicate, and for what crimes, and whether they only may excommunicate by Goddes law?"

These are the questions, to which the answers are severally returned in distinct papers, all of them bound together in a large volume by Archbishop Cranmer; and every one subscribed their names, and some their seals, to the papers delivered in. It would be too tedious a work to set down their several opinions at large; only for the deserved reverence all bear to the name and memory of that most worthy prelate, and glorious martyr, Archbishop Crannier, I shall set down his answer distinctly to every one of these questions, and the

answers of some others to the more material questions to our purpose.

*Ans.* to the 9 Q. "All Christian princes have committed unto them immediately of God the holle cure of all their subjects, as well concerning the administration of Goddes word for the cure of soul, as concerning the ministration of things political, and civil governaunce.<sup>1</sup>

"And in both theis ministrations thei must have sundry ministers under them to supply that which is appointed to their several office.

"The cyvile ministers under the kings majesty in this realme of England, be those whom ye shall please his highness for the tyme to put in auctorite under him; as for example, the Lord Chancellour, Lord Treasurer, Lord Greate Master, Lord Privy Seal, Lord Admyral, Mayres, Shryves, &c.

"The ministers of Gods wourde under his majesty be the bishops, parsons, vicars, and such other priests as be appointed by his highnes to that ministration; as for example, the bishop of Canterbury, the bishop of Duresme, the bishop of Winchester, the parson of Wynwicke, &c.

"All the said officers and ministers, as well of th'one sorte as the other, be appointed, assigned, and elected in every place, by the laws and orders of kings and princes.

"In the admission of many of these officers bee diverse comely ceremonies and solemnities used, which be not of necessity, but only for a good order and semely fashion. For if such offices and ministrations were committed without such solemnitye, thei were nevertheles truely committed.

"And there is no more promise of God, that grace is given in the committing of the ecclesiastical office, then it is in the committing of the cyvile. In the apostles time, when there was no Christien princes by whose authority ministers of Gods word might be appointed; nor synnes by the sword corrected; there was no remedie then for the correction of vice, or appoynteinge of ministers, but onely the consent of Christien multitude amonge themselfe, by an uniforme consent to follow the advice and persuasion of such persons whom God had most endued with the spirit of wisdome and counsaile. And at that time, for as much as Christian people had no sword nor governor among them, thei were constrained of necessity to take such curates and priests, as either they knew themselves to bee meet thereunto, or else as were commended

<sup>1</sup> Archbish. Cranmer's ans. ex ipso ejus autographo.

unto them by other, that were so replete with the spirit of God, with such knowledge in the profession of Christ, such wisdome, such conversation and counsell, that they ought even of very conscience to give credit unto them, and to accept such as by theym were presented. And so some tyme the apostles and other unto whom God had given abundantly his spirit, sent or appointed ministers of Gods word, sometime the people did chose such as they thought meete thereunto. And when any were appointed or sent by the appostles or other, the people of their awne voluntary will with thanks did accept them; not for the supremitie, imperie, or dominion, that the apostells had over them, to command as their princes or masters: but as good people, readie to obey the advice of good counsellours; and to accept any thing that was necessary for their edification and benefit."

*Ans. to the 10 Q.* "The bishops and priests were at one time, and were not two things, but both one office in the beginning of Christs religion."

*A. 11.* "A bishop may make a priest by the scriptures, and so may princes and governours alsoe, and that by the auctoritie of God committed them, and the people alsoe by their election. For as we reade that bishops have done it, so Christien emperours and princes usually have done it. And the people before Christien princes were, commonly did elect their bishops and priests."

*A. 12.* "In the New Testament, he that is appointed to be a bishop or a priest, needeth no consecration by the scripture; for election or appointeing thereto is sufficient."

*A. 13.* "It is not against Gods law, but contrary they ought in dede so to doe, and there be historyes that witnesseth, that some Christien princes and other lay men unconsecrate have done the same."

*A. 14.* "It is not forbidden by God's law."

*A. 15.* "A bishop or a priest by the scripture, is neither commanded nor forbidden to excommunicate. But where the lawes of any region giveth him authoritie to excommunicate, there they ought to use the same in such crymes as the lawes have such authority in. And where the lawes of the region forbiddeth them, there they have none authority at all. And thei that be no priests, may alsoe excommunicate, if the law allow thereunto." Thus far that excellent person; in whose judgment nothing is more clear, than his ascribing the particular form of government in the church to the determination



of the supreme magistrate. This judgment of his, is thus subscribed by him with his own hand,

“*T. Cantuariens.* This is mine opinion and sentence at this present, which I do not temerarily define, but do remit the judgment thereof holly to your majesty.”

Which I have exactly transcribed out of the original, and have observed generally the form of writing at that time used. In the same MS. it appears, that the *Bishop of St. Asaph, Therleby, Redman, and Cox*, were all of the same opinion with the archbishop, that at first bishops and presbyters were the same; and the two latter expressly cite the opinion of *Jerome* with approbation. Thus we see by the testimony chiefly of him who was instrumental in our reformation, that he owned not episcopacy as a distinct order from presbytery of divine right; but only as a prudent constitution of the civil magistrate for the better governing in the church.

§ 3. We now proceed to the re-establishment of church government under our most happy Queen Elizabeth. After our reformation had truly undergone the fiery trial in Queen Mary's days, and by those flames was made much more refined and pure, as well as splendid and illustrious; in the articles of religion agreed upon, our English form of church government was only determined to be agreeable to God's Holy Word; which had been a very low and diminishing expression, had they looked on it as absolutely prescribed and determined in scripture, as the only necessary form, to be observed in the church. The first who solemnly appeared in vindication of the English hierarchy, was *Archbishop Whitgift*, a sage and prudent person, whom we cannot suppose either ignorant of the sense of the church of England, or afraid or unwilling to defend it.<sup>1</sup> Yet he frequently against *Cartwright* asserts, “that the form of discipline is not particularly and by name set down in scripture; and again, no kind of government is expressed in the word, or can necessarily be concluded from thence; which he repeats over again, no form of church government is by the scriptures prescribed to, or commanded the church of God.<sup>2</sup> And so *Doctor Cosins* his chancellor in answer to the abstract, all churches have not the same form of discipline, neither is it necessary that they should, seeing it cannot be proved that any certain particular form of church government is commended to us by the Word

<sup>1</sup> Page 3; 77; 81, 82, 83, 84; 658.

<sup>2</sup> Page 58.

of God. To the same purpose *Doctor Low*,<sup>1</sup> Complaint of the Church; no certain form of government is prescribed in the word, only general rules laid down for it.<sup>2</sup> *Bishop Bridges*; God hath not expressed the form of church government, at least, not so as to bind us to it."

They who please but to consult the *third* book of learned and judicious *Master Hooker's Ecclesiastical Polity*, may see the mutability of the form of church government largely asserted, and fully proved. Yea, this is so plain and evident to have been the chief opinion of the divines of the church of England, that *Parker* looks on it as one of the main foundations of the hierarchy, and sets himself might and main to oppose it;<sup>3</sup> but with what success, we have already seen. If we come lower to the time of King James, his majesty himself declared it in print, as his judgment; "it is granted to every Christian king, prince and commonwealth, to prescribe, within its own jurisdiction, that external form of church government, which approaches as much as possible to its own form of civil administration."<sup>4</sup> *Doctor Sutcliffe de Presbyterio* largely disputes against those who assert that Christ hath laid down certain immutable laws for government in the church.<sup>5</sup> *Crakanthorp* against *Spalatensis* doth assert the mutability of such things as are founded on apostolical tradition: "It has been transmitted, therefore, by the apostles, but though transmitted, it is changeable, and to be changed, according to the experience and judgment of the church."<sup>6</sup> To the like purpose speak the forecited authors, as their testimonies are extant in *Parker*. "Whether every example of the primitive church constitutes a precept or command?" And again, "perhaps they can show some precedent in the primitive church, but that is neither of general application nor any standing rule as to the same thing, to bind all churches in all ages." So Archbishop *Whitgift*, "it is not equitable to enact a law from some fact or example. It is never allowed, says *Zuinglius*, to infer what is right from a mere matter of fact."<sup>7</sup> By which principles, the divine

<sup>1</sup> Page 64, 66.

<sup>2</sup> Church Gov. pag. 167.

<sup>3</sup> De Polit. Eccles. l. 2, c. 39, &c.

<sup>4</sup> Christiano cuique regi, principi, ac reipublicæ concessum, externam in rebus ecclesiasticis regiminis formam suis præscribere, quæ ad civilis administrationis formam quàm proximè accedat.—C. 11, p. 66.

<sup>5</sup> Defens. Eccl. Angl. c. 28, s. 12.

<sup>6</sup> Traditum igitur ab apostolis, sed traditum et mutabile, et pro usu ac arbitrio ecclesiæ mutandum.

<sup>7</sup> Bishop Bridges, num unumquodque exemplum ecclesiæ primitivæ præceptum

right of episcopacy as founded upon apostolical practice, is quite subverted and destroyed. To come nearer to our own unhappy times: not long before the breaking forth of those never sufficiently to be lamented intestine broils, we have the judgment of two learned, judicious, rational authors fully discovered as to the point in question. The first is that incomparable man Master *Hales*, in his often cited Tract of Schism,<sup>1</sup> whose words are these: "But that other head of episcopal ambition concerning supremacy of bishops in divers sees, one claiming supremacy over another, as it hath been from time to time a great trespass against the church's peace, so it is now the final ruin of it—the east and west through the fury of the two prime bishops being irremediably separated without all hope of reconciliation. And besides all this mischief, it is founded on a vice contrary to all Christian humility, without which no man shall see his Saviour. For they do but abase themselves and others, that would persuade us, that bishops by Christ's institution have any superiority over men further than of reverence, or that any bishop is superior to another further than positive order agreed upon among Christians hath prescribed; for we have believed him that hath told us, that in Jesus Christ there is neither high nor low, and that in giving honour, every man should be ready to prefer another before himself; which saying cuts off all claim certainly of superiority, by title of Christianity, except men think that these things were spoken only to poor and private men. Nature and religion agree in this, that neither of them had a hand in this heraldry of *secundum sub et supra*; all this comes from composition and agreement of men among themselves; wherefore this abuse of Christianity to make it lacquey to ambition, is a vice for which I have no extraordinary name of ignominy, and an ordinary I will not give it, lest you should take so transcendent a vice to be but trivial." Thus that grave and wise person, whose words savour of a more than ordinary tincture of a true spirit of Christianity, that scorns to make religion a footstool to pride and ambition. We see plainly he makes all difference between church officers to arise

aut mandatū faciat? And again, Forte rerum nonnullarum in primitiva ecclesia exemplum aliquod ostendere possunt, sed nec id ipsum generale, nec ejusdem perpetuam regulam aliquam, quæ omnes ecclesias et etates omnes ad illud exemplum astringat. So Archbishop Whitgift, Ex facto aut exemplo legem facere, iniquum est. Nunquam licet, inquit Zuinglius, à facto ad jus argumentari.—De Polit. Eccles. l. 2, c. 24.

<sup>1</sup> Pug. 13.

from consent of parties, and not from any divine law. To the same purpose Master *Chillingworth* propounds this question among many others to his adversary:<sup>1</sup> "Whether any one kind of these external forms and orders and government be so necessary to the being of a church, but that they may be diverse in divers places, and that a good and peaceable Christian may and ought to submit himself to the government of the place where he lives whosoever he be?" Which question, according to the tenor of the rest to which it is joined, must as to the former part be resolved in the negative, and as to the latter, in the *affirmative*: which is the very thing I have been so long in proving of, viz. that no one form of church government is so necessary to the being of a church, but that a good and peaceable Christian may and ought to conform himself to the government of that place where he lives. So much I suppose may suffice to show that the opinion which I have asserted, is no stranger in our own nation; no, not among those who have been professed defenders of the ecclesiastical government of this church.

§ 4. Having thus far acquainted ourselves with the state and customs of our own country we may be allowed the liberty of visiting foreign churches: to see how far they concur with us in the matter in question. The first person whose judgment we shall produce asserting the mutability of the form of church government, is that great light of the German church, *Chemnitzius*, whom *Brightman* had so high an opinion of as to make him to be one of the angels in the churches of the Revelation. He, discoursing about the sacrament of order, as the papists call it, lays down these following *hypotheses*, as certain truths. "First, what and how many such degrees and orders there ought to be is not manifest from the word of God; secondly, that there were not always, in the apostles' times, the same, and as many degrees of orders in all the churches, may be clearly collected from the epistles of *Paul* written to the different churches; thirdly, that there was not, in their times, such a distinction of orders, but that frequently one and the same character sustained all the duties belonging to the ministry. Such administrations, therefore, in the apostles' times, were free, a certain respect, however, to order, propriety, and edification being maintained. That example of the apostles, the primitive church, under the same regard and freedom, imitated. The rank however, of ministerial duties

<sup>1</sup> Chilling. Ep1, ch. 6, s. 39.



were distributed, but evidently not after the same manner as in Corinth, or Ephesus, but according to the condition or circumstances of each church: whence is to be inferred the freedom as to those ministerial ranks then existing in the general distribution."<sup>1</sup> The main thing he asserts, is, the church's freedom and liberty as to the orders and degrees of those who superintend the affairs of the church, which he builds on a threefold foundation. 1. That the word of God nowhere commands, what or how many degrees and orders of ministers there shall be. 2. That in the apostles' times, there was not the like number in all churches, as is evident from *Paul's* epistles. 3. That in the apostles' times in some places one person did manage the several offices belonging to a church. Which three propositions of this *learned divine*, are the very basis and foundation of all our foregoing discourse, wherein we have endeavoured to prove these several things at large. The same learned person hath set discourse to show how by degrees the offices in the church did rise, not from any set or standing law, but for the convenient management of the church's affairs, and concludes his discourse thus: "He shows what was the first cause of degrees, or origin of orders in the apostolical church; what was he design, service, and what ought to be the limit of things of this nature, whether of degrees or orders; that ecclesiastical societies might more conveniently, correctly, diligently, and with some order and authority to edification, observe the several offices pertaining to the ministry."<sup>2</sup> The sum is, it appears by the practice of the apostolical church, that the state, condition and necessity of every particular church, ought to be the standard, and measure what offices and degrees of persons ought to be in it. As

<sup>1</sup> 1. Non esse Dei verbo mandatum, ut vel quot tales gradus seu ordines esse debeant. 2. Non fuisse tempore apostolorum in omnibus ecclesiis et semper, eosdem et totidem gradus seu ordines id quod ex epistolis Pauli ad diversas ecclesias scriptis manifestè colligitur. 3. Non fuit tempore apostolorum talis distributio graduum illorum, quàm sæpi unus et idem omnia illa officia, quæ ad ministerium pertinent, sustineres. Libræ igitur fuerant apostolorum tempore tales ordinationes, habitæ ratione ordini decori et ædificationis, etc. Illud apostolorum exemplum primitiva ecclesia, ad eam rationem et simili libertate imitata est. Gradus enim officiorum ministrorum distributi fuerunt: non autem eadem plane ratione sicut in Corinthiaca vel phœsina ecclesia, sed pro ratione circumstantiarum cujusque ecclesiæ; unde cõgitur quæ fuerit in distributione illorum graduum libertas.—Exam. Con. Trid., 2, de sacram. ord. can. 1, 413, 414.

<sup>2</sup> Et hæc prima graduum seu ordinum origo in ecclesia apostolica ostendit quæ causa, quæ ratio, quis usus et fin esse debeat hujusmodi seu graduum, seu ordinum; ut scilicet pro ratione cõtue ecclesiastici, singula officia quæ ad ministerium pertinent, commodius, rectius, diligentius, et ordine cum aliqua gravitate ad ædificationem obeantur.—Pag. 415

to the uncertain number of officers in the churches in apostolical times, we have a full and express testimony of the famous *Centuriatours* of Magdeburg. "But how many performed the ministerial duties in each church, is not mentioned in history, nor is it anywhere enjoined; so that there were indifferently several in each. But as fewer or more required a congregation or church, so fewer or more were admitted to the ministry."<sup>1</sup> We see by them there is no other certain rule laid down in scripture, what number of persons shall act in the governing every church; only general prudence according to the church's necessity, was the ground of determining the number then, and must be so still. The next person whose judgment is fully on our side, is a person both of learning and moderation, and an earnest restorer of discipline as well as doctrine in the church, I mean *Hieron Zanchy*, who in several places hath expressed his judgment to the purpose we are now upon. The fullest place is in his Confession of Faith, penned by him in the seventieth year of his age; and if ever a man speaks his mind, it must be certainly when he professeth his judgment in a solemn manner by way of his last will and testament to the world, (that when the *soul* is going into another world, he may leave his *mind* behind him.) Thus doth *Zanchy* in that Confession, in which he declares this to be his judgment as to the form of church government; that in the apostles' times there were but two orders under them, viz. of pastors and teachers: but presently subjoins these words: "Nevertheless, mean while, we censure not the fathers, because according to their variable and relative connections, whether of dispensing the word, or governing the church, they also multiplied the several orders of the ministry; since that too was free to them, as well as to us, and since it appears, that it was done from sufficient causes, at that time belonging either to order, propriety or to edification." And in the next section: "for we know that our God is a God of order, and not of confusion, and that the church is preserved by order, and lost by disorder. For which reason, he instituted many and diverse grades of ministry, not only formerly in Israel, but also afterwards in the church, collected from the Jews and Gentiles; and for the same cause left it free to the churches, whether more should be added

<sup>1</sup> Quæst verò in qualibet ecclesia personæ ministerio functæ sint, non est in historiis annotatum, nec usquam est præceptum, ut æque multa in singulis essent, sed prout paucitas aut multitudo cælus postulavit, ita pauciores aut plures ad ministerium ecclesiæ sunt adhibiti.—Con. 1, l. 2, cap. 7.

or not, only that it should be done to edification.”<sup>1</sup> He asserts it to be in the church’s power and liberty to add several orders of ministers according as it judgeth them tend to edification; and saith, he is far from condemning the course of the primitive church in erecting one as bishop over the presbyters, for better managing church affairs; yea, archbishops, metropolitans, and patriarchs, as instituted by the primitive church before the Nicene council, he thinks may be both excused and defended, although afterward they degenerated into tyranny and ambition. And in his *observations* upon his *confession*, penned chiefly upon the occasion of the exceptions of *Magnus quidam Vir*, “a certain great man,” (some will guess who that was,) taken at the free delivery of his mind concerning the polity of the primitive church, he hath expressions to this purpose: That what was unanimously determined by the primitive church without any contradiction to scripture, did come from the Holy Spirit. “Such things,” saith he, “as are so determined, I neither will nor can with a safe conscience condemn. For who am I, that I should condemn that which the whole church of God hath approved?”<sup>2</sup> A sentence as full of judgment as modesty. And that he might show he was not alone in this opinion, he produces two large and excellent discourses of *Martin Bucer* concerning the polity of the ancient church, which he recites with approbation; the one out of his commentaries on the Ephesians, the other *de Disciplina Clericali*, “on Clerical Discipline;” whereby we have gained another testimony of that famous and peaceable divine, whose judgment is too large to be here inserted. The same opinion of *Zanchy* may be seen in his commentaries upon the fourth command,<sup>3</sup> wherein he asserts no particular form to be prescribed, but only general rules laid down in scripture, that all be done to edification;

<sup>1</sup> Interea tamen non improbamus patres, quod juxta variam, tum verbi dispensandi, tum regendæ ecclesiæ rationem, varios quoque ordines ministrorum multiplicarint, quando id iis liberum fuit, sicut et nobis; et quando constat id ab illis factum honestis de causis, ad ordinem, ad decorum, et ad ædificationem ecclesiæ pro eo tempore pertinentibus. And in the next section, Novimus enim deum nostrum, deum esse ordinis non confusionis; et ecclesiam servari ordine, perdi autem *anarchia*: qua de causa multos etiam et diversos, non solum olim in Israele, verum etiam post in ecclesia ex Judæis et Gentibus collecta, ministrorum ordines instituit; et eandem etiam ob causam, liberum reliquit ecclesiis, ut plures adderent vel non adderent, modo ad ædificationem fieret.—*Confess. fidei*, cap. 25, s. 10, 11, tom. 7, op. Miscel.

<sup>2</sup> Hinc fit ut quæ sint hujuscemodi, ea ego improbare nec velim, nec audeam bona conscientia. Quis autem ego sim, qui quod tota ecclesia approbavit, improbem?

<sup>3</sup> Tom. 4, op. l. 1, in 4, præcept. q. 2.



speaking of the original of episcopacy which came "not from a divine dispensation, but from the custom of the church, and that not in the least censured. For Christ prohibits not this order, but rather left a general rule by his apostles, that all things should be done to edification."<sup>1</sup> It is then most clear and evident that neither *Bucer*, *Chemnitius* or *Zanchy* did look upon the church as so bound up by any immutable form of church government laid down in scripture, but it might lawfully and laudably alter it for better edification. For these learned divines conceiving that at first there was no difference between bishop and presbyter, and commending the polity of the church when episcopacy was set in a higher order, they must of necessity hold that there was no obligation to observe that form which was used in apostolical times. Our next inquiry is into the opinion of the French church, and the eminent divines therein. For *Calvin* and *Beza* we have designed them under another rank. At present we speak of those who in thesis assert the form of church government mutable. The first we meet with here who fully lays down his opinion as to this matter, is, *Joh. Fregevil*, who although in his *Palma Christiana*, "his Christian Palm,"<sup>2</sup> he seems to assert the divine right of primacy in the church, yet in his *Politic Reformer*, he asserts both forms of government by equality and inequality, to be lawful. And we shall the rather produce his testimony, because of the high character given of him by the Reverend Bishop *Hall*.<sup>3</sup> "Wise Fregevil, a deep head, and one that was able to cut even betwixt the league, the church and state." His words are these: "As for the English government, I say, it is grounded upon God's word so far forth as it keepeth the state of the clergy instituted in the Old Testament, and confirmed in the New. And concerning the government of the French church, so far as concerneth the equality of ministers, it hath the like foundation in God's word: namely in the example of the apostles; which may suffice to authorize both these forms of estate; albeit in several times and places. None can deny but that the apostles among themselves were equal as concerning authority, albeit there were an order for their pre-cedency. When the apostles first planted churches, the same

<sup>1</sup> Dispositione divina, but consuetudine ecclesiastica, atque ea quidem minime improbanda; neq, enim hunc ordinem prohibuit Christus sed potius regulam generalem reliquit per apostolum, ut in ecclesia omnia fiant ad edificationem.

<sup>2</sup> P. 70, &c.

<sup>3</sup> Episcopacy by Divine Right, s. 5, p. 20.



being small and in affliction, there were not as yet any other bishops, priests or deacons but themselves; they were the bishops and deacons, and together served the tables. Those men therefore whom God raiseth up to plant a church can do no better, than after the examples of the apostles to bear themselves in equal authority. For this cause have the French ministers, planters of the reformed church in France usurped it; howbeit provisionally—reserving liberty to alter it, according to the occurrences. But the equality that rested among the bishops of the primitive church, did increase as the churches increased; and thence proceeded the creation of deacons, and afterwards of other bishops and priests; yet ceased not the apostles' equality in authority; but they that were created, had not like authority with the apostles; but the apostles remained as sovereign bishops, neither were any greater than they. Hereof I do infer that in the state of a mighty and peaceable church, as is the church of England, or as the church of France is, (or such might be, if God should call it to reformation,) the state of the clergy ought to be preserved. For equality will be hurtful to the state, and in time breed confusion. But as the apostles continued churches in their equality so long as the churches by them planted were small; so should equality be applied in the planting of a church, or so long as the church continueth small, or under persecution; yet may it also be admitted as not repugnant to God's word in those places where already it is received, rather than to innovate anything. I say, therefore, that even in the apostles' times the state of the clergy increased as the church increased. Neither was the government under the bondage of Egypt, and during the peace of the land of Canaan alike; for Israelites had first judges, and after their state increased, kings.

Thus far that politic reformer. Whose words are so full and pertinent to the scope and drift of this whole treatise, that there is no need of any commentary to draw them to my sense. The next I shall pitch upon in the French church, is a triumvirate of three as learned persons in their several ways as most that church or any since the Reformation hath bred; they are *Blondell*, *Bochartus* and *Amyraldus*. The first is that great church antiquary, *Blondell*, the known and learned assserter of *Jerome's* opinion concerning the primitive equality of presbyters, who was likewise of *Jerome's* mind as to the mutability of that form if the church saw fit, as appears by these words of his speaking of that form of eccle-

siastical polity which *Hilary* speaks of, viz. the eldest presbyters having the primacy of order above the rest. "However, let it be supposed," saith he, "that it arose whilst the apostles not only did not censure, but openly commended it; and I frankly believe, as in a similar case, Crackanthorp, of blessed memory, felt that it was freely practised from the beginning, whether handed down by the apostles, or by their disciples, but changeable, and to be changed, according to the experience and judgment of the church." And not long after, he says, "But we dread congregations having no head, or having many, less than those violent zealots of the hierarchy, on whom it is incumbent more accurately to investigate, whether a perpetual supremacy, hath of divine right, been decreed to any one of the pastoral office, now in the enjoyment of a benefice, or that the Spirit himself, who presides in the churches, hath left it to their judgment, that they should provide for themselves, in whatever way each should please, a convention of equals for its head."<sup>1</sup> Whereby that most learned writer for presbytery, (as some have called him,) evidently asserts the mutability of the particular form of church government, and that it is left to the prudence of the church, to conclude and determine, in what way and manner its rulers shall act for moderating its common concerns. The next is the learned and ingenuous *Bochartus*, who, *ex professo*, doth assert the opinion I have been pleading thus long in the behalf of, in his epistle to Dr. *Morley*.<sup>2</sup> He having declared himself to be of *Jerome's* mind, as to the apostles' times, that the churches were governed *communi concilio Presbyterorum*, and withal asserting the great antiquity of episcopacy, as arising soon after the apostles' times, and that *magno cum fructu*, "with considerable advantage," as a very useful form of government. He subjoins these words directly overthrowing the divine right of either form of government, by episcopacy or presbytery: "Neither do I think, that the

<sup>1</sup> Fac tamen, saith he, apostolis non modo non improbantibus, sed palam laudantibus ortam, ego sanè liberè ab initio observatam, Christianisque sive ab apostolis sive ab eorum discipulis traditam, sed ut mutabilem et pro usu ac arbitrio ecclesiæ mutandam (prout in causâ consimili piæ memoriæ *Crakanthorpius* sensit) crediderim: And not long after,—Nec consessus capite carentes, aut multicipites, minùs horremus, quam fervidiores hierarchici: quibus indagandum curatius incumbit. An pastorum cuiquam quocunque titulo nunc gaudeat, divino jure *περσασια* eaque perpetua decreta sit. An verò in arbitrio ecclesiæ, ipse (qui præest ecclesiæ) spiritus reliquerit, ut, quocunque modo liberet, sibi de capite *ισοτιμων* collegia providerent.

<sup>2</sup> Ad q. 1, p. 5.

apostolical practice, in matters indifferent in their own nature, had the force of a law; therefore, they who assert, that they are of the presbyterian order, as well as those, who say, that they are, by divine right, of the episcopalian, seem to be arguing from the ratio of things opposed in character, to that of those which are common, or equally lawful to either.”<sup>1</sup> And therefore asserts that the form of government must be determined, as that in the state is, according to the suitableness of it to the state, temper and condition of the people it is intended for. The last is, judicious *Amyraldus*, whom one deservedly calls one of the greatest wits of this age. In his proposals for peace with the *Lutherans*, speaking of the different forms of church government in the several churches of the Reformation, he lays down this for a foundation of union among the several churches. “Since, therefore, Christ and the apostles wisely settled this, it belongs to all particular churches to be governed by their pastors, and to be ruled by some form, which the necessity of the case may require. But what that form should be, whether some should excel others in authority or not, hath neither been defined by the nature of the thing, nor settled by Christ or the apostles. But in the first place, for the sake of peace, it seems to have been, thus far, resolved on, that after whatever law the pastors of evangelical churches have existed, that they should in the same manner proceed, but that no one should endeavour to destroy the constitution of others.”<sup>2</sup> “That is, that every church be permitted freely to enjoy its own form, since some kind of government is necessary in all churches, but no one form is prescribed by Christ or his apostles;” and more fully afterwards to the same purpose: “Therefore, in whatever manner certain forms of church government seem more suitable and accommodating to some, to obtain that discipline, or object of church polity, nevertheless, God, who is the author and guardian of all so-

<sup>1</sup> Nec apostolorum praxim puto vim habuisse legis, in rebus sua natura *αδιαφορίαις*. Proinde tam qui presbyteralem, quam episcopalem ordinem juris divini esse asserunt, videntur *της ανθολικης α ματρια του μεσου διαμαρτειν*.

<sup>2</sup> Quando igitur Christus quidem et apostoli hoc disertè constituerunt, debere particulares ecclesias omnes gubernari à pastoribus, et aliqua regiminis forma temperari, quod ipsa rei necessitas flagitat; quæ verò regiminis ista forma potissimum esse debeat, utrum alii aliis auctoritate præcellant, necne, neque rei natura definivit, neque à Christo aut apostolis æque disertè constitutum est; id primò in pacificatione statuendum esse videtur, ut quo jure hætenus fuerunt ecclesiarum evangelicarum pastores, eodem porro esse pergant, neque aliæ aliarum statum convellere nitantur.—De secessione ab ecclesiâ Rom. Deque pace cum Evang. cons. p. 29, &c.

ciety,<sup>1</sup> is not willing that all congregations should be held by the same law, but he willed to each a power to compose laws for itself, which he sanctioned by his own authority. Though there is no doubt, but that of various methods of church government, some are more conclusive than others to obtain that which religion has established as the end; nevertheless, the most wise and indulgent Being willed that each church should have the right of enacting those laws for itself, which have reference to discipline, and the preservation of order."<sup>2</sup>—Whereby he grants "as much freedom and liberty to every church, to prescribe laws to itself, for the regulating the affairs of the church, as to any state to pitch upon its particular rules and ways of government; so the church do in its orders but observe the general rules laid down in scripture." Having thus fully showed how many of the most eminent divines of the reformation have embraced this opinion of the mutability of the form of church government, both in our own and foreign churches, who were far from being the *proselytes of Erastus*; it were easy to add *Mantissæ loco* the concurrent judgment of many very learned men, as the excellent *Hugo Grotius*, my *Lord Bacon*,<sup>3</sup> *Sir Will. Morice*, and others, who have in print delivered this as their judgment; but seeing such is the temper of many, as to cast by their judgments with an opinion of their partiality towards the government of the church; I have therefore contented myself with the judgment of *divines*, most of them of the highest rank since the reformation: whose judgments certainly will be sufficient to remove that prejudice, wherewith this opinion hath been entertained among the blind followers of the several parties. So much for those, who in

<sup>1</sup> Omnes societatis, "of all society," are the words of the author. That God is the author of society in the generic sense cannot be doubted; yet that many societies exist by his permissive providence, that by the burning of their own fingers, they may teach both themselves, and the world at large, an important lesson, is equally clear.

<sup>2</sup> Quemadmodum igitur et si politiarum formæ aliæ aliis aptiores ad finem illum politicum obtinendum, et accommodatiores esse videntur, Deus tamen qui omnis societatis auctor est atque custos, noluit omnes hominum cætus eodem jure teneri, sed cuique communitati potestatem esse voluit suas leges sibi condendi, quas ipse divina sua auctoritate sancit; sic dubitandum quidem non est quin ex variis illis administrandarum ecclesiarum rationibus, nonnullæ sint aliquanto quam aliæ conducibiliores ad eum finem adipiscendum quem religio constitutum habet: At voluit tamen sapientissimus indulgentissimusque Deus, cuique ecclesiæ jus esse sibi leges eas ferendi quæ ad disciplinam spectant, et ad ordinem conservandum.—De Imperio summ. Potest. circa sacra, c. 11.

<sup>3</sup> Lord Bacon Considerat. touching Ch. Govern. Sir Will. Morice of the Sacrament, in sect. 9. Mr. Pryn's twelve queries to the Assembly.



terms assert the form of church government not to depend upon an unalterable law, but to be left to the prudence and discretion of every particular church, to determine it according to its suitableness to the state, condition and temper of the people whereof it consists, and conducibleness to the ends for which it is instituted.

§ 6. We come now in the *second* place to those, who though they look upon equality of ministers as the primitive form, yet do allow episcopal government in the church as a very lawful and useful constitution. By which it is evident; that they did not judge the primitive form to carry an universal obligation along with it, over all churches, ages, and places. Upon this account, our learned *Crakanthorp* frees all the reformed churches from the charge of *Arianism*, laid upon them by the *Archbishop* of Spalato, (when he licked up his former vomit in his *Consilium reditûs*.) *Crakanthorp's*<sup>1</sup> words are these, speaking of *Luther*, *Calvin*, *Beza*, and all the reformed churches: "They have not, I know, bishops distinct from presbyters, and superior to them, in the power of ordaining and excommunicating. But they teach that the inequality, which *Arius* constituted, is not repugnant to the word of God. They condemn it not, either in our church, or in the church universal existing now for more than fifteen hundred years. They judge that the admission of either equality or inequality in orders, is lawful and free by the word and law of God. In short, whether to sanction equality or inequality, they decide to be in the judgment and power of each church."<sup>2</sup> So that according to the opinion of this learned divine, all the *reformed* churches were free from the imputation of *Arianism*, because they asserted not an *imparity* among the ministers of the gospel to be unlawful; but thought it was wholly in the church's *liberty*, to settle either a *parity* or *imparity* among them, as they judged convenient. But to descend more particularly to the *heroes* of the reformation: we have a whole *constellation* of them together in the Augustane Confession,<sup>3</sup> where they fully express their

<sup>1</sup> Defens. Eccles. Angl. cap. 42, s. 6.

<sup>2</sup> Non habent illi, scio, distinctos à presbyteris, eisque in ordinandi et excommunicandi potestate superiores episcopos. At imparitatem istam, quod fecit *Ærius*, non verbo Dei repugnare docent; non damnant eam vel in nostra, vel in universali per annos super mille quingentos ecclesia. Per verbum Dei et jus divinum, liberum et licitum utrumvis censent, vel imparitatem istam admittere vel paritatem; in arbitrio hoc esse ac potestate cujus vis ecclesiæ censent, utrum paritatem ordinum admittant, an imparitatem.

<sup>3</sup> Apolog. Confess. Aug. ad. art. 14.

minds to this purpose: "On this subject, and in this convention, we have often testified, that we, with all our heart, desire to preserve the ecclesiastical polity, and the orders constituted in the church, even by human authority. For we know that the ecclesiastical discipline hath been established by the fathers, with a good and useful design, in that manner, which the ancient canons describe." And afterwards, "the tyranny of the bishops is partly the reason, why that canonical polity is dissolved anywhere, which we exceedingly desire to preserve." And again, "Here also we willingly testify, that we would preserve the ecclesiastical and canonical order of government, if only the bishops would cease to tyrannize over the churches. This our good intention shall excuse us before our God, among all nations, and through all posterity, lest to us it should be imputed, that the authority of bishops has been invalidated." And yet further, "we have already testified, that we not only, with all piety, reverence that ecclesiastical power, which has been instituted by the gospel, but even highly approve of the polity, and several orders in the church, and as far as in us lies, desire to preserve them."<sup>1</sup> We see with what industry they purge and clear themselves from the imputation of bearing any ill will to the several degrees that were instituted by the church; nay, they profess themselves desirous of retaining them, so the bishops would not force them to do anything against their consciences. To the same purpose they speak in the Smaraldian articles. None speaks more fully of the agreeableness of the form of government used in the ages after the apostles to the Word of God, than that excellent servant of God, as *Bishop Downam* often calls him, *Calvin* doth: for in his Institutions he speaks thus of the polity of the primitive church; "Although the bishops of those times did make many canons, wherein they did seem to ex-

<sup>1</sup> Hæc de re in hoc conventu sæpe testati sumus, nos summa voluntate cupere, conservare politiam ecclesiasticam, et gradus in ecclesia factos etiam humana autoritate. Scimus enim bono et utili consilio à patribus ecclesiasticam disciplinam, hoc modo, ut veteres canones describunt, constitutam esse. And afterwards, Sævitia episcoporum in causa est, quare alicubi dissolvitur illa canonica politia, quam magnopere cupiebamus conservare. And again, Hic iterum volumus testatum, nos libenter conservaturos esse ecclesiasticam et canonicam politiam, si modo episcopi desinant in ecclesias nostras sævire. Hæc nostra voluntas, et coram Deo et apud omnes gentes ad omnem posteritatem excusabit nos, nè nobis imputari possit, quod episcoporum autoritas labefactetur. And yet further: Sæpe jam testati sumus, nos non solum potestatem ecclesiasticam, quæ in evangelio instituta est, summa pietate venerari, sed etiam ecclesiasticam politiam, et gradus in ecclesia magnopere probare; et, quantum in nobis est, conservare cupere.—Confess. August. per Chytr. 365.

press more than was in the word of God: yet they used such caution and prudence in the establishing the church's polity according to the word of God, that hardly will anything be found in it disagreeing to God's Holy Word."<sup>1</sup> And afterwards speaking of the institution of archbishops and patriarchs, he saith it was *ad disciplinæ conservationem*, "for preserving the church's discipline;" and again, "If we consider the matter, phraseology omitted, we shall find that the ancient bishops had no intention to devise any other form of church government, than that which God had prescribed in his word."<sup>2</sup> *Calvin* then, whatever form of government he judged most suitable to the state and temper of the church wherein he was placed, was far from condemning that polity which was used in the primitive church by a difference as to degrees among the ministers of the gospel. He did not then judge any form of government to be so delivered in scriptures as unalterably to oblige all churches and ages to observe it. *Beza* saith, He was so far from thinking that the human order of episcopacy was brought into the church through rashness or ambition, that none can deny it to have been very useful as long as bishops were good. And those that both will and can, let them enjoy it still. His words are these: "But far be it from me, that I should rashly censure, or haughtily inveigh against this order, though not constituted by intention abstractedly divine, is yet apostolical; especially whilst none can deny that its advantage has been great, so long as good and holy bishops presided. Therefore let those who will and can, enjoy it."<sup>3</sup> And elsewhere,<sup>4</sup> "professeth all reverence, esteem, and honour to be due to all such modern bishops, who strive to imitate the example of the primitive bishops in a due reformation of the church of God, according to the rule of the word. And looks on it as a most false and impudent calumny

<sup>1</sup> *Tametsi enim multos canones ediderunt illorum temporum episcopi quibus plus viderentur exprimere quam sacris literis expressum esset; ea tamen cautione totam suam œconomiam composuerunt ad unicam illam verbi Dei normam. ut faciliè videas nihil ferè hac parte habuisse à verbo Dei alienum.*—*Institut. lib. 4, cap. 4, sect. 1.*

<sup>2</sup> *Si rem omisso vocabulo intuemur, reperiemus veteres episcopos non aliam regendæ ecclesiæ formam voluisse fingere, ab ea quam deus verbo suo præscripsit.*—*Sect. 4.*

<sup>3</sup> *Absit autem, ut hunc ordinem, et si apostolica et mere divina dispositione non constitutum, tamen ut temere aut superbe invecum reprehendam; cujus potius magnum usum fuisse quamdiu boni et sancti episcopi ecclesiis præfuerunt, quis inficiari possit? Fruantur igitur illo qui volent et poterunt.*—*De Ministr. gradibus, cap. 23, p. 144.*

<sup>4</sup> *Cap. 21, p. 126, 127.*

of some that said, as though they intended to prescribe their form of government to all other churches; as though they were like some ignorant fellows who think nothing good but what they do themselves." How this is reconcilable with the novel pretence of a *jus divinum*, I cannot understand. For certainly, if *Beza* had judged that only form to be prescribed in the word which was used in Geneva, it had been but his duty to have desired all other churches to conform to that. Neither ought *Beza* then to be looked on as out-going his master *Calvin* in the opinion about the right of church government. For we see he goes no further in it than *Calvin* did. All that either of them maintained, was, that the form of government in use among them was more agreeable to the primitive form than the modern episcopacy was, and that episcopacy lay more open to pride, laziness, ambition, and tyranny, as they had seen and felt in the church of Rome. Therefore, not to give occasion to such encroachments upon the liberty of men's consciences, as were introduced by the tyranny of the Roman bishops, they thought it the safest way to reduce the primitive parity; but yet so as to have an ecclesiastical senate for one church containing city and territories, as is evident at Geneva, and that senate to have a president in it; and whether that president should be for life, or only by course, they judged it an accidental and mutable thing: but that there should be one, essential and necessary. This is expressly and fully the judgment of that most reverend and learned man *Th. Beza*, as he declares it himself. "In this matter, concerning which we speak, it was an attribute ESSENTIAL, which was, is, and necessarily will be permanently of divine administration, that in the presbytery, one, the first both in office and dignity, should, in the act of governing, preside; especially since to him it is awarded as a matter of divine authority. But it was a property ACCIDENTAL,<sup>1</sup> that presbyters, in a government wherein one is pre-eminent, should, from the beginning, succeed one another by rotation, which method of *single* pre-eminency," (i. e. limited to some one only of a succession by rotation,) "by degrees became changeable, so that any individual chosen by the judgment of his fellow presbyters should be for life president over the presbytery."<sup>2</sup> It will be worth our while

<sup>1</sup> For the difference between an *essential* attribute and an *accidental* property of any being, see any good System of Ontology, or a Treatise on Logic.

<sup>2</sup> *Essentiale fuit in eo de quo hic agimus, quod ex dei ordinatione perpetua necesse fuit, est, et erit, ut in presbyterio quispiam et loco et dignitate primus*



truly to state the question of church government between the church of England, and that of Geneva in the time of Queen *Elizabeth*, and thereby we shall see how small the difference was between them. That the churches in the primitive times did take in the Christians in whole cities and adjoining territories, is acknowledged on both sides; *Calvin* and *Beza* being both express in it, and the constitution of the church of Geneva speaks as much. "To each city," saith *Calvin*; "there was assigned a certain region, which might from thence take its presbytery, and they be added to the body of its church."—"In the principal town of each diocess," saith *Beza*, "the first presbyter presided, every day, in the common jurisdiction, as well over the rest of his fellow presbyters of the city, as over those of the whole diocess."<sup>1</sup> That the government of the city did take in the city and territories, is likewise acknowledged by them. That for more convenient order, there was one to preside over the ecclesiastical senate, is confessed as essential by *Beza*; and *Calvin* acknowledged that even in apostolical times, "there was no such equality among the ministers of the church, but that some one was over the rest in authority and counsel."<sup>2</sup> Wherein then lay the difference? For we have already seen that our great divines then did not look upon their form of government as necessary, but only lawful; and *Calvin* and *Beza* would not be thought to prescribe their form to other churches. All the difference then was, not whether their form of government was founded on divine right; not whether episcopacy in the church was lawful or not; not whether diocesan churches were unlawful, or whether every congregation should have an ecclesiastical senate; but whether it were more agreeable to the primitive form, that the president of the ecclesiastical senate should have only an order among, or a degree above the senate itself. But chiefly it was, whether in the present state of the *reformed churches* it

actioni gubernandæ præsit, cum eo quod ipsi divinitus attributum est jure. Accidentale autem fuit, quod presbyteri in hac προσαρτία alii aliis per vices initio succedebant; qui προσαρτίας modus paulatim postea visus est mutandus, ut unus quispiam judicio cæterorum compresbyterorum delectus, presbyterio προστωρ esset, et permaneret.—De Ministr. gradibus, cap. 23, p. 153.—1 Rom. xiii. 1 to 5.

<sup>1</sup> Unicuique civitati (saith *Calvin*) erat attributa certa regio; quæ presbyteros inde sumeret, et velut corpori ecclesiæ illius accenserentur. In oppido cujusque diœceseos (saith *Beza*) præcipuo, primus presbyter, &c., in quotidiana communi jurisdictione præerat cæteris tum urbanis, tum aliis ejus regionis compresbyteris, i. e. toti diœcesi.—Instit. l. 4, c. 4, s. 2. De Ministr. grad. cap. 24, p. 167.

<sup>2</sup> Non eam fuisse tunc equalitatem inter ecclesiæ ministros, quin unus aliquis autoritate et consilio præesset.—N. Tit. 1, 5.

were more convenient wholly to lay aside the form of government by bishops, which had been so much abused in the *Roman church*, and to reduce all ministers of the gospel to an equality with only a presidency of order, thereby to free *themselves* from the imputation of ambition, and to prevent it in *others*; or else it were more prudent only to retrench the abuses of episcopacy under the papacy, and to reduce it to that form wherein it was practised in the church, before the *tyranny* and *usurpation* of the *Roman bishop* had engrossed all *ecclesiastical power* into his own hands? The former part was embraced generally by the *reformed churches*, the latter by our church of England, so that the question was not about divine right, but about a matter of prudence; not what form was settled by a law of Christ, but what form was suitable to the present state of the churches of the reformation. Therefore we see none of these foreign divines did charge the government of this church with *unlawfulness*, but *inconveniency*, as it was a step to pride and ambition, and an occasion whereby men might do the church injury by the excess of their power, if they were not men of an excellent temper and moderation. Thence that prediction of *Padre Paulo*, that the church of England would then find the inconveniency of episcopacy, when a high spirited bishop should once come to rule that church; and so Beza when he had freed the bishops of the reformation from that imputation of *lording it over their brethren*, with which he had charged the Roman bishops, yet he adds, that he would beg them rather to lay down their power than to transmit that power to those after them, "Who it may be were not like to succeed them in their meekness and moderation."<sup>1</sup> What just reason there was for such fears, or may be still, let those judge who are fittest to do it; those I mean who have the power not only to redress, but prevent abuses encroaching by an irregular power. It was not then any unlawfulness in the government of episcopacy itself, but its liability to abuse, which made the reformed churches reduce modern episcopacy into a mere presidency of order, which was not so liable. A clear evidence that they judged not the government unlawful, is, their frequent profession of a ready and cheerful obedience to bishops, if they would embrace the gospel, and stand up in defence of the true doctrine. For which we have the testi-

<sup>1</sup> Hanc ipsorum moderationem et æquitatem minime forsan sequuturi.—De Ministr. grad. p. 158.

mony of George Prince of Anhalt, in the preface to his sermon on false prophets, speaking of bishops and archbishops. "We could wish, that as they have the names, and enjoy the benefices, that they would so in reality, make good that they are bishops to the church. We could wish that they would teach what is agreeable to the gospel, and that they would faithfully rule the church according to the same. O how willingly, with what a joy of heart should we account them bishops, should we reverence, obey, assign the jurisdiction and clerical rank due to them, and freely rejoice in these things. This very thing, we always, and Luther frequently, both orally, by writing, and by attestation before public witnesses in the cathedral church of Marburg, have promised."<sup>1</sup> To the same purpose Melancthon writing to Camerarius:<sup>2</sup> "By what right or law may we dissolve the ecclesiastical polity, if the bishops will grant us that which in reason they ought to grant? and though it were lawful for us so to do, yet surely it were not expedient. Luther was ever of this opinion." The same is professed by Calvin, and that according to his temper in a higher manner: "But verily, if they would grant to us a hierarchy, in which bishops should take the pre eminence, so that they refuse not to be subject to Christ, depend on Him as their only head, and may be referred to Him only, in which if they cultivate brotherly charity among themselves, and are bound together in no other manner but by his truth; then, if there can be any who shall not reverently, and with all obedience, pay submission to that, (hierarchy, or church polity of episcopal supremacy,) we confess, that there is no anathema of which they will not be worthy."<sup>3</sup> *Jacobus Heerbrandus*, divinity professor at Tubinge, professeth it to be "the most sound constitution of church government, wherein every diocess had its bishop, and

<sup>1</sup> Utinam sicut nomina gerunt et titulos, ita se reipsa præstarent episcopos ecclesiæ. Utinam evangelio docerent consona, ipsoque ecclesias fideliter regerent. O quam libenter, quantaque eum cordis lætitia, pro episcopis ipsos habere, revereri, morem gerere, debitam jurisdictionem, et ordinationem eis tribuere, eaque sine recusatione frui vellemus: id quod nos semper, et D. Lutherus etiam sæpissime tam ore quam scriptis, imo et in concione publica in cathedrali templo Marburgensi contestati promissimus.—Super. Mas. tit. de Ordinat.

<sup>2</sup> Ep. ad Cæner. A. D. 1530.

<sup>3</sup> Verum autem nobis si contribuant hierarchiam in qua emineant episcopi, ut Christo subesse non recusent, ut ab illo tanquam ab unico capite pendeant, et ad ipsum referantur, in qua si fraternam charitatem inter se colant, et non alio modo quam ejus veritate colligati, tum vero nullo non anathemate dignos fatemur, si qui erunt, qui eam non reverenter et summa eum obedientia observent.—Tom. 7, ad Sadoletum, et de neces. Reform. Eccl. p. 69.

every province an archbishop.”<sup>1</sup> *Hemingius* acknowledgeth a disparity among church officers, and accounts it a piece of barbarism to remove it. “For although the power of all ministers is the same, so far as it refers to spiritual jurisdiction; yet the orders and degrees of dignity are not equal, and that partly of divine right, and partly by the approbation of the church.”<sup>2</sup> But he qualifies what he had said of *jus divinum* by his following words: “The church to which the Lord hath given the power, has for its edification and advantage, instituted an order of ministry, so that all things might be rightly ordained for the renewal of the body of Christ. Hence a purer church followed apostolical times;<sup>3</sup> He made some patriarchs, some rural bishops,<sup>4</sup> some pastors, and others expounders.”—And afterwards, “amongst ministers, our church acknowledges degrees of dignity and order, according to the variety of their gifts, the greatness of their labours, and diversity of their callings; and he, (*Hemingius*,) judges, that the mind that would take away this order from the church, is heathenish.”<sup>5</sup> Three things he placeth a superiority of dignity in; *excellency of gifts; greatness of labours, difference of calling*. And the truth is, the two former ought to be the measure of dignity in the church, the eminency of men’s abilities, and the abundance of their labours above others. The necessity of a *superintendent*, or an *inspector* over other ministers, is largely discovered by

<sup>1</sup> Saluberrimum esset si singulæ provinciæ suos episcopos, et episcopi suos archiepiscopos haberent.—In loc. com. de Eccl. p. 767.

<sup>2</sup> Quamquam enim potestas omnium eadem est ministrorum, quantum ad spirituale jurisdictionem attinet; tamen dispares dignitatis ordines et gradus sunt; idq; partim jure divino, partim ecclesiæ approbatione.—Opuscul. Theol. Clas. 3. cap. 10, p. 439.

<sup>3</sup> What *Hemingius* here means demands inquiry. For how could there be a more *holy*, and consequently *moral* church, than on and immediately after the pentecost.—(Acts ii.) This secured purity in its most *intrinsic* and *essential* character. But if by the term “purer,” he refers to something of comparatively secondary consequence, to *externals*, as a more exact and orderly discipline, he is not the most happy in the selection of his epithet. Let only the sap, (which is *internal*,) of the tree be pure and plentiful, all the *externals*, the leaves, blossoms, flowers and fruit, will come out in due season, and that in beauty, order, and abundance.—*Am. Ed.*

<sup>4</sup> Χωρεπισκοπος, a country bishop, or generally, a bishop not a metropolitan.

<sup>5</sup> Ecclesia cui Dominus potestatem dedit in ædificationem, ordinem ministrorum instituit pro commodo suo, ut omnia sint rite ordinata ad instaurationem corporis Christi. Hinc ecclesia purior secuta tempora apostolorum, fecit alios patriarchas, alios Chorepiscopos, alios pastores et catechetas; and afterwards, Inter ministros agnoscit etiam ecclesia nostra gradus dignitatis, et ordines pro diversitate donorum, laborum magnitudine, ac vocationum diversitate; ac judicat, barbaricum esse de ecclesia hunc ordinem tollere velle.



*Zepper de Politeia Ecclesiastica*,<sup>1</sup> who likewise agrees with the former divines in his judgment of the first institution of episcopacy: "The same offices remained in use in the primitive church, after the apostles' times, a few gradations being added, according to the necessity of the times, which nevertheless had nothing at variance with the mind of *Paul*, or the word of God."<sup>2</sup> Whereby he both asserts it to be in the power of the church to add distinct degrees from what were in the primitive church, and that such so added, are no ways repugnant to the word of God. According to this judgment of their divines is the practice of the foreign protestant churches. In Sweden there is one *archbishop*, and *seven bishops*: and so in Denmark, though not with so great authority in Holstein, Pomerania, Mecklenburgh, Brunswick, Luneburgh, Bremen, Oldenburgh, East Friesland, Hessen, Saxony,<sup>3</sup> and all the upper part of Germany and the protestant imperial cities, church government is in the hands of *superintendents*. In the Palatinate they had *inspectors* and *præpositi*, over which was the ecclesiastical consistory of three clergymen, and three counsellors of state with their president: and so they have their *præpositi* in Wetteraw, Hessen, and Anhalt. In Transylvania, Polonia, and Bohemia, they have their *seniores* enjoying the same power with ancient bishops. So that we see all these *reformed churches* and *divines*, although they acknowledge no such thing as a divine right of *episcopacy*, but stiffly maintain *Jerome's* opinion of the primitive equality of gospel ministers; yet they are so far from accounting it unlawful to have some church officers acting in a higher degree above others, that they themselves embrace it under different names and titles, in order to the peace, unity, and government of their several churches; whereby they give us an evident demonstration that they looked not upon the primitive form to be immutable, but that the orders and degrees of ministers is only a prudential thing, and left in the liberty of every particular church, to be determined according to their tendency to preserve the peace and settlement of a church.

§ 7. We come in the last place to those who hold episcopacy to be the primitive form, yet not unalterably binding all

<sup>1</sup> Lib. 1, c. 10.

<sup>2</sup> Eadem officia in primitiva etiam ecclesia, post apostolorum tempora in usu manserunt, paucis quibusdam gradibus, pro illorum temporum necessitate additis, qui tamen nihil fere à mente Pauli et verbi divini alienum habuerunt.—De Polit. Eccles. l. 2, cap. 1,

<sup>3</sup> See Mr. Durec's Government of Protestant Churches beyond the Seas.

churches and places, but that those churches who are without it, are truly constituted churches; and ministers are lawfully ordained by mere presbyters. This is largely proved by Mr. *Francis Mason*, in his excellent Defence of the Ordination of Ministers beyond the Seas:<sup>1</sup> to which I refer the reader. Only I shall show out of him how the state of the question about the *jus divinum* of *episcopacy* is formed. *First*, If by *jure divino* you mean that which is according to scripture, then the pre-eminence of bishops is *jure divino*; for it hath been already proved to be according to scripture. *Secondly*, If by *jure divino* you mean the ordinance of God, in this sense also it may be said to be *jure divino*. For it is an ordinance of the apostles, whereunto they were directed by God's spirit, even by the spirit of prophecy, and consequently the ordinance of God. But if by *jure divino* you understand a law and commandment of God, binding all Christian churches universally, perpetually, unchangeably, and with such absolute necessity that no other form of discipline may in any case be admitted; in this sense neither may we grant it, nor yet can you prove it to be *jure divino*.

Whereby we see this learned and moderate man was far from unchurching all who wanted bishops; and absolutely declares, that though he looks on episcopacy as an apostolical institution, yet that no unalterable divine right is founded thereupon. So before him the both learned and pious bishop *G. Downham*<sup>2</sup> explains himself concerning the right of *episcopacy*, in these remarkable words: "Though in respect of the first institution, there is small difference between an apostolical and divine ordinance, because what was ordained by the apostles, proceeded from God, (in which sense, and no other, I do hold the episcopal function to be a divine ordinance, I mean in respect of the first institution,) yet in respect of perpetuity, difference by some is made between those things which be *divini*, and those which be *apostolici juris*; the former in their understanding being perpetually, generally, and immutably necessary; the latter not so. So that the meaning of my defence plainly is, that the episcopal government hath this commendation above other forms of ecclesiastical government, that in respect of the first institution, it is a divine ordinance; but that it should be such a divine ordinance as should be generally, perpetually, immutably, necessarily observed, so as no other form of govern-

<sup>1</sup> Certain brief Treatises, &c. Oxford, 1641, sect. 18.

<sup>2</sup> Defence of Sermon, l. 4, cap. 6, p. 139.

ment may in no case be admitted, I did not take upon me to maintain.”<sup>1</sup> With more to the same purpose in several places of that defence. And from hence it is acknowledged by the stoutest champions for episcopacy, before these late unhappy divisions, THAT ORDINATION PERFORMED BY PRESBYTERS, IN CASES OF NECESSITY, IS VALID; which I have already shown doth evidently prove that episcopal government is not founded upon any unalterable divine right.<sup>2</sup> So much may suffice to show that both those who hold an equality among ministers to be the apostolical form, and those that do hold episcopacy to have been it, do yet both agree at last in this; that no one form is settled by an unalterable law of Christ, nor consequently founded on divine right. For the former, notwithstanding their opinion of the primitive form, do hold episcopacy lawful; and the latter, who hold episcopacy to have been the primitive form, do not hold it perpetually and immutably necessary, but that presbyters, (where bishops cannot be had,) may lawfully discharge the offices belonging to bishops; both which concessions do necessarily destroy the perpetual divine right of that form of government they assert: which is the thing I have been so long in proving, and I hope made it evident to any unprejudiced mind.

§ 8. Having laid down this now as a sure foundation for peace and union, it were a very easy matter to improve it, in order to an accommodation of our present differences about church government. I shall only lay down three general principles deducible from hence, and leave the whole to the mature consideration of the lovers of truth and peace. The first principle is, that prudence must be used in settling the government of the church. This hath been the whole design of this treatise, to prove that the form of church government is a mere matter of prudence, regulated by the word of God. But I need not insist on the arguments already brought to prove it; for, as far as I can find, although the several parties in their contentions with one another plead for divine right; yet when any one of them comes to settle their own

<sup>1</sup> L 4, ch. 7, p. 146.

<sup>2</sup> For which purpose many evidences are produced from Dr. Field, of the church; lib. 3, c. 39; B. Downam, l. 3, c. 4; B. Jewel, P. 2, p. 131; Saravia. cap. 2, p. 10, 11; B. Alley, Prælect. 3 and 6; B. Pilkinton, B. Bridges, B. Bilson, D. Nowel, B. Davenant, B. Prideaux, B. Andrews, and others: by our reverend and learned M. Baxter, in his Christian Concord; to whom may be added the late most reverend and eminent the bishop of Durham, Apolog. Cathol. p. 1, l. 1, c. 21, and the primate of Armagh, whose judgment is well known as to the point of ordination.

particular form, they are fain to call in the help of prudence, even in things supposed by the several parties as necessary to the establishment of their own form. The congregational men may despair of ever finding elective synods, an explicit church covenant, or positive signs of grace in admission of church members in any law of Christ: nay, they will not generally plead for any more of them, than general rules of scripture, fine similitudes, and analogies, and evidence of natural reason; and what are all these at last to an express law of Christ, without which it was pretended nothing was to be done in the church of God? The presbyterians seem more generally to own the use of general rules, and the light of nature, in order to the form of church government, as in the subordination of courts, classical assemblies; and the more moderate sort, as to lay-elders. The episcopal men will hardly find any evidence in scripture, or the practice of the apostles, for churches, consisting of many fixed congregations for worship, under the charge of one person; nor in the primitive church, for the ordination of a bishop without the preceding election of the clergy, and at least consent and approbation of the people; and neither in scripture, nor antiquity, the least footstep of a delegation of church power. So that upon the matter at last, all of them make use of those things in church government, which have no other foundation but the principles of human prudence, guided by the scriptures; and it were well if that were observed still. The second principle is, that form of government is the best according to principles of Christian prudence, which comes the nearest to apostolical practice, and tends most to the advancing the peace and unity of the church of God. What that form is, I presume not to define and determine, but leave it to be gathered from the evidence of scripture and antiquity, as to the primitive practice; and from the nature, state and condition of that church wherein it is to be settled, as to its tendency to the advancement of peace and unity in it. In order to the finding out of which, that proposal of his late most excellent majesty of glorious memory, is most highly just and reasonable. *“His majesty thinketh it well worthy the studies and endeavours of divines of both opinions, laying aside emulation and private interests, to reduce episcopacy and presbyteries into such a well-proportioned form of superiority and subordination, as may best resemble the apostolical and primitive times, so far forth as the different condition of the*



*times, and the exigencies of all considerable circumstances will admit."*<sup>1</sup>

If this proposal be embraced, as there is no reason why it should not; then, all such things must be retrieved which were unquestionably of the primitive practice, but have been grown out of use through the length and corruption of times. Such are the *restoring of the presbyteries of several churches*, as the *senate* to the bishop, with whose counsel and advice all things were done in the primitive church. The contracting of diocesses into such a compass as may be fitted for the personal inspection of the bishop, and care of himself and the senate; the placing of bishops in all great towns of resort, especially county towns; that according to the ancient course of the church, its government may be proportioned to the civil government.<sup>2</sup> The constant preaching of the bishop in some churches of his charge, and residence in his diocese; the solemnity of ordinations, with the consent of the people; the observing provincial synods twice every year. The employing of none in judging church matters but the clergy. These are things unquestionably of the primitive practice, and no argument can be drawn from the present state of things, why they are not as much, if not more necessary than ever. And therefore all who appeal to the practice of the primitive church, must condemn themselves, if they justify the neglect of them. But I only touch at these things, my design being only to lay a foundation for a happy union. *Lastly, What form of government is determined by lawful authority in the church of God, ought so far to be submitted to, as it contains nothing repugnant to the Word of God.* So that let men's judgments be what they will concerning the primitive form, seeing it hath been proved, that that form doth not bind unalterably and necessarily, it remains that the determining of the form of government is a matter of liberty in the church; and what is so may be determined by lawful authority; and what is so determined by that authority, doth bind men to obedience, as hath been proved by the *fifth hypothesis*, in the entrance of this treatise.<sup>3</sup> I conclude all with this earnest desire, That the wise and gracious God would send us one heart and one way, that he would be the composer of our differences, and the healer of our schisms, strange divisions

<sup>1</sup> His Majesty's Minister's Second Paper to the Ministers at Newport, *ad fin.*

<sup>2</sup> V. Bishop Usher's reduction of episcopacy, &c.

<sup>3</sup> Par. 1, ch. 2, s. 12.

and unchristian animosities; while we pretend to serve the Prince of Peace, we may at last see,

THE END.

*Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will towards men.*—Luke ii. 14.



A DISCOURSE  
CONCERNING THE  
POWER OF EXCOMMUNICATION  
IN A  
CHRISTIAN CHURCH.

---

The name of power in a church explained. The mistake of which, the foundation of Erastianism. The notion of the church opened, as it is the subject of power. The church proved to be a society distinct from the commonwealth; by reason of its different nature, and divine institution; distinct officers, different rights, and ends, and peculiar offences. The power of the church doth not arise from mere confederation. The church's power founded on the nature of the Christian society, and not on particular precepts. The power of church officers not merely doctrinal, proved by several arguments. Church power as to particular persons antecedent to confederation. The power of the keys relates to baptism. The church's power extends to excommunication: what it is and what grounds it had under the law. No exclusion from temple worship among the Jews. Excommunication necessary in a Christian church, because of the conditions supposed to communion in it. Of the incestuous person, and the grounds of the apostolical censure. Objections against excommunication answered. The fundamental rights of the church continue after its being incorporated into the civil state. The magistrate's power as to excommunication cleared.

It<sup>1</sup> is a matter of daily observation and experience in the world, how hard it is to keep the eyes of the understanding clear in its judgment of things, when it is too far engaged in the dust of controversy. It being so very difficult to manage well an impetuous pursuit after any opinion; nothing being more common than to see men outrun their mark, and through

<sup>1</sup> Append. to c. 8, part 1, § 1.



the force of their speed to be carried as far beyond it, as others in their opinion fall short of it. There is certainly a kind of inebriety of the mind, as well as of the body, which makes it so unstable and pendulous, that it oft-times reels from one extreme unto the contrary. This as it is obvious in most eager controvertists of all ages, so especially in such, who have discovered the falsity of an opinion they were once confident of, which they think afterwards they can never run far enough from: so that while they start at an apparition they so much dread, they run into those untrodden paths, wherein they lose both themselves and the truth they sought for.

§ 2. Thus we find it to be in the present controversy, for many out of their just zeal against the extravagancies of those who screwed up church power to so high a peg, that it was thought to make perpetual discord with the commonwealth, could never think themselves free from so great an inconvenience, till they had melted down all spiritual power into the civil state, and dissolved the church into the commonwealth. But that the world may see I have not been more forward to assert the just power of the magistrate in ecclesiasticals, as well as civils, than to defend the fundamental rights of the church, I have taken this opportunity, more fully to explain and vindicate that part of the church's power, which lies in reference to offenders. It being the main thing struck at by those who are the followers of that noted physician, who handled the church so ill, as to deprive her of her expulsive faculty of noxious humours, and so left her under a *miserere mei*.<sup>1</sup>

§ 3. I shall therefore endeavour to give the church her due, as well as Cæsar his, by making good this following principle or hypothesis, upon which the whole hinge of this controversy turns, viz. That the power of inflicting censure on offenders in a Christian church, is a fundamental right, resulting from the constitution of the church, as a society by Jesus Christ, and that the seat of this power is in those officers of the church, who have derived their power originally from the founder of this society, and act by virtue of the laws of it.

§ 4. For the clear stating of this controversy, it will be necessary to explain, what that power is, which I attribute to the church, and in what notion the church is to be considered as it exerciseth this power. *First*, Concerning the proper notion of power; by it I cannot see anything else to be under-

<sup>1</sup> "Take pity on me."

stood, than a right of governing or ordering things which belong to a society. And so power implies only a moral faculty in the person enjoying it, to take care *ne quid civitas detrimenti capiat*, "that the state take no harm," whereby it is evident that every well constituted society must suppose a power within itself of ordering things belonging to its welfare, or else it were impossible, either the being, or the rights and privileges of a society could be long preserved. Power then in its general and abstracted notion, doth not necessarily import either mere authority, or proper coercion; for these, to any impartial judgment, will appear to be rather the several modes whereby power is exercised, than any proper ingredients of the specific nature of it: which, in general, imports no more than a right to govern a constituted society; but how that right shall be exercised, must be resolved not from the notion of power, but from the nature and constitution of that particular society in which it is lodged and inherent.

§ 5. It appears then from hence to be a great mistake and abuse of well-natured readers, when all power is necessarily restrained, either to that which is properly coercive, or to that which is merely arbitrary, and only from consent. The original of which mistake is, the stating the notion of power from the use of the word, either in ancient Roman authors, or else in the civil laws, both which are freely acknowledged to be strangers to the exercise of any other power, than that which is merely authoritative and persuasive, or that which is co-active and penal. The ground of which is, because they were ignorant of any other way of conveying power, besides external force, and arbitrary consent; the one in those called legal societies, or *civitates*, or states, the other *collegia* and *hetæriæ*, colleges and friendly corporations. But to those who acknowledge that God hath a right of commanding men to what duty he pleases, and appointing a society upon what terms best please him, and giving a power to particular persons to govern that society, in what way shall tend most to advance the honour of such a society, may easily be made appear, that there is a kind of power neither properly coactive, nor merely arbitrary, viz. such a one as immediately results from divine institution, and doth suppose consent to submit to it as a necessary duty in all the members of this society.

§ 6. This power, it is evident, is not merely arbitrary either in the governors or members: for, the governors derive their power or right of governing from the institution of Christ, and are to be regulated by his laws in the execution of it; and the

members, though their consent be necessarily supposed, yet that consent is a duty in them, and that duty doth imply their submission to the rulers of this society. Neither can this power be called coactive, in the sense it is commonly taken: for coactive power, and external force are necessary correlatives to each other, but we suppose no such thing as a power of outward force to be given to the church as such, for that properly belongs to a commonwealth. But the power which I suppose to be lodged in the church, is such a power as depends upon a law of a superior, giving right to govern, to particular persons over such a society, and making it the duty of all members of it to submit unto it, upon no other penalties, than the exclusion of them from the privileges, which that society enjoys. So that supposing such a society as the church is, to be of divine institution, and that Christ hath appointed officers to rule it, it necessarily follows, that those officers must derive their power, i. e. their right of governing this society, not merely from consent and confederation of parties, but from that divine institution, on which the society depends. The want of understanding the right notion of power in the sense here set down, is certainly the *πρωτον ψευδος*, “the prime delusion” of *Erastianism*, and that which hath given occasion to so many to question any such thing as power in the church, especially, when the more zealous than judicious defenders of it have rather chosen to hang it upon some doubtful places of scripture, than on the very nature and constitution of the Christian church, as a society instituted by Jesus Christ.

§ 7. This being then the nature of power in general, it is I suppose clear, that an outward coactive force is not necessary in order to it, for if some may have a right to govern and others may be obliged to obedience to those persons antecedently, to any civil constitution; then such persons have a just power to inflict censures upon such as transgress the rules of the society, without any outward force. It is here very impertinent to dispute, what effects such censures can have upon wilful persons without a coactive power; if I can prove, that there is a right to inflict them in church officers, and an obligation to submit to them in all offenders; I am not to trouble myself with the event of such things as depend on divine institutions. I know it is the great objection of the followers of *Erastus*, that church censures are inflicted upon persons unwilling to receive them, and therefore must imply external and coactive force, which is repugnant to the nature of a



church. But this admits, (according to the principles here established,) of a very easy solution; for I deny not, that church power goes upon consent, but then it is very plain here was an antecedent consent to submit to censures in the very entrance into this society, which is sufficient to denominate it a voluntary act of the persons undergoing it; and my reason is this; every person entering into a society, parts with his own freedom and liberty, as to matters concerning the governing of it, and professeth submission to the rules and orders of it: now a man having parted with his freedom already, cannot reassume it when he pleases, for, then, he is under an obligation to stand to the covenants made at his entrance; and consequently his undergoing what shall be laid upon him by the laws of this society, must be supposed to be voluntary, as depending upon his consent at first entrance, which in all societies must be supposed to hold still, else there would follow nothing but confusion in all societies in the world, if every man were at liberty to break his covenants when any thing comes to lie upon him according to the rules of the society, which he out of some private design would be unwilling to undergo. Thus much may serve to settle aright the notion of power; the want of understanding which, hath caused all the confusion of this controversy.

The next thing is, in what notion we are to consider the church, which is made the subject of this power? As to which we are to consider this power; either as to its right, or *in actu primo*; or as to its exercise, or *in actu secundo*, "in its first or second act or stage." Now if we take this power as to the fundamental right of it; then it belongs to that universal church of Christ, which subsists as a visible society, by virtue of that law of Christ, which makes an owning the profession of Christianity the duty of all church members. If we consider this power in the exercise of it, then, (it being impossible that the universal church should perform the executive part of this power relating to offences,) I suppose it lodged in that particular society of Christians, which are united together in one body in the community of the same government; but yet, so, as that the administration of this power, doth not belong to the body of the society considered complexly, but to those officers in it, whose care and charge it is, to have a peculiar oversight and inspection over the church, and to redress all disorders in it. Thus the visive faculty is fundamentally lodged in the soul, yet all exterior acts of sight are performed by the eyes, which are the *ἐπισκοποι* overseers of the body,



as the other are of the church, so that the exercise and administration of this power, belongs to the special officers and governors of the church; none else being capable of exercising this power of the church as such but they on whom it is settled by the founder of the church itself.

§ 9. This society of the church may be again considered; either as subsisting without any influence from the civil power, or as it is owned by, and incorporated into, a Christian state. I therefore demand, whether it be absolutely necessary for the subsistence of this Christian society, to be upheld by the civil power, or not? And certainly none who consider the first and purest ages of the Christian church, can give any entertainment to the affirmative, because then the church flourished in its greatest purity, not only when not upheld, but when most violently opposed by the civil power; if so, then its being united with the civil state is only accidental as to its constitution; and if this be only accidental, then it must be supposed furnished with everything requisite to its well ordering accidentally to any such union, and abstractly from it. For can we imagine our blessed Saviour should institute a society, and leave it destitute of means to uphold itself, unless it fell into the hands of the civil power? or that he left every thing tending thereto, merely to prudence, and the arbitrary constitutions of the persons joining together in this society? Did our Saviour take care there should be a society, and not provide for means to uphold it? Nay, it is evident, he not only appointed a society, but officers to rule it. Had those officers then a right to govern or not, by virtue of Christ's institution of them? if not, they were rather *Bibuli*<sup>1</sup> than *Cæsares*, cyphers than consuls in the church of God. If they had a power to govern, doth not that necessarily imply a right to inflict censures on offenders, unless we will suppose that either there can be no offenders in a Christian church, or that those offenders do not violate the laws of the society, or there be some prohibition for them to exercise their power over them, (which is to give power with one hand, and take it away with the other,) or that this power cannot extend so far as to exclude any from the privileges of the church: which is the thing to be discussed.

§ 10. Having thus cleared our way, I now come to the resolution of the question itself, in order to which I shall en-

<sup>1</sup> Bibulus was fellow-consul with Cæsar; but he left Cæsar to act, whilst he spent his time to protest against his colleague.—*Am. Ed.*

deavour to demonstrate, with what evidence the subject is capable of, these following things: *First*, That the church is a peculiar society in its own nature, distinct from the commonwealth. *Secondly*, That the power of the church over its members doth not arise from mere confederation or consent of parties. *Thirdly*, That this power of the church doth extend to the exclusion of offenders from the privileges of it. *Fourthly*, That the fundamental rights of the church do not escheat to the commonwealth upon their being united in a Christian state. If these principles be established, the church's power will stand upon them, as on a firm and immovable basis.

§ 11. I begin with the *first*. That the church is a peculiar society in its own nature, distinct from the commonwealth, which I prove by these arguments:

1. Those societies, which are capable of subsisting apart from each other, are really, and in their own nature, distinct from one another; but so it is with the church and commonwealth. For there can be no greater evidence of a real distinction than mutual separation; and I think the proving the possibility of the soul's existing separate from the body, is one of the strongest arguments to prove it to be a substance really distinct from the body, to which it is united; although we are often fain to go the other way to work, and to prove possibility of separation from other arguments evincing the soul to be a distinct substance; but the reason of that is for want of evidence as to the state of separate souls, and their visible existence, which is repugnant to the immateriality of their natures. But now, as to the matter in hand, we have all evidence desirable; for we are not to prove the possibility of separation, merely from the different constitution of the things united, but we have the evidence of sense for it, that the church hath subsisted when it hath been not only separated from, but persecuted by all civil power. It is with many men as to the union of church and state, as it is with others, as to the union of the soul and body: when they observe how close the union is, and how much the soul makes use of the animal spirits in most of its operations, and how great a sympathy there is between them, that, like the twins of Hippocrates, they laugh and weep together, they are shrewdly put to it, how to fancy the soul to be anything else than a more vigorous mode of matter; for these observing how close an union and dependence there is between the church and state in a Christian commonwealth, and how

much the church is beholding to the civil power in the administration of its functions, are apt to think that the church is nothing but a higher mode of a commonwealth, considered as Christian. But when it is so evident that the church hath, and may subsist, supposing it abstracted from all civil power, it may be a sufficient demonstration, that however near they may be when united, yet they are really, and in their own nature, distinct from each other. Which was the thing to be proved.

§ 12. — 2. Those are distinct societies, which have every thing distinct in their nature from each other, which belong to the constitution or government of them; but this is evident, as to the church and commonwealth, which will appear, because their charter is distinct, or that which gives them their being as a society: civil societies are founded upon the necessity of particular men's parting with their peculiar rights, for the preservation of themselves, which was the impulsive cause of their entering into societies; but that which actually speaks them to be a society, is the mutual consent of the several parties joining together, whereby they make themselves to be one body, and to have one common interest. So *Cicero de Repub.* defines *populus* to be "the engagement of many associated together, by an agreement as to right, and for the participation of mutual advantage."<sup>1</sup> There is no doubt, but God's general providence is as evidently seen in bringing the world into societies, and making them live under government, as in disposing all particular events which happen in those societies; but yet the way which Providence useth in the constitution of these societies, is by inclining men to consent to associate for their mutual benefit and advantage. So that natural reason, consulting for the good of mankind, as to those rights which men enjoy in common with each other, was the main foundation upon which all civil societies were erected. We find no positive law enacting the being of civil societies, because nature itself would prompt men for their own conveniencies to enter into them. But the ground and foundation of that society, which we call a church, is a matter which natural reason and common notions could never reach; and therefore an associating for the preserving of such, may be a philosophical society, but a Christian it cannot be: and they that would make a Christian church to be nothing else but a

<sup>1</sup> Cætus multitudinis, juris consensu et utilitatis communione sociatus.—Apud. August. de Civit. de l. 2, c. 21.

society of the Essenes, or an *ὀμαχοεῖον* of Pythagoreans,<sup>1</sup> do either not understand, or not consider whereon this Christian society is founded; for it is evident they look on it as a merely voluntary thing, that is not at all settled by any divine positive law.

§ 13. The truth is, there is no principle more consistent with the opinion of those who deny any church power in a Christian state than this is, and it is that which every one who will make good his ground must be driven to; for it is evident, that in matters merely voluntary, and depending only on confederation, such things being liable to a magistrate's power, there can be no plea from mutual consent to justify any opposition to supreme authority in a commonwealth. But, then, how such persons can be Christians, when the magistrates would have them to be otherwise, I cannot understand; nor how the primitive martyrs were any other than a company of fools or madmen, who would hazard their lives for that which was a mere arbitrary thing, and which they had no necessary obligation upon them to profess. Mistake me not, I speak not here of mere acts of discipline, but of the duty of outwardly professing Christianity. If this be a duty, then a Christian society is settled by a positive law; if it be not a duty, then they are fools who suffer for it: so that this question resolved into its principles, leads us higher than we think for, and the main thing in debate must be, whether there be an obligation upon conscience for men to associate in the profession of Christianity or not? If there be, then the church, which is nothing else but such an association, is established upon a positive law of Christ; if there be not, then those inconveniences follow which are already mentioned.

§ 14. We are told indeed by the Leviathan with confidence enough, that no precepts of the gospel are law, till enacted by civil authority; but it is little wonder, that he who thinks an immaterial substance implies a contradiction, should think as much of calling anything a law, but what hath a civil sanction. But I suppose all those who dare freely own a supreme and infinite essence to have been the Creator, and to be the ruler of the world, will acknowledge his power to oblige conscience, without being beholding to his own creature to enact his laws, that men might be bound to obey them. Was the great God fain to be beholding to the civil authority he had over the

<sup>1</sup> A school, or place where all might hear together: from *ὁμως*, 'together,' and *ἀκουεῖν*, 'to hear;' a Pythagorean school.—*Am. Ed.*



Jewish commonwealth, (their government being a *Θεοκρατία*, a theocracy,) to make his laws obligatory to the consciences of the Jews? What, had not they their beings from God? and can there be any greater ground of obligation to obedience than from thence? Whence comes civil power to have any right to oblige men more, than God, considered as governor of the world, can have? Can there be indeed no other laws according to the Leviathan's hypothesis, but only the law of nature and civil laws? But I pray, whence comes the obligation to either of these, that these are not as arbitrary as all other agreements are? And is it not as strong a dictate of nature as any can be, (supposing that there is a God,) that a creature which receives its being from another, should be bound to obey him, not only in the resultancies<sup>1</sup> of his own nature, but with the arbitrary constitutions of his will. Was Adam bound to obey God or not, as to that positive precept of eating the forbidden fruit, if no civil sanction had been added to that law? The truth is, such hypotheses as these are, when they are followed close home, will be found to kennel in that black den, from whence they are loath to be thought to have proceeded.

§ 15. And now, supposing<sup>2</sup> that every full declaration of the will of Christ, as to any positive institution, hath the force and power of a law upon the consciences of all, to whom it is sufficiently proposed: I proceed to make it appear, that such a divine positive law there is, for the existence of a church, as a visible body and society in the world; by which I am far from meaning such a conspicuous society, that must continue in a perpetual visibility in the same places; I find not the least intimation of any such thing in scripture; but that there shall always be, somewhere or other, in the world, a society owning and professing Christianity, may be easily deduced from thence; and especially on this account, that our Saviour hath required this, as one of the conditions in order to eternal felicity, that all those who believe in their hearts, that Jesus is the Christ, must likewise confess him with their mouths to the world; and therefore, as long as there are men to believe in Christ, there must be men that will not be ashamed to associate, on the account of the doctrine he hath promulged to the world. That one phrase in the New Testament, so frequently used by our blessed Saviour, of the Kingdom of

<sup>1</sup> Understand the constant, never ceasing, and everywhere existing emanations of His nature, whether perceived or acknowledged by man or not. *Am. Ed.*

Heaven, (importing a gospel state,) doth evidently declare a society, which was constituted by him, on the principles of the gospel covenant. Wherefore should our Saviour call disciples, and make apostles, and send them abroad with full commission to gather and initiate disciples by baptism; did he not intend a visible society for his church? Had it not been enough for men to have cordially believed the truth of the gospel, but they must be entered in a solemn visible way, and join in participation of visible symbols of bread and wine, but that our Saviour required external profession and society in the gospel as a necessary duty, in order to obtaining the privileges conveyed by his Magna Charta in the gospel. I would fain know by what argument we can prove, that any human legislator did ever intend a commonwealth to be governed according to his mode, by which we cannot prove that Christ by a positive law, did command such a society, as should be governed in a visible manner, as other societies are? Did he not appoint officers himself in the church, and that of many ranks and degrees? Did he not invest those officers with authority to rule his church? Is it not laid as a charge on them, to take heed to that flock, over which God had made them overseers? Are there not rules laid down for the peculiar exercise of their government over the church in all the parts of it? Were not these officers admitted into their function by a most solemn visible rite of imposition of hands? And are all these solemn transactions a mere piece of sacred pageantry? And they will appear to be little more, if the society of the church be a mere arbitrary thing, depending only upon consent and confederation, and not subsisting by virtue of any charter from Christ, or some positive law, requiring all Christians to join in church society together.

§ 16. But if now from hence it appears, (as certainly it cannot but appear,) that this society of the church doth subsist by virtue of a divine positive law, then it must of necessity be distinct from a civil society, and that on these accounts: *First*, because there is an antecedent obligation on conscience to associate on the account of Christianity, whether human laws prohibit or command it. From whence, of necessity, it follows, that the constitution of the church is really different from that of the commonwealth; because whether the commonwealth be for, or against, this society, all that own it are bound to profess it openly, and declare themselves members of it. Whereas, were the church and commonwealth really and formally the same, all obligation to church society would

arise merely from the legislative power of the commonwealth. But now there being a divine law, binding in conscience, whose obligation cannot be superseded by any human law, it is plain and evident, where are such vastly different obligations, there are different powers; and in this sense I know no incongruity, in admitting *imperium in imperio*, "a government within a government," if by it we understand no external coercive power, but an internal power laying obligation on conscience, distinct from the power lodged in a commonwealth considered as such. An outward coercive power was always disowned by Christ, but certainly not an internal power over conscience to oblige all his disciples to what duties he thought fit.

*Secondly*, I argue from those officers, whose right to govern this society are founded on that charter, whereby the society itself subsists. Now I would willingly know why, when our Saviour disowned all outward power in the world, yet he should constitute a society, and appoint officers in it, did he not intend a peculiar distinct society from the other societies of the world. And therefore the argument frequently used against church power, because it hath no outward force with it by the constitution of Christ, is a strong argument to me of the peculiarity of a Christian society from a commonwealth; because Christ so instituted it, as not to have it ruled at first by any outward force or power. When Christ saith his *kingdom was not of this world*, he implies, that he had a society that was governed by his laws in the world, yet distinct from all mundane societies: had not our Saviour intended his church to have been a peculiar society distinct from a commonwealth, it is hard to conceive why our Saviour should interdict the apostles the use of a civil coercive power. Or why instead of sending abroad apostles to preach the gospel, he did not employ the governors of commonwealths to have enforced Christianity by laws and temporal edicts, and the several magistrates to have empowered several persons under them to preach the gospel in their several territories? And can anything be more plain, by our Saviour's taking a contrary course, than that he intended a church society to be distinct from civil, and the power belonging to it, (as well as the officers,) to be of a different nature from that which is settled in a commonwealth. I here suppose, that Christ hath by a positive law established the government of his church upon officers of his own appointment; which I have largely proved

elsewhere,<sup>1</sup> and therefore suppose it now. *Thirdly*, I argue from the peculiar rights belonging to these societies. For if every one born in the commonwealth has not thereby a right to the privileges of the church, nor every one by being of the church, any right to the benefits of the commonwealth, it must necessarily follow, that these are distinct from one another. If any one by being of the commonwealth, hath right to church privileges, then every one born in a commonwealth may challenge a right to the Lord's supper without baptism, or open profession of Christianity, which I cannot think any will be very ready to grant. Now there being by divine appointment the several rights of baptism and the Lord's supper, as peculiar badges of the church as a visible society, it is evident, Christ did intend it to be a society distinct from the commonwealth.

*Fourthly*, I argue from the different ends of these societies. A commonwealth is constituted for civil ends, and the church for spiritual: for ends are to be judged by the primary constitution, but now it is plain, the end of civil society is for preservation of men's rights as men, (therefore magistracy is called by St. *Peter* ἀνθρώπινη κτίσις, "a human ordinance or institution," appointed by man for the good of man: see 1 *Pet.* ii. 13;) but this Christian society doth not respect men under the connotation of men but as Christians. The answer given to this is very short and insufficient, when it is said, that every man in a commonwealth is to act upon spiritual accounts and ends. For there is a great deal of difference between Christianity's having an influence upon men's actions in a commonwealth, and making a society the same with a commonwealth. To argue therefore from one to another, is a shortness of discourse I cannot but wonder at: unless it could be proved, that Christianity aimed at nothing else but regulating men in the affairs of a commonwealth, which is a task I suppose will not be undertaken.

*Lastly*, I argue from the peculiar offences against this society, which are, or may be distinct from those against a commonwealth. I deny not, but most times they are the same; but frequently they differ, and when they are the same, yet the consideration of them is different in the church and commonwealth, for which I shall suppose the six arguments produced in the last chapter of the first part to stand good,<sup>2</sup> which will strongly hold to excommunication in the

<sup>1</sup> Iren. p. 2, c. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Iren. p. 1, c. 8.



Christian church, though there produced only for the Jewish. I would fain know what is to be done in many offences, known to be against the laws of Christ, and which tend to the dishonour of the Christian society, which the civil and municipal laws, either do not, or may not take cognizance of? Thus much may serve, as I think to make evident, that the church in its own nature, is a peculiar society distinct from a commonwealth, which was the first proposition to be proved.

§ 17. The second is, "That the power of the church over its members in case of offences, doth not arise merely from confederation and consent, though it doth suppose it." This church power may be considered two ways. Either, *first*, as it implies the right in some of inflicting censures. Or *secondly*, as it implies in others, the duty of submitting to censures inflicted; now as to both these, I shall prove that their original is higher than mere confederation.

1. As to the right of inflicting censures on these accounts. *First*, Whatever society doth subsist by virtue of a divine constitution, doth by virtue thereof derive all power for its preservation, in peace, unity, and purity; but it is plain, that a power of censuring offenders, is necessary for the church's preservation in peace and purity; and it is already proved, that the church hath its charter from Christ, and therefore from him it hath a power to inflict punishments on offenders, suitable to the nature of the society they are of. I am very prone to think that the ground of all the mistakes on this subject have risen from hence, that some, imprudently enough, have fixed the original of this power on some ambiguous places of scripture, which may, and perhaps ought to be taken in a different sense; and their adversaries, finding those places weak and insufficient proofs of such a power, have from thence rejected any such kind of power at all. But certainly, if we should reject every truth that is weakly proved by some who have undertaken it, I know no opinion would bid so fair for acceptance as skepticism, and that in reference to many weighty and important truths. For how weakly have some proved the existence of a Deity, the immortality of the soul, and the truth of the scriptures, by such arguments, that if it were enough to overthrow an opinion to be able to answer some arguments brought for it, atheism itself would become plausible. It can be then no evidence, that a thing is not true, because some arguments will not prove it; and truly as to the matter in hand, I am fully of the opinion of the excellent H.

Grotius,<sup>1</sup> speaking of excommunication in the Christian church: "Neither is any special precept necessary for that purpose; since all things enjoined ought to be determined by an assembly of the church, by Christ once constituted; without which the purity of that assembly cannot be maintained."<sup>2</sup> And therefore men spend needless pains to prove an institution of this power by some positive precept, when Christ's founding his church as a peculiar society, is sufficient proof he hath endowed it with this fundamental right, without which the society, were *arena sine calce*, "sand without cement," a company of persons without any common tie of union among them; for if there be any such union, it must depend on some conditions, to be performed by the members of that society, which how could they require from them, if they have not power to exclude them upon non-performance?

2. I prove the divine original of this power from the special appointment and designation of particular officers by Jesus Christ, for the ruling of this society. Now I say, that law which provides there shall be officers to govern, doth give them power to govern, suitably to the nature of their society: either then you must deny, that Christ hath by an unalterable institution appointed a gospel ministry, or that this ministry hath no power in the church, or that their power extends not to excommunication. The first I have already proved, the second follows from their appointment: for by all the titles given to church officers in scripture, it appears they had a power over the church, (as *ἐπισκοποι* *πρεσβύτεροι*, *ἡγούμενοι*, *ποιμένες*, "overseers, presidents, leaders, pastors.") All which as you well know, do import a right to govern the society over which they are set. And that this power should not extend to a power to exclude convict offenders, seems very strange, when no other punishment can be more suitable to the nature of the society than this is; which is a debarring him from the privileges of that society, which the offender hath so much dishonoured. Can there be any punishment less imagined towards contumacious offenders than this is, or that carries in it less of outward and coactive force, it implying nothing but what the offender himself freely yielded to at his entrance into this society.

§ 18. All that I can find replied by any of the adversaries

<sup>1</sup> In Luke vi. 22.

<sup>2</sup> Neque ad eam rem peculiare præceptum desideratur, cum ecclesiæ cœtu à Christo semel constituto, omnia illa imperata censeri debent, sine quibus ejus cœtus puritas retineri non potest.

of the opinion I here assert, to the argument drawn from the institution and titles of the officers of the church, is, that all those titles which are given to the ministers of the gospel in the New Testament, that do import rule and government, are all to be taken in a spiritual sense, as they are Christ's ministers and ambassadors to preach his word and declare his will to his church. So that all power such persons conceive to lie in those titles, is only doctrinal and declarative; but how true that is, let any one judge that considers these things.

1. That there was certainly a power of discipline then in the churches constituted by the apostles, is most evident not only from the passages relating to offenders in *St. Paul's* epistles, especially to the Corinthians and Thessalonians, but from the continued practice of succeeding ages manifested by *Tertullian*, *Cyprian*, and many others. There being then a power of discipline in apostolical churches, there was a necessity it should be administered by some persons who had the care of those churches; and who were they but the several pastors of them? It being then evident that there was such a power, doth it not stand to common sense it should be implied in such titles, which in their natural import do signify a right to govern, as the names of pastors and rulers do?

2. There is a diversity in scripture made between pastors and teachers, *Ephes.* iv. 11. Though this doth not imply a necessity of two distinct offices in the church, yet it doth a different respect and connotation in the same person, and so imports that ruling carries in it somewhat more than mere teaching; and so the power implied in pastors to be more than merely doctrinal, which is all I contend for, viz. a right to govern the flock committed to their charge.

3. What possible difference can be assigned between the "elders that rule well, and those which labour in the word and doctrine," 1 *Timothy* v. 17, if all their ruling were merely labouring in the word and doctrine? and all their governing nothing but teaching? I intend not to prove an office of rulers distinct from teachers from hence, (which I know neither this place, nor any other will do,) but that the formal conception of ruling, is different from that of teaching.

4. I argue from the analogy between the primitive churches and the synagogues, that, as many of the names were taken from thence where they carried a power of discipline with them, so they must do in some proportion in the church; or it were not easy to understand them. It is most certain the presbyters of the synagogue had a power of ruling, and can

you conceive the bishops and presbyters of the church had none, when the societies were much of the same constitution, and the government of the one was transcribed from the other, as hath been already largely proved?

5. The acts attributed to pastor in scripture, imply a power of governing, distinct from mere teaching; such are ποιμαίνειν,<sup>1</sup> used for a right to govern, *Mat.* ii. 6; *Rev.* xii. 5; xix. 15; which word is attributed to pastors of churches in reference to their flocks, *Acts* xx. 28; 1 *Pet.* v. 2, and προσηλεια, is applied to ministers, when they are so frequently called προεσώτες, which denotes *præsentiam cum potestate*, "presidency with power;" for *Hesychius* renders it by κυβερνήσιν, "guidance, direction," and the προστάται, "guardians, protectors, presidents" at Athens had certainly a power of government in them.

6. The very word κυβερνήσεις, is attributed to those who have the oversight of churches, 1 *Cor.* xii. 8, by which it is certainly evident, that a power more than doctrinal is understood; as that it could not then be understood of a power merely civil. And this I suppose may suffice to vindicate this argument from the titles of church officers, in the New Testament, that they are not insignificant things, but the persons who enjoyed them had a right to govern the society over which the Holy Ghost had made them overseers.

§ 19.—3. I argue that church power ariseth not merely from consent, because the church may exercise her power on such who have not actually confederated with her; which is in admitting members into the church: for if the church officers have power to judge whether persons are fit to be admitted, they have power to exclude from admission such whom they judge unfit, and so their power is exercised on those who are not confederated. To this it may be answered, that the consent to be judged, gives the church power over the person suing for admission. I grant it doth, as to that particular person; but the right in general of judging concerning admission, doth argue an antecedent power to an actual confederation. For I will suppose that Christ should now appoint some officers to found a church, and gather a society of Christians together, where there hath been none before: I now ask whether these officers have power to admit any into the church or not? This I suppose cannot be denied, for to what end else were they appointed? If it be granted they have power to admit per-

<sup>1</sup> Not only to pasture or feed, but to guide and rule; as a shepherd has the right to *lead* to a right pasture, and to *drive* from a wrong one.



sons, and thereby make a church, then they had power antecedently to any confederation; for the confederation was subsequent to their admission: and therefore they who had power to admit, could not derive their power from confederation. This argument, to me, puts the case out of dispute, that all church power cannot arise from mere confederation.

And that which further evidences that the power of the church doth not arise from mere consent, is that deed of gift whereby our blessed Saviour did confer the power of the keys on the apostle Peter, as the representative in that action of the whole college of the apostles and governors of the church, of which power all the apostles were actually *enfeoffed*,<sup>1</sup> *John*, xx. 23. By which power of the keys is certainly meant some administration in the church, which doth respect it as a visible society, in which sense the church is so frequently called, as in that place, the kingdom of Heaven;<sup>2</sup> and in all probability the administration intended here by the power of the keys, is that we are now discoursing of, viz. the power of admission into the church of Christ, in order to the pardon of the sins of all penitent believers, and the shutting out of such who were manifestly unworthy of so holy a communion. So that the power of the keys doth not primarily respect exclusion out of the church, and receiving into it again upon absolution, but it chiefly respects the power of admission into the church, though by way of connotation and analogy of reason it will carry the other along with it. For if the apostles as governors of the church were invested with a power of judging of men's fitness for admission into the church as members of it, it stands to the highest reason that they should have thereby likewise a power conveyed to them, of excluding such as are unworthy after their admission, to maintain communion with the church. So that this interpretation of the power of the keys, is far from invalidating the power of the church, as to its censuring offenders; all that it pretends to, is only giving a more natural and genuine sense of the power of the keys, which will appear so to be, if we consider these things. 1. That this power was given to St. *Peter* before any Christian church was actually formed, which, (as I have elsewhere made manifest),<sup>3</sup> was not done till after Christ's resurrection; when Christ had given the apostles their commission to go to preach and baptize, &c. *Matth.* xxviii. 19. Is it not

<sup>1</sup> "From the ancient law term, *feoff*, to put in possession, to invest with right."

<sup>2</sup> *Matt.* xvi. 19.

<sup>3</sup> *Iren.* p. 2, ch. 5, s. 5.

therefore far more rational, that the power of the keys here given should respect the founding of a church and admission into it than ejection out of it, (before it was in being,) and receiving into it again? And this we find likewise remarkably fulfilled in the person of the apostle *Peter*, who opened the door of admission into the Christian church, both to Jews and Gentiles. To the Jews by his sermon at Pentecost, when about three thousand souls were brought into the church of Christ.<sup>1</sup> To the Gentiles, as is most evident in the story of Cornelius, *Acts* x. 28, who was the first fruits of the Gentiles. So that if we should yield so far to the great enhancers of St. *Peter's* power, that something was intended peculiar to his person in the keys given him by our Saviour, we hereby see how rationally it may be understood without the least advantage to the extravagant pretensions of St. *Peter's* pretended successors. 2. The pardon of sin in scripture is most annexed to baptism and admission into the church;<sup>2</sup> and thence it seems evident, that the loosing of sin should be by admitting into the church by baptism,<sup>3</sup> in the same sense by which baptism is said to save us, and it is called the washing of regeneration,<sup>4</sup> respecting the spiritual advantages which come by admission into the church of Christ; and so they are said to have their sins bound upon them who continue refractory in their sins,<sup>5</sup> as *Simon Magus* is said to be in the bond of iniquity. 3. The metaphor of the keys refers most to admission into the house and excluding out of it, rather than ejecting any out of it, and readmitting them. Thus, when *Eliakim* is said to have the keys of the house of *David*,<sup>6</sup> it was in regard of his power to open and shut upon whom he pleased. And thus *Cyprian*,<sup>7</sup> as our learned Mr. *Thorndike* observes, understands the power of binding and loosing in this sense, in his epistle to *Jubaianus*, where speaking of the remission of sins in baptism, he brings these very words of our Saviour to *Peter* as the evidence of it, "that what he should loose on earth, should be loosed in Heaven," and concludes with this sentence: "From whence we understand, that it was not lawful, except to rulers in the church, established by gospel law, and

<sup>1</sup> Acts ii. 41.<sup>2</sup> 1 Pet. iii. 21.<sup>3</sup> Tit. iii. 5.<sup>4</sup> Water baptism is the sign of that only which has power to save, the baptism by the Holy Ghost, which in its plenitude may be contemplated as given to the apostolic church, on the day of Pentecost. *Acts* ii.<sup>5</sup> Acts viii. 33.<sup>6</sup> Isa. xxii. 20.<sup>7</sup> Cyp. Ep. 73, sect. 6.

our Lord's institution, to baptize, and to grant remission of sins; for without," (the church,) "it is not possible that anything can be bound, nor released, and where there is not one, who can bind or release."<sup>1</sup> That which I now infer from this discourse is, that the power of the church doth not arise from mere consent and confederation, both because this power doth respect those who have not actually consented to it, and because it is settled upon the governors of the church by divine institution. Thus it appears that the right of inflicting censures doth not result merely *ex confederatâ disciplinâ*, which was the thing to be proved.

§ 20.—2. The like evidence may be given, for the duty of submitting to penalties or church censures in the members of the church: which that it ariseth not from mere consent of parties, will appear on these accounts.

1. Every person who enters this society is bound to consent, before he doth it, because of the obligation lying upon conscience to an open profession of Christianity, presently upon conviction of the understanding of the truth and certainty of the Christian religion. For when once the mind of any rational man is so far wrought upon by the influence of the divine spirit, as to discover the most rational and undoubted evidences, which there are of the truth of Christianity, he is presently obliged to profess Christ openly, to worship him solemnly, to assemble with others for instruction and participation of gospel ordinances; and thence it follows, that there is an antecedent obligation on conscience to associate with others, and consequently to consent to be governed by the rulers of the society which he enters into. So that this submission to the power of church officers in the exercise of discipline on offenders, is implied in the very conditions of Christianity, and the solemn professing and undertaking of it.

2. It were impossible any society should be upheld, if it be not laid by the founder of the society as the necessary duty of all members to undergo the penalties which shall be inflicted by those who have the care of governing that society, so they be not contrary to the laws, nature and constitution of it, else there would be no provision made for preventing divisions and confusions which will happen upon any breach made upon the laws of the society. Now this obligation to submit-

<sup>1</sup> Unde intelligimus non nisi in ecclesia præpositis et in evangelica lege ac dominica ordinatione fundatis, licere baptizare, et remissionem peccatorum dare; foris autem nec ligari aliquid posse nec solvi, ubi non sit qui ligare possit aut solvere.

sion to censures, doth speak something antecedently to the confederation, although the expression of it lies in the confederation itself. By this I hope we have made it evident that it is nothing else but a mistake in those otherwise learned persons, who make the power of censures in the Christian church to be nothing else but a *lex confederatæ disciplinæ*, "a law of confederated discipline," whereas this power hath been made appear to be derived from a higher original than the mere arbitrary consent of the several members of the church associating together; and how far are the examples of the synagogues under the law, from reaching that of Christian churches in reference to this, because in these the power is conveyed by the founder of the society, and not left to any arbitrary constitutions, as it was among the Jews in their synagogues. It cannot be denied but consent is supposed, and confederation necessary in order to church power; but that is rather in regard of the exercise, than the original of it; for although I affirm the original of this power to be of divine institution, yet in order to the exercise of it in reference to particular persons, (who are not mentioned in the charter of the power itself,) it is necessary that the persons on whom it is exerted, should declare their consent and submission either by words or actions, to the rules and orders of this society.

§ 21. Having now proved that the power of the church doth not arise from mere consent of parties, the next grand inquiry is concerning the extent of this power, whether it doth reach so far as to excommunication? For some men who will not seem wholly to deny all power in the church over offenders, nor that the church doth subsist by divine institution, yet do wholly deny any such power as that of excommunication, and seem rather to say that church officers may far more consistently with their office inflict any other mulct upon offenders, than exclude them from participation of communion with others in the ordinances and sacraments of the gospel. In order therefore to the clearing of this, I come to the third proposition.

That the power which Christ hath given to the officers of his church, doth extend to the exclusion of contumacious offenders from the privileges which this society enjoys. In these terms I rather choose to fix it, than in those crude expressions, wherein *Erastus* and some of his followers would state the question, and some of their imprudent adversaries have accepted it, viz: whether church officers have power to exclude any from the eucharist, *ob moralem impuritatem*,



“on account of moral impurity?” And the reason why I waive these terms, are:—

1. I must confess myself yet unsatisfied as to any convincing argument, whereby it can be proved that any were denied admission to the Lord’s supper, who were admitted to all other parts of church society, and owned as members in them. I cannot yet see any particular reason drawn from the nature of the Lord’s supper, above all other parts of divine worship, which should confine the censures of the church merely to that ordinance; and so to make the eucharist bear the same office in the body of the church, which our new anatomists tell us the *parenchyme* of the liver doth in the natural body, viz. to be *colum sanguinis*, “a strainer of the blood,” to serve as a kind of strainer to separate the more gross and feculent parts of the blood from the more pure and spirituous; so the Lord’s supper, to strain out the more impure members of the church from the more holy and spiritual. My judgment then is, that excommunication relates immediately to the cutting a person off from communion with the church’s visible society, constituted upon the ends it is; but because communion is not visibly discerned but in administration and participation of gospel ordinances, therefore exclusion doth chiefly refer to these; and because the Lord’s supper is one of the highest privileges which the church enjoys; therefore it stands to reason that censures should begin there. And in that sense, suspension from the Lord’s supper of persons apparently unworthy, may be embraced as a prudent, lawful, and convenient abatement of the greater penalty of excommunication, and so to stand on the same general grounds that the other doth; for *qui potest majus, potest etiam minus*, “what can effect the greater, can effect the less,” which will hold as well in moral as natural power, if there be no prohibition to the contrary, nor peculiar reason as to the one more than to the other.

2. I dislike the terms *ob moralem impuritatem*, “on account of moral impurity,” on this account, because I suppose they were taken up by *Erastus*, and from him by others, as the controversy was managed concerning excommunication among the Jews, viz. whether it was merely because of ceremonial, or else likewise because of moral impurity. As to which I must ingenuously acknowledge, *Erastus* hath very much the advantage of his adversaries, clearly proving that no persons under the law were excluded the temple worship because of moral impurity. But then withal I think he hath

gained little advantage to his cause by the great and successful pains he hath taken in the proving of that. My reason is, because the temple worship, or the sacrifices under the law were in some sense propitiatory, as they were the adumbrations, or typical, of that grand sacrifice which was to be offered up for the appeasing of God's wrath, viz. the blood of Christ; therefore, to have excluded any from participation of them, had been to exclude them from the visible symbol of obtaining pardon of sin, (which was not to be had without the shedding of blood, as the apostle tells us,) and from testifying their faith towards God, and repentance from dead works.<sup>1</sup> But now under the gospel those ordinances, which suppose admission into the church by baptism, do thereby suppose an all-sufficient sacrifice offered for the expiation of sin, and consequently the subsequent privileges do not immediately relate to the obtaining of that, but a grateful commemoration of the death of Christ, and a celebration of the infinite mercy and goodness of God in the way of redemption, found out by the death of his Son. And therefore it stands to great reason that such persons, who by their profane and unworthy lives dishonour so holy a profession, should not be owned to be as good and sound members of the society, founded on so sacred a foundation, as the most Christian and religious persons. To this I know nothing can be objected, but that, *first*, the passover was commemorative among the Jews; and, *secondly*, that the privileges of that people were then very great above other people, and therefore if God had intended any such thing as excommunication among his people, it would have been in use then. To these, I answer:

1. I grant, the Passover was commemorative as to the occasion of its institution: but then it was withal typical and annunciative of that Lamb of God who was to take away the sins of the world; and therefore no person who desired expiation of sins, was to be debarred from it; but the Lord's supper under the gospel hath nothing in it propitiatory, but is intended as a feast upon a sacrifice and a federal rite, as hath been fully cleared by a very learned person in his discourse about the true notion of the Lord's supper.

2. I grant the Jews had very many privileges above other nations: nay, so far, that the whole body of the people were looked upon as God's chosen, and peculiar and holy people; and from thence I justly infer, that whatever exclusion was

<sup>1</sup> Heb. ix. 23.

among the people of the Jews from their society, will far better hold as an argument for excommunication under the Christian church, than if it had been a mere debarring from their Levitical worship. And that I should far sooner insist upon from the reason assigned, as the ground of excommunication, than the other infirm and profligated argument; and so the exclusion out of the camp of Israel and the Cerith among the Jews, (whatever we understand by it,) may *à pari* hold to be a ground of exclusion from the Christian society: in imitation of which, I rather suppose that exclusion out of the synagogues was after taken up, rather as a mere outlawry, when they were deprived of civil power.

§ 22. The question then being thus clearly stated, it amounts to this, whether under the gospel, there be any power in the officers of the church by virtue of divine institution to exclude any offenders out of the Christian society, for transgressing the laws of it? And according to our former propositions, I suppose it will be sufficient to prove that power to be of divine institution; if I prove it to be fundamentally and intrinsically resident in the society itself. For whatever doth immediately result from the society itself, must have the same original which the subject hath, because this hath the nature of an inseparable property resulting from its constitution. For the clearing of which, I shall lay down my thoughts of it as clearly and methodically as I can; and that in these following hypotheses.

1. Where there is a power of declaring any person to be no true member of the society he is in, there is a formal power of excommunication: for this is all which I intend by it, viz. an authoritative pronouncing *virtute officii*, “by virtue of office,” any convict offender to have forfeited his interest in the church as a Christian society: and to lose all the privileges of it: so that if this power be lodged in any church officer, then he hath power formally to excommunicate.

2. Where the enjoyment of the privileges of a society is not absolute and necessary, but depends upon conditions to be performed by every member, of which the society is judge, there is a power in the rulers of that society to debar any person from such privileges, upon non-performance of the conditions. As supposing the *jus civitatis*, “the right of the state,” to depend upon defending the rights of the city; upon a failing in reference to this, in any person admitted to citizenship, the rulers of the city have the same power to take that right away, which they had at first to give it; because that

right was never absolutely given, but upon supposition that the person did not overthrow the ends for which it was bestowed upon him.

3. The church is such a society in which communion is not absolute and necessary, but it doth depend upon the performance of some conditions, of which the governors of it are the competent judges: and that appears,

1. Because the admission into the church, depends upon conditions to be judged by pastors, as in case of adult persons requiring baptism, and the children of infidels being baptized: in both which cases it is evident that conditions are prerequisite, of which the pastors are judges.

2. Because the privileges of this society do require a separation from other societies in the world, and call for greater holiness and purity of life; and those very privileges are pledges of greater benefits which belong only to persons qualified with suitable conditions; it would therefore be a very great dishonour to this society, if it lie as common and open as other societies in the world do, and no more qualifications required from the members of it.

3. We have instances in the sacred records of apostolical times, of such scandals which have been the ground of the exclusion of the persons guilty of them from the privileges of Christian society. And here I suppose we may, (notwithstanding all the little evasions which have been found out,) fix on the incestuous person in the church of Corinth. As to whom, I lay not the force of the argument upon the manner of execution of the censure then, viz. by delegation from an apostle, or the apostolical rod, or delivering to Satan; for I freely grant that these did then import an extraordinary power in the apostles over offenders; but I say, the ground and reason of the exercise of that power in such an extraordinary manner at that time, doth still continue, although not in that visible extraordinary effect which it then had. And whatever practice is founded upon grounds perpetual and common, that practice must continue as long as the grounds of it do, and the church's capacity will admit; (which hypothesis is the only rational foundation on which episcopal government in the church doth stand firm and unshaken, and which in the former discourse I am far from undermining, as an intelligent reader may perceive;) now I say that it is evident, that the reasons of the apostle's censure of that person, are not fetched from the want of Christian magistrates, but from such things which will hold as long as any Christian church: which are



the dishonour of the society, 1 *Corinth.* iv. 1; the spreading of such corruptions further, if they pass uncensured, 1 *Corinth.* v. 6; and amendment of the person, 1 *Cor.* v. 5. Upon these pillars the power of censures rests itself in the church of God, which are the main grounds of penalties in all societies whatsoever, viz. the preservation of the honour of them, and preventing of further mischief, and doing good to the offending party. And that which seems to add a great deal of weight to this instance, is, that the apostle checks the Corinthians, that before the exercise of the apostolical rod, were not of themselves sensible of so great a dishonour to the church as that was, and had not used some means for the removing such a person from their society; "and ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned that he that hath done this deed, maybe taken away from among you," 1 *Corinth.* v. 2. Therein implying, that whether there had been such a thing in the church, or not, as the apostolical rod, it had been the duty of a Christian society to have done their endeavour in order to the removing such a person from their number. But further, I cannot understand how it should be a duty in Christians to withdraw from every brother who walketh disorderly, and church officers not to have power to pronounce such a person to be withdrawn from, which amounts to excommunication.<sup>1</sup> It is not to me at all material, whether they did immediately relate to civil or sacred converse, (concerning which there is so much dispute,) for in whichsoever we place it, if church officers have a power to pronounce such a person to be withdrawn from, they have a power of excommunication; so we consider this penalty as inflicted on the person in his relation to the society as a Christian; and withal, how nearly conjoined their civil and spiritual eating were together, 1 *Corinth.* xi. 20, 21, and how strongly the argument will hold from *civil* to *sacred*, viz. *à remotione unius ad remotionem alterius*, "by removal from the one to that to the other," in this case, by analogy, not from any fancied pollution in *sacris*, "in sacred things" from the company of wicked men, but from the dishonour reflecting on the society from such unworthy persons partaking of the highest privileges of it. Thus from these three hypotheses this corollary follows, that where any persons in a church do by their open and contumacious offences, declare to the world that they are far from being the persons they were supposed to be in their admission into the church, there

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. v. 11; 2 Thess. iii. 14.

is a power resident in the pastors of the church to debar such persons from the privileges of it; and consequently from communion in the Lord's supper. 1. Because this expresseth the nearest union, and closest confederation, as the *συσσώτια*, "eating or living together," among the Grecians' commonwealths did. 2. Because this hath been always looked on with the greatest veneration in the church of God; and therefore it is least of all fit those persons should be admitted to the highest privileges of the church, which are unworthy of the lowest of them.

§ 23. There remain only some few objections which are levelled against this opinion concerning the power of excommunication, which from the question being thus stated and proved, will be soon removed. The *first* is, *that this excommunication is an outward punishment, and therefore belongs not to church officers, but to the magistrate.* 2. *Because it neither is, nor ever was in the power of any church officer to debar any offending member from public worship, because any heathens may come to it.* 3. *It cannot lie as to exclusion from the Lord's supper, because Christ is offered as spiritual food as well in the word preached as in the sacrament.* To these I answer, 1. I do not well understand what the objectors mean by an outward punishment; for there can be no punishment belonging to a visible society, (such as the church is here considered to be,) but it must be visible, *i. e.* outward, or a thing to be taken notice of in the world; and in this sense I deny that all visible punishment belongs only to the magistrate; but if by outward be meant forcible punishment, then I grant that all coactive power belongs to the magistrate; but I deny that excommunication formally considered, is a forcible punishment. 1. Because every person at his entrance into this society, is supposed to declare his submission to the rules of the society; and therefore whatever he after undergoes by way of penalty in this society, doth depend upon that consent. 2. A person stands excommunicated legally and *de jure*, who is declared authoritatively to be no member of the society, though he may be present at the acts of it, as a defranchised person may be at those of a corporation. 3. A person falling into those offences which merit excommunication, is supposed in so doing, voluntarily to renounce his interest in those privileges, the enjoyment of which doth depend upon abstaining from those offences which he wilfully falls into, especially if contumacy be joined with them, as it is before excommunica-

tion; for then nothing is done forcibly towards him; for he first relinquisheth his right, before the church governor declares him excluded the society. So that the offender doth meritoriously excommunicate himself, the pastor doth it formally, by declaring that he hath made himself no member by his offences and contumacy joined with them. To the second I answer, That I do not place the formality of excommunication in exclusion from hearing the word, but in debarring the person from hearing *tanquam pars ecclesiæ*, "as a member of the church," and so his hearing may be well joined with that of heathens and infidels, and not of members of the church. To the third I answer, That exclusion from the Lord's supper is not on the accounts mentioned in the objection, but because it is one of the chief privileges of the church, as it is a visible society.

Having thus cleared and asserted the power of excommunication in a Christian church, there remains only one inquiry more, which is, *Whether this power doth remain formally in the church, after its being incorporated into the commonwealth, or else doth it then escheat wholly into the civil power?* The resolution of which question mainly depends on another spoken to already; viz. Whether this power was only a kind of widow's estate, which belonged to it only during its separation from the civil power, or was the church absolutely enfeoffed of it as its perpetual right, belonging to it in all conditions whatsoever it should be in? Now that must appear by the tenure of it, and the grounds on which it was conveyed, which having been proved already to be perpetual and universal, it from thence appears that no accession to the church can invalidate its former title. But then as in case of marriage, the right of disposal and well management of the estate coming by the wife, belongs to the husband, so after the church is married into the commonwealth, the right of supreme management of this power in an external way doth fall into the magistrate's hands. Which may consist in these following things. 1. A right of prescribing laws for the due management of church censures. 2. A right of bounding the manner of proceeding in censures, that in a settled Christian state, matters of so great weight be not left to the arbitrary pleasure of any church officers, nor such censures inflicted but upon an evident conviction of such great offences which tend to the dishonour of the Christian church, and that in order to the amendment of the offender's life. 3. The right of adding temporal and civil

sanctions to church censures, and so enforcing the spiritual weapons of the church, with the more keen and sharp ones of the civil state. Thus I assert the force and efficacy of all church censures *in foro humano* to flow from the civil power, and that there is no proper effect following any of them as to civil rights, but from the magistrate's sanction. 4. To the magistrate belongs the right of appeals in case of unjust censures, not that the magistrate can repeal a just censure in the church, as to its spiritual effect; but he may suspend the temporal effect of it: in which case it is the duty of pastors to discharge their office and acquiesce. But this power of the magistrate in the supreme ordering of ecclesiastical as well as civil causes, I have fully asserted and cleared already.<sup>1</sup> From which it follows, That as to any outward effects of the power of excommunication, the person of the supreme magistrate must be exempted, both because the force of these censures doth flow from him in a Christian state, and that there otherwise would be a progress *in infinitum*,<sup>2</sup> to know whether the censure of the magistrate were just or not. I conclude then, that though the magistrate hath the main care of ordering things in the church, yet (the magistrate's power in the church being cumulative, and not privative,) the church and her officers retain the fundamental right of inflicting censure on offenders; which was the thing to be proved.—Q. E. D.

<sup>1</sup> Iren. p. 1, c. 2, sect. 7.

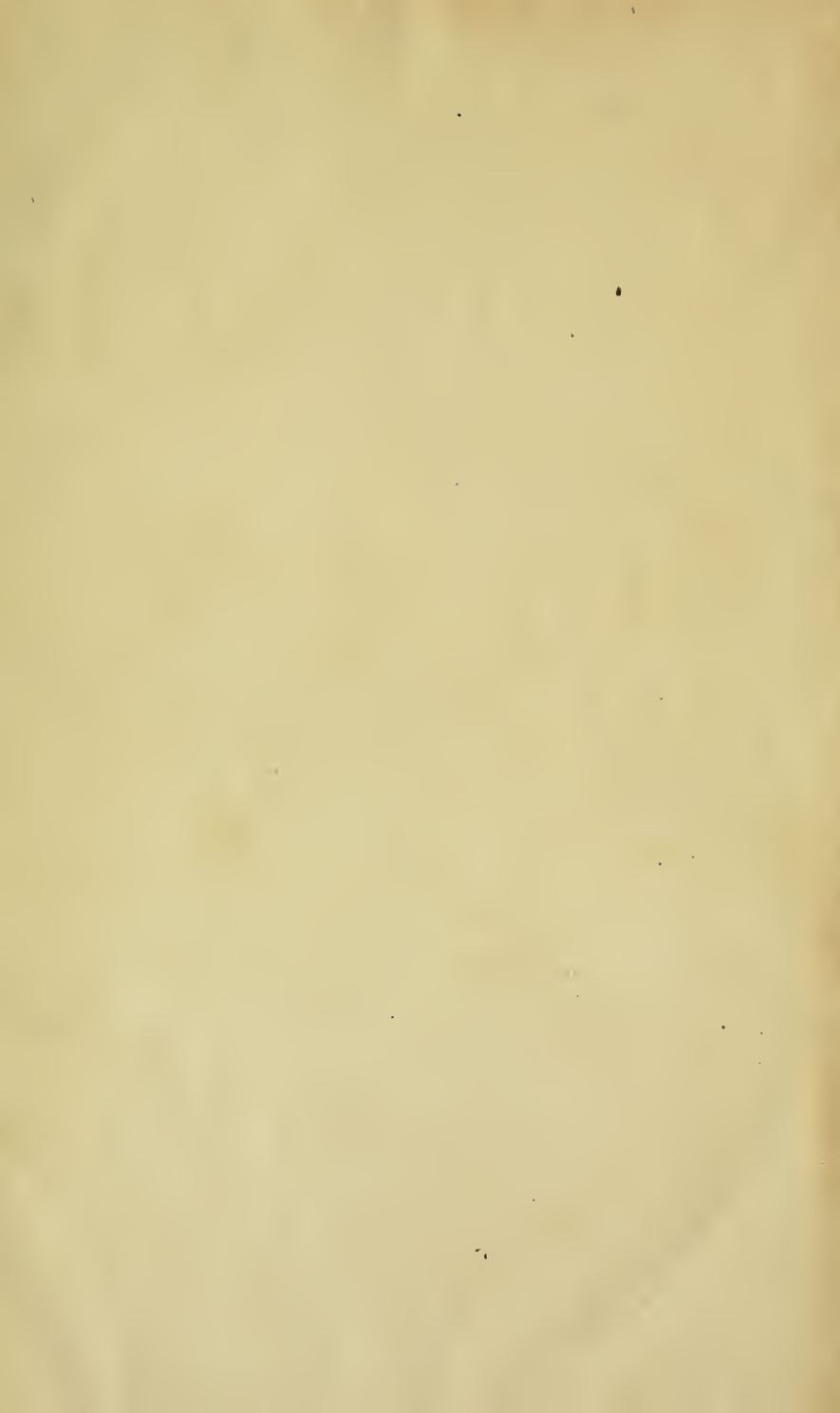
<sup>2</sup> This is a logical term, exemplified, when in answer to any question, anything is said to be not it, which is not, and so of another, or of an infinite number of negatives, always withholding the true answer.—A. E.

DEDIT DEUS HIS QUOQUE FINEM.

"God hath granted to these labours also a termination."









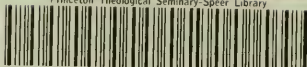








Princeton Theological Seminary-Speer Library



1 1012 01009 3302